ATH BV 2360 .A589

Strong, William Ellsworth,
1860-1934.

The story of the American
board

DISCARD
Athens Library
Piedmont College

10039888
BV
2360
.A5
S9
1910
Strong, William
Ellsworth,
The story of the
American Board.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/storyofamericanb0000will

THE STORY OF THE AMERICAN BOARD

THE WORLD IN 1810
The political boundaries on map are of the year 1810
Regions unknown in 1810 are colored dark olive
Scale along the Equator
0 500 1000 2000 3000
English Statute Miles
THE MATTHEWS-NORTHRUP WORKS, BUFFALO, N. Y.
Arctic Ocean
Pacific Ocean
Atlantic Ocean
Indian Ocean
Pacific Ocean
Siberia
RUSSIAN AMERICA (Alaska)
BRITISH POSSESSIONS
NORTH AMERICA
UNITED STATES
SOUTH AMERICA
BRAZIL (Portuguese)
AFRICA
EUROPE
RUSSIAN EMPIRE
ASIA
CHINESE EMPIRE
Greenland
Iceland
Godthaab
Pt. Barrow
Bering Strait
Bering Sea
Mackenzie R.
ARCTIC CIRCLE
Hudson Bay
Hudson Bay Company
Davis Strait
Queen Charlotte Is.
Canada
Newfoundland
Montreal
Boston
New York
St. Louis
New Orleans
Bermuda (Br.)
Louisiana
Mississippi R.
Spanish
Mexico
Cuba (Sp.)
West Indies
Belize (Br.)
New Granada
Quito
Amazon
Peru
Rio de Janeiro
Buenos Aires
La Plata
Patagonia
Str. of Magellan
C. Horn
Sandwich Islands
Navigators Is.
Marquesas Is.
TROPIC OF CAPRICORN
New Zealand
Chatham Is. (British)
Azores
Portugal
Spain
Morocco
Algeria
Tunis
Mediterranean Sea
Turkey
Egypt
Cairo
Sahara
Niger
Sierra Leone (Br.)
Sudan or Nigritia
Nubia
Abyssinia
Ethiopia
Zanzibar
Congo
Loanda
Mozambique
Madagascar
Orange R. (British)
Cape Town
Port Natal
C. of Good Hope
EQUATOR
British Isles
London
France
Denmark
Norway
Sweden
Finland
Prussia
Austria
North Cape
Nova Zembla
Tartary
Irkutsk
Amur R.
Persia
Afghanistan
Baluchistan
Hindustan
Arabia
Bombay
Arabian Sea
Calcutta
Madras
Ceylon
Siam
Bangkok
Canton
Peking
Korea
Nanking
China
Japan
Tibet
Philippine Islands (Spanish)
Borneo
Sumatra
East Indies
Java
New Guinea
New Holland
New South Wales (Br.)
Sydney
Van Diemens Land
TROPIC OF CANCER

THE STORY OF THE AMERICAN BOARD

AN ACCOUNT OF THE FIRST HUNDRED YEARS OF THE AMERICAN BOARD OF COMMISSIONERS FOR FOREIGN MISSIONS

BY

WILLIAM E. STRONG

EDITORIAL SECRETARY

THE PILGRIM PRESS

BOSTON NEW YORK CHICAGO

AMERICAN BOARD OF COMMISSIONERS FOR FOREIGN MISSIONS

BOSTON

Copyright, 1910

by

American Board of Commissioners for
Foreign Missions

Published September, 1910

THE • PLIMPTON • PRESS
[W • D • O]
NORWOOD • MASS • U • S • A

PREFACE

This book does not pretend to be a history of the American Board; that would require more than one volume. Neither is it a history of the Board's missions; that would necessitate even a larger amount of detail. Nor yet is it a record of the 2500 missionaries who have been sent forth by the Board since its organization; that would call for far more of biography. All that is attempted here is to tell the story of the American Board: how it came to pass; what it set out to do; and, in such degree as space will allow and as can be put into words, what it has done. The aim has been to portray the Board as an organism living and growing in the world; to mark the stages of that growth, to reflect the temper and movement of that life, and to describe briefly and yet vividly some characteristic scenes enacted on the many fields of the Board's enterprise.

Even within these bounds it has been a difficult task to keep the story down. Only the more striking or instructive events could be at all dwelt upon. The labor of many steadfast years and the careers of noble and influential missionaries have often been compressed into a sentence or omitted altogether as like what had been already related of other lands or of other lives. Having always in mind the reader with but general and remote knowledge of the mission field, it seemed best to fix attention on selected scenes, typical, significant, or inspiring; to attempt a more comprehensive and balanced account might rather distract and confuse.

Towers do not make a city; but they mark it. There is much between them, and much that is fundamental to the

city's life and welfare. Yet these towers, by their number, location, character, and increase, do impress the observer with the marvelous growth. So the outstanding events and personages around which this narrative is gathered represent somewhat the mass and moment of the whole undertaking; they may be felt to include those activities and actors whose influence, no less important if less conspicuous, underlies and connects the epochal scenes.

The purpose of the book being to show the growth of the Board, it was desirable that the story of one mission should not get unduly ahead of another. To that end the century is divided into three parts, each covering approximately a generation, and in each period the ground is traversed afresh to show the progress on all the fields during that portion of their history. The fixing of these periods and their designation is at best artificial and approximate. In them all there has been Planting, Watering, and Increase. Yet the order and development which these divisions indicate have characterized this century of mission work, and the dates set as boundaries, though not equally exact for all fields, do in general mark certain turning-points of the history that are significant.

Limitations of space prevented the assigning of a chapter to each mission. Of necessity they are combined into fields, usually by countries, a chapter being given to each field. During the first two periods the account of each mission is kept distinct within the chapter, the narrative moving back and forth so as to hold the field together in chronological view. The danger of confusion through these swift transitions is believed to be offset by the advantage of a more comprehensive and simultaneous view of the growth of Christianity in an empire. The device of cut-in headings and a notably full index will enable the reader to find and follow any desired line of inquiry. In some cases, notably in Chapter V, in the first period, where the transitions are most numerous and frequent, cross references are inserted to facilitate the forming of a con-

nected story. In the treatment of the third period less regard is paid to the precise order of events or to mission boundaries, and a freer handling of the material is ventured, that the broad aspects of modern missionary undertakings may be displayed more amply or connectedly.

The spelling of names of places in mission lands is ever a perplexing question. In many of these countries there is no fixed usage. Missionaries in the same field adopt different standards. On the whole it was determined in this volume to use the forms that have been common and familiar among the Board's constituency in the last generation. This rule has been observed also for the most part in the making of the maps, where the present usage of the map makers has been modified in the case of the Board's location , convenience thus being secured at the expense of consistency. In the maps of China the new Imperial Post Office spellings have been accepted throughout, as they now become the authoritative forms to be used in correspondence; the familiar names have been kept in the text as registering the Board's custom at least in the century closed. The corresponding official spellings in Ceylon, which radically altered the traditional usage of the Board, having been adopted by it several years ago, are indicated in the text of the third period as well as on the map of Ceylon.

The material available for a historian of the American Board is in most lines abundant, detailed, and reliable. There is far more of it than one who reads and writes amid other tasks can hope to master. The huge volumes of communications, official and personal, between the Rooms and the Missions are in themselves an unbroken history of the Board's affairs from the beginning; he files of the *Missionary Herald*, the annual reports, many manuscript notes, reminiscences, and biographies in which missionaries long on the field have contributed to the Board's library their personal accounts of what they have observed, all are storehouses of information. Much

of this material, in its earlier parts, has been carefully worked over by several competent hands; by Dr. Joseph Tracy in the *History of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions*, a painstaking and accurate record of the first thirty years of the Board's life; by Secretary Rufus Anderson in his authoritative histories of separate mission fields during the first sixty years, the *History of the India Missions*, the *Sandwich Islands Mission*, and the *Missions to the Oriental Churches;* and by Dr. Samuel C. Bartlett in his *Sketches of the Missions of the American Board*, a little book packed with information as to the Board's operations during the same sixty years, and so full of life and color that it should never drop out of sight Of late, in connection with the jubilee years of several missions, and in some cases with their diamond anniversaries, monographs have been prepared of peculiar historical interest and value. Dr. Edward Warren Capen's extended researches in the Board's archives and among the records of the Prudential Committee have made available also valuable notes concerning the proceedings of the Board and of its representatives at home and abroad.

In that large literature of missions so rapidly becoming a recognized department in the world of books, the fields and the forces of the American Board are well represented. To the Lives of many of her famous missionaries, and to their own published accounts of the particular fields they have served, of which William Goodell's *Forty Years in the Turkish Empire*, Cyrus Hamlin's *My Life and Times*, and Josiah Tyler's *Forty Years among the Zulus* are well-known examples, have come of late important general treatises like Dr. John P. Jones' *India: Its Life and Thought* and Dr. Otis Cary's *History of Christianity in Japan*, which, put with such fruits of personal observations as Dr. George Washburn has garnered in his *Fifty Years in Constantinople and Recollections of Robert College*, or the late Dr. Henry H. Jessup in his *Fifty-three Years in Syria*, and such authoritative works as Dr. Julius Richter's *History*

of Protestant Missions in the Near East and *History of Missions in India,* indicate the contributory sources of knowledge and of just understanding which are at the disposal of the student of the Board's first century. To these and many other publications, from voluminous works to fugitive pamphlets, the author has been continually indebted both for information and suggestion. If space has not permitted the acknowledgment of this obligation by foot-notes on every page, their absence must not be interpreted as implying that there is no occasion for them.

In addition to the benefit of a full and trusty literature of his subject, the author gratefully recognizes the aid of many competent and interested friends in the Board's circle. He would make special mention of the help thus derived from his colleagues in the Board Rooms, from the Prudential Committee's Sub-Committee on Publications, and from several veteran missionaries of the Board, home on furlough or now retired, who were able to give exact and authoritative counsel and criticism as to the treatment of particular fields or periods.

No one can be more sensible than the author of the bareness and incompleteness of this account of the Board's first century. It was begun with a lively sense of the absolute necessity of compression. Yet more than a third of what was first written has been cut out to bring the book within the extreme limit of size. If to many readers, especially on the mission fields, it seems a meager and fragmentary story, it is hoped that to all who take it up it may nevertheless suggest something of the scope and movement, the character and power of a truly heroic enterprise to which for a hundred years some of the best and bravest men and women of America have given their lives. Of that City of God which they have labored to establish upon earth may his book aid in numbering the towers — to tell it to the generation following.

W. E. S.

Jaffrey, New Hampshire,
26 *August,* 1910.

CONTENTS

THE PLANTING, 1810–1850

CHAPTER		PAGE
I	How the Board Began	3
II	Starting in India and Ceylon	17
III	Following Indian Trails	35
IV	Transforming the Sandwich Islands	56
V	Reentering Bible Lands	80
VI	Edging into China	108
VII	Attempting Africa	124
VIII	The Period of Adolescence	140

THE WATERING, 1850–1880

IX	In British India and Ceylon	165
X	In the Land of the Dakotas	186
XI	In Turkey and the Levant	196
XII	In Micronesia	227
XIII	In the Empire of China	250
XIV	In the Empire of Japan	263
XV	In the Dark Continent	279
XVI	In Nominally Christian Lands	290
XVII	Approaching Maturity	305

THE INCREASE, 1880–1910

XVIII	A Period of Expansion	325
XIX	Into New Fields	336
XX	The Farther East	352
XXI	The Nearer East	385
XXII	Southern Asia	413
XXIII	Central and Southern Africa	426
XXIV	Islands of the Pacific	440
XXV	In Papal Lands	456
XXVI	A New Era	475
	Appendix	495

ILLUSTRATIONS

PAGE

THE SALEM TABERNACLE AND FOUR OF THE FIRST MISSIONARIES 14
Samuel Newell, Harriet Atwood Newell, Adoniram Judson, Jr., Ann Haseltine Judson.

THE STATION AT BRAINERD, TENNESSEE 36

THEN AND NOW IN THE SANDWICH ISLANDS . . . 57
Central Union Church, Honolulu, and Typical Idols.

REPRESENTATIVE MISSIONARIES (Earlier) 107
Miron Winslow, Elias Riggs, William Goodell, Fidelia Fiske, Aldin Grout, Justin Perkins, Peter Parker.

THE "ROOMS" IN 1860 AND 1910 153
The Board's Building in Pemberton Square
The General Office in the Congregational House.

SOME FOUNDERS AND EARLY OFFICERS 160
Samuel Worcester, Jeremiah Evarts, John Treadwell, Henry Hill, Samuel Spring.

SOME OF THE AMERICAN BOARD SHIPS 236
Hiram Bingham II, Morning Stars I, II, IV and V, Missionary Packet.

REPRESENTATIVE NATIVE LEADERS 272
K. M. Dhalwami, Joseph Hardy Neesima, B. Prochazka, Pastor Chia, Sarkis Levonian, James Dubé.

LATER OFFICERS OF THE AMERICAN BOARD . . . 306
Rufus Anderson, Nathaniel G. Clark, Selah B. Treat, Langdon S. Ward, Mark Hopkins, Edmund K. Alden, Richard S. Storrs, John O. Means, Judson Smith, Sarah L. Bowker.

REPRESENTATIVE MISSIONARIES (Later) 321
Titus Coan, Cyrus Hamlin, Stephen R. Riggs, Eliza Agnew, Samuel B. Fairbank, John L. Stephens, Marquis L. Gordon.

PAGE

EDUCATIONAL UNDERTAKINGS IN CHINA AND JAPAN 327
A Gymnastic Class, Peking; Along the Doshisha Campus; Union College of Arts, Tung-chou; At the College Door, Tung-chou; In the Laboratory, Foochow College; A Kyoto Kindergarten; Union Medical College, Peking; A Vista at Kobe College.

SOME LINES OF EVANGELISM 329
Street Preaching, Madura, India; A Bible Reader of Trebizond, Turkey; A Woman's Meeting in West Africa; Tent Meeting, Bombay, India; Bookstore and Street Chapel, Peking, China; A Service for Patients at Ceylon Hospital.

TWO BOXER MEMORIALS 381
Church and Martyr Cemetery, Pao-ting-fu; Memorial Arch, Oberlin.

GLIMPSES OF MEDICAL ESTABLISHMENTS IN TURKEY 406
Hospital at Aintab; In the Babies' Ward, Aintab; Dispensary Patients at Talas; Hospital and Out-patients, Sivas; In the Operating Room, Harpoot; Native Nurses at Marsovan.

MADURA'S DIAMOND JUBILEE 424
The March of the Banners of the Years, The New College Building, A Section of the Anniversary Company.

INDUSTRIAL FEATURES IN VARIOUS MISSIONS . . . 435
Carpenter Shop, Amanzimtoti, South Africa; Carpenter Shop, Marsovan, Turkey; Sir D. M. Petit School of Industrial Arts, Ahmednagar, India; Uncovering the Kiln, Mt. Silinda, South Africa; The Laundry, Bombay, India.

DIAGRAM SHOWING COMPARATIVE INCREASE IN MISSIONARIES AND NATIVE WORKERS SINCE 1825 475

PLAN OF A REPRESENTATIVE MISSION STATION . . 479
Ahmednagar Station of the Marathi Mission, India.

MAPS

PAGE

The World in 1810 . . . . . *Frontispiece*

The Board's Missions, 1810–1860 165

The Board's Missions in 1910 325

West Central African Mission 336

Japan Mission 352

South China and Foochow Missions 368

North China and Shansi Missions 380

Asiatic Turkey
Eastern, Central, and Western Turkey Missions . . 386

European Turkey Mission 400

Marathi Mission, India 414

Madura and Ceylon Missions 420

South African Mission 427

Micronesian Mission 441

Mission to the Philippines 454

Mission to Spain and Mission to Austria 456

Mission to Mexico 468

THE PLANTING, 1810–1850

THE STORY OF THE AMERICAN BOARD

Chapter I

HOW THE BOARD BEGAN

Massachusetts roads were not boulevards in 1810. And there were then no automobiles to cover the six miles between Andover and Bradford in twice as many minutes. But the two occupants of a chaise which jogged over that country highway on the morning of June 27 had little thought of the road or the rate of travel. They were not due in Bradford till nine o'clock, and it was still early. Oblivious to the dust circling about them, or the charm of wayside flowers and the fresh green of pastures and hills, they spent the hours of that drive in earnest consultation.

The Conference at Andover

The two men were Rev. Samuel Worcester, pastor of the Tabernacle Church, of Salem, and Dr. Samuel Spring, minister at Newburyport. They had come to Andover from Salem the day before to attend a conference at the house of Prof. Moses Stuart. The professors of Andover Theological Seminary, four or five neighboring pastors, and Mr. Jeremiah Evarts, a layman already recognized as a wise and influential counselor, comprised the company. A band of four Seminary students had set their hearts upon undertaking a Christian mission in some foreign land and desired to offer a memorial on the subject to the General Association of Massachusetts Proper, a recently organized body of conservative Congregational ministers, representing the more evangelical wing of the denomination, which was to hold its annual meeting in Bradford the next day.

The conference in Professor Stuart's house was "solemn, intellectual, and devotional." Samuel Newell spoke for the

students. The project was then discussed. All honored the motive and devotion of the young men, but there were misgivings; to one adviser, at least, they seemed infatuated. The calm but approving arguments of Messrs. Worcester, Evarts, and Stuart, the passionate appeal of Dr. Griffin, and the warning of one of the conferees, that they had better not try to stop God, at length prevailed; the judgment of the conference on the whole favored the proposal.

It was of this new and stupendous undertaking that Dr. Worcester and Dr. Spring talked as they drove; of what it involved for those who should go to the field, and for those at home who should support them; of the growing missionary interest among American Christians, of the prospects of a foreign missionary society, and of the best way to form it. By the time they reached Bradford the plan of the forthcoming society was framed in their minds. Even a name for it was provided — undoubtedly the suggestion of Mr. Worcester — "Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions," to which cumbrous but weighty title the organization itself, at its first meeting, was to prefix the word "American."

The Bradford Meeting

It was on the second day of the Association's meeting at Bradford, and apparently in the church to which adjournment was taken from the small Academy building where the first session was held, that the four young men from Andover Seminary were introduced and presented the following paper, prepared by Mr. Judson:

"The undersigned, members of the Divinity College, respectfully request the attention of their reverend fathers, convened in the General Association at Bradford, to the following *statement* and *inquiries*.

"They beg leave to *state* that their minds have long been impressed with the duty and importance of personally attempting a mission to the heathen; that the impressions on their minds have induced a serious, and, they trust, a prayerful consideration of the subject in its various attitudes, particu-

larly in relation to the probable success, and the difficulties attending such an attempt; and that, after examining all the information which they can obtain, they consider themselves as devoted to this work for life, whenever God, in his providence, shall open the way.

"They now offer the following *inquiries*, on which they solicit the opinion and advice of this Association. Whether, with their present views and feelings, they ought to renounce the object of missions, as either visionary or impracticable; if not, whether they ought to direct their attention to the eastern or western world; whether they may expect patronage and support from a missionary society in this country or must commit themselves to the direction of a European society; and what preparatory measures they ought to take previous to actual engagement.

"The undersigned, feeling their youth and inexperience, look up to their fathers in the church, and respectfully solicit their advice, direction, and prayers.

"Adoniram Judson, Jr.
"Samuel Nott, Jr.
"Samuel J. Mills,
"Samuel Newell."

That there were only four names signed to this memorial rather than six was due to the fact that two other students were held back lest there should be alarm over the numbers. Inasmuch as the Association was but eight years old and had present at that meeting but nineteen appointed delegates, no business of special importance being generally anticipated, it was not strange that caution was felt to be necessary.

The formal statement was quietly received and, after some more particular and individual testimonies from the young men, was referred to a committee of three, consisting of Messrs. Spring, Worcester, and Hale, the last named being secretary of the Association. Evidently it was meant that the appeal

should pass into kindly hands. When the committee reported the following day, Friday, the 29th, approving the purpose of the young men and recommending the organization of a foreign missionary board upon a plan submitted, the report was at once and unanimously adopted. The plan provided that the Board should consist of nine members, and that while the Association should in the first instance choose all, the Association of Connecticut should be invited thereafter to cooperate by choosing four of the nine. Later, upon the securing of a charter, the right of electing members was transferred to the Board itself. The Association then elected the following nine men to membership in the Board, leaving to them the working out of details of organization: His Excellency John Treadwell, Esq., Rev. Dr. Timothy Dwight, Gen. Jedediah Huntington, and Rev. Calvin Chapin, of Connecticut; Rev. Dr. Joseph Lyman, Rev. Dr. Samuel Spring, William Bartlet, Esq., Rev. Samuel Worcester, and Dea. Samuel H. Walley, of Massachusetts.

Although the action that originated the American Board was thus short and simple, it is not to be inferred that it was taken with full assurance and unqualified enthusiasm. The whole procedure forms a striking example of the power of a few strong and determined men to lead others. The advocacy of the project by those who came from Andover, notably by Jeremiah Evarts, carried the day. One who was present at the meeting noted this characteristic: "Perhaps never was the value of an intelligent leading influence more clearly shown; perhaps never was such an influence more needed or more gladly acknowledged. One thing was prominent and universal, viz., a deep sense of the sublime position and devout consecration of this missionary band. They were unpretending, modest, of a tender, childlike spirit, well understanding their aim, consecrated, a felt power. The attitude of the meeting was about this: no direct opposition, a weak faith, a genial hope, rather leaning to a waiting posture. It obviously

was a relief to a portion of the body that the subject was put into the hands of such men as those who composed the Board. In the right sense they were marked men, well suited to the emergency. This seemed to lift somewhat the pressure of the responsibility. The feeling was, *Try it;* if the project fail, it would have, from such men, an honorable burial."

Earlier Influences

But, in truth, the American Board began long before its organization in 1810. To find its origin one must go back of Bradford and Andover; back to Williamstown and its haystack and groves, where in 1806 a dozen young college students, led by Samuel J. Mills, were pouring out to one another and to God the sorrow of their hearts over the moral darkness of Asia, and where as they faced the need of sending the gospel to that far land, their faith rose to affirm, "We can, if we will," which goading word led them in 1808 to form the society of "The Brethren," whose object was "to effect in the persons of its members a mission or missions to the heathen," and whose five charter members, signing the constitution, thus pledged themselves to this life service. Like the Jesuits in the secrecy of their organization and in the subjection of individual choices to the will of the order, but without guile, The Brethren became a potent force for missions in Williams College, and afterward at Andover Seminary, as with the coming of some of its founders to that institution in 1810 it found there its natural home and seat of influence.

At Andover the group from Williams met some like-minded men from other colleges, three of whom were promptly enrolled among The Brethren: Adoniram Judson, Jr., from Brown, Samuel Newell from Harvard, and Samuel Nott, Jr., from Union College. Judson, ardent, ambitious, a born leader, now took the initiative in the society, Mills contentedly slipping into less conspicuous but no less efficient place. With this union of eager hearts and alert and determined minds it was inevitable that The Brethren should infuse somewhat of their

missionary zeal into all they met; into their Seminary, then in its formative and most impressionable years, and among the ministers and churches of their acquaintance throughout New England. Williamstown led to Andover, and Andover to Bradford.

Back of Williamstown and accounting for Mills and the haystack, as for Andover Seminary itself, was the period of religious revival which blessed New England as the eighteenth century turned into the nineteenth. The tides of religious life had reached a low ebb after the Revolutionary War and before the welcome change began. Infidelity was general and rampant. Educated men boasted of skepticism. The colleges were noisy with it. The reaction from the great awakening and its surge of emotions was complete. Then came quietly a gradual renewal of religious desire. It appeared first in Connecticut and soon was felt in Mills' home county of Litchfield. At length the fire of it warmed his heart, kept tender by the love of his saintly mother, who had been ever his confidante, and whose word once to a friend, "I have consecrated this child to the service of God as a missionary," the child had overheard. But it was not till academy life was opening that Mills, then seventeen years of age, after a somewhat stormy experience of religious questioning, came forth into clear and happy discipleship. Almost at once he caught the missionary vision and responded to its appeal. Entering Williams College to fit himself for this service, he brought to it the inspiration of a great soul devoted to a great idea.

As the spirit of this revival spread from Connecticut to Massachusetts it divided yet more sharply the so-called orthodox and liberal parties of the time. The reaction became stronger against those tendencies of religious thought and temper which, under the name of Unitarianism, were soon to split the Congregational churches into two denominations. Against these tendencies the evangelical party now set itself determinedly and to that end created one after another, in

quick succession, those agencies and institutions, some of which have been already named, that were most intimately associated with the origin of the Board.

And back of this evangelical reawakening and inwrought with it as an originating force in the creating of the American Board were the new missionary enterprises starting in the mother country, reports of which were being eagerly read by many earnest Christians in America, and to which many gifts were going from this land; also the missionary societies already formed in Connecticut and Massachusetts, with domestic missions indeed mainly in view, but not altogether so; and yet farther back, even to the beginning of American history, a succession of broad-visioned and devoted men who from generation to generation had sounded the call for missionary effort or had made some earnest attempts to minister to those to whom the gospel had not come, to the Indians, or the Africans, or other disadvantaged races. It was indeed a rebirth of the purpose which animated the Pilgrim Fathers and which had never been altogether lost by their descendants that produced the American Board. From the glowing heart of a religious revival whose warmth cleared away the fogs of infidelity, revived Christianity, founded Andover Seminary, and built Park Street Church, Boston, came also this first foreign missionary society of America to fulfil the desire and hope of those men of Plymouth who sought to be stepping-stones for other adventurers in carrying the gospel to the world.

Ardor and Caution

The action, at Bradford, which constituted the American Board was hardly exhilarating to the young men eager to find themselves on mission ground. For, while approving their purpose and organizing a society to promote it, the General Association advised them diligently to pursue their studies and humbly to wait the openings and guidance of Providence. And when, ten weeks later, September 5, the first meeting of the American Board was held at Farmington, Conn., it recorded a similar vote of approval

and advice, intimating that any appointment of missionaries must wait upon fuller information concerning fields and a more assured financial outlook. Then, having elected officers and an executive or Prudential Committee, adopted rules of action, and issued a stately appeal to the Christian public, the Board adjourned for a year.

The Prudential Committee, likewise, upon surveying the task, was of the opinion that it would be some time before they could secure funds to maintain a mission "upon a promising scale." At this prospect of delay the would-be missionaries chafed; their sponsors and advisers on the Board's Committee were also unwilling merely to wait for the way to open. Accordingly it was voted to send Mr. Judson to London to confer with the London Missionary Society, partly for information as to mission fields, but chiefly as to the possibility of some combination between the two societies in maintaining missionary work. Judson had already opened negotiations with the London Society, having written in April preceding as to the desire of himself and his fellow students for foreign missionary service and asking if the Society would be willing to receive them into its training-school at Gosport the next spring, preparatory to work under its auspices. The awakening of foreign missionary zeal in the United States and the formation of the American Board had interrupted that correspondence in which the London Missionary Society had cordially engaged. But now that the students were beginning again to despair of going forth with American support, Judson was ready at once to undertake the errand proposed by the Prudential Committee.

Leaving Boston early in January, 1811, and after an exciting voyage in which his ship was captured by a French privateer and Judson himself was imprisoned at Bayonne, he reached London just before the May anniversary and there spent six weeks in consultation. Courteously received by the sister society, this representative of the American Board made a

strong impression. Tall and slight of figure, of a delicate appearance, but with bright countenance and a powerful voice, by his impassioned speech Judson commanded attention. A London clergyman, introducing him as purposing to be a missionary, added, "and if his faith is proportioned to his voice he will drive the devil from all India." The inquiries and overtures which Judson had to present to the London Society were naïve at least in their form: whether the London Society, if need be, would support for a time these young men, without requiring full or final authority in directing them; whether a joint support by the two societies were feasible; and if so, which should direct the mission. In its very first measure the Committee justified its title to the name "Prudential." It did not intend to put out of its hand aught of what had been entrusted to it, but sought to avail itself of every possible ally in making the most of its opportunity.

The London Society naturally declined to enter into a joint administration at such long range and urged the hope that the American churches would respond to the call of this emergent need. At the same time the directors promised that, if necessary, they would receive Mr. Judson and his friends as their missionaries, and support them until they were able to maintain themselves, the principle of self-sustaining missionaries being then approved ere experience had shown its fallacy.

At the second annual meeting of the Board at Worcester, September 18, 1811, the Committee reported concerning Mr. Judson's visit and its results, and recommended that the Board retain the young men as its own missionaries, in reliance on the divine favor as it should be expressed in generous giving by the Christian public to provide their support. The fact was that the pride of the Committee and of the Board was a little touched at the reply from England, and yet more by the discovery that their missionary candidates had almost abandoned hope of being sent out from America and that Judson

had brought back commissions from London for himself and his associates. The impetuous and strong-willed nature of Judson would not brook longer delay. He and Nott, at least, went to Worcester determined if the Board did not act promptly to accept appointment under the English Society. This attitude, though somewhat irritating to the cautious founders of the Board, yet had the desired effect. At that meeting four of the men, Judson, Nott, Newell, and Hall, were appointed missionaries of the Board, and two others, Richards and Warren, were taken under its direction and patronage while they completed their theological studies at Andover and took a course of medical lectures at Dartmouth College. The field to which these men should be assigned was left open to the judgment of the Prudential Committee, though three locations in Asia, the Burman Empire, Surat, and the Prince of Wales Island (Penang) were proposed in the vote.

It is surprising not to find the name of Mills, the originator of this student band, and the first of all the young men to devote himself to the foreign missionary life in the list of these appointees. To be sure, he had almost a year of study yet before him in the Seminary, while Gordon Hall was already graduated. Yet there are suggestions of other reasons operating in that hidden council of The Brethren to which each member submitted the decision of his course. Mills himself came to feel that he was not so well fitted for the conduct of work on the field as were some of his comrades; moreover, he had proved himself peculiarly adapted to promote the missionary cause at home in arousing the churches, in devising new agencies and organizations for furthering the gospel, and in tours of exploration opening up new fields to be entered. Through all his Andover days, and to the last hour of his short but crowded life, he was busy serving the ends of that kingdom in whose behalf he helped to originate the American Board.

The faith and determination of the Board to undertake its

appointed task were doubtless stimulated by the report at Worcester that $1400 had so far been received from donations for that purpose, and still more by the announcement of a bequest of $30,000 from Mrs. Mary Norris of Salem. Although this noble legacy was not actually received for two years, yet it encouraged the little circle of the Board's supporters to feel that money could be secured for this adventurous enterprise. The appointment of its first missionaries committing it to aggressive action, the Board's officers now earnestly set about interesting pastors and friends, while the students at Andover gave themselves to vigorous efforts to secure funds. These efforts were made the more definite and urgent by word received in January, 1812, from Philadelphia, whither Newell and Hall had gone for some medical studies, after their graduation at Andover, that the ship *Harmony* was to sail for Calcutta in about two weeks and would receive missionaries as passengers. The prospect of a new war and the further blockade of ports made this seem an opportunity not to be lost.

The Appointment of the First Missionaries

What should be done? Money was not in hand sufficient to pay even the passage fees. The committee deliberated anxiously. Could they safely anticipate that the interest roused by the despatch of these first missionaries would hasten and increase gifts? At last, January 27, they voted to send the four men, but to detain the wives for a while, till the treasury should be refilled. Or, if that were not possible, perhaps the London Missionary Society would after all render help. Three days later they added to the list, with some dismay at what they were doing, but because they dared not reject his request, the name of Luther Rice.

The Board had already satisfied itself of the qualifications of its four earliest candidates, the Prudential Committee having examined them at a meeting held in Salem on Christmas Day, 1810, just prior to Judson's leaving for his visit to England. But now that the time had

Their Ordination

come to send them forth it was proper they should be ordained to the ministry according to Congregational usage. A small council was called to meet in the Tabernacle Church, Salem, Thursday, February 6. The other churches invited were the North of Newburyport and the Congregational Church of Charlestown, with Dr. Griffin of Park Street Church, Boston, and Professors Wood and Stuart of Andover Seminary, where Dr. Griffin had also been professor, as personally invited members. The young men were thus decidedly in the hands of their friends.

The day of ordination proved fiercely cold, yet the church was crowded. Not only were the representative people of Salem present, but visitors came from far and near. Students from Andover Seminary and Phillips Academy walked to and from Salem in order to attend the service, whose proceedings were followed with almost breathless interest. The spectacle of these talented and trained young men, before whom life opened so promisingly, committing themselves to the hazard of a foreign mission, arrested the attention of all classes in the community. And the eyes of the congregation were not less attracted to the faces of two young women who were present, one Mr. Judson's bride of a day, the other the promised wife of Newell. On that 29th of June, 1810, when the Board was organized in Bradford, the dinner was furnished the young men from Andover in the home of a Bradford citizen, Deacon John Haseltine. Judson was noticeably quiet and absorbed during the meal. Later it transpired that he was composing some verses in honor of the beautiful and lively daughter of the house, Ann Haseltine, who waited upon the guests and who at length consented to become the wife of the prospective missionary. Scarcely had Miss Haseltine confided to her friend, Harriet Atwood, living just across the river in Haverhill, her expectation of missionary life in India, than Judson's friend Newell met Miss Atwood, and in the spring of 1811 they, too, became affianced and faced together

HARRIET ATWOOD
NEWELL

SAMUEL NEWELL

THE TABERNACLE IN 1812

ANN HASELTINE
JUDSON

ADONIRAM JUDSON, JR.

THE SALEM TABERNACLE AND FOUR OF THE FIRST MISSIONARIES

the prospect of a foreign mission field. As both these young women were of well-reputed families, fully educated according to the standards of the time, and socially prominent in the region, their committal to this new project deepened the excitement of that ordination day in the Salem Tabernacle.

One of that congregation, William Goodell, himself afterward a distinguished missionary of this Board, but then a mere country boy who had trudged over from Phillips Academy, and who was so exhausted with exploring the novel sights of the sea-faring town and with the exposure of his long walk in the bitter cold that he could hardly hold his eyes open, records the impressiveness of the scene. The crowded church, the eminent ministers participating in the exercises, the group of young men taking their solemn vows, the stirring of imagination over the significance and reach of what was being done, keyed feelings to highest pitch. At times the entire assembly "seemed moved as the trees of the wood are moved by a mighty wind."

Their Departure

On that same evening Messrs. Nott, Hall, and Rice left for Philadelphia, supposing that they had just time to catch the *Harmony* before she sailed. The Judsons and Newells remained in Salem awaiting the sailing of the *Caravan*, a brigantine which, it had transpired some ten days before, was about leaving Salem for Calcutta; whereupon it was thought wiser to divide the company. Delays occurred in the sailing of both vessels, trying to the spirits of the ready and eager missionaries, but bringing relief to the Board's officers, who saw the treasury fast filling. It happened as had been hoped. When it was known, not merely that the Board desired or even proposed to send out missionaries, but that they were embarking, the hearts of many loyal friends were prompted to help and gifts flowed in from all quarters. Within three weeks of the decision to send out the missionaries in faith, more than $6000 was collected. By the time the *Caravan* sailed it was possible to furnish them not only with

their full outfits, but with a year's salary in advance, which, considering disturbed conditions and the difficulty in transporting money, was indeed fortunate. In similar way, offerings of friends in the neighborhood of Philadelphia fully equipped those who sailed on the *Harmony*.

At length the hopes and prayers of many years were fulfilled; the project, which had been successively a vision, an idea, a desire, a resolve, and a plan, became an accomplished fact. On February 19 the *Caravan* sailed from Salem, carrying the Judsons and the Newells; the *Harmony*, with Mr. and Mrs. Nott, and Messrs. Hall and Rice, finally got away from the Delaware Cape on the 24th. The Board was launched upon its far enterprise.

Chapter II

STARTING IN INDIA AND CEYLON

The *Caravan* arrived at Calcutta June 17, 1812. The missionaries did not have to wait long for their trials; strangely, the first opposition was not from the people of the land, but from men of their own race. The East India Company, whose tenure of special privilege was then being sharply protested in England, was doing its utmost to keep missionaries out of the country where their observant eyes were dreaded. Sydney Smith's brilliant lampoons in the *Edinburgh Review* sought to rout from India the "nest of consecrated cobblers." Thus far the British government had not refused to maintain the rights of its own citizens already engaged in missionary work in these far-off possessions; for Americans, with whom England was on the brink of war, there was no opening.

A Cold Reception

Ten days after their arrival the governor-general commanded Judson and Newell to return to America on the *Caravan*. At first there seemed nothing else to do; Burma was closed, appeals to enter other parts of India were unavailing. When letters came from their brethren on the *Harmony* at the Isle of France (Mauritius) saying that the governor of that island desired missionaries, the way seemed plain. Here was territory not under the control of the East India Company; might they go there? Permission was granted. The first vessel to sail could take but two passengers; the Newells sailed in her, the Judsons were to follow.

When the *Harmony* reached Calcutta a few days later, its

party met a similar reception. As they were about to be despatched with the fleet to England, being consigned to the gunners' mess, they fled under cover of the night. Adopting disguises and running heavy risks, like escaping prisoners, they all managed to get away, the Judsons to Burma and Messrs. Hall and Nott to Bombay.

Rebuffed at Bombay

Bombay proved hardly a better landing-place for missionaries than Calcutta. The first visit of the new arrivals was to the police court. War was now declared between England and the United States. It was charged that a vessel bringing supplies to the missionaries had really been sent to inform American ships; a political plot was suspected. Repeated orders, which the friendly governor, Sir Evan Nepean, could not delay much longer to execute, called for the sending of the missionaries at once to England. An unsuccessful attempt to join Newell, now in Ceylon, resulted in the return of the fugitives from Cochin under arrest and heavy suspicion.

Yet the bearing and argument of these hard-pressed men, who justified their effort to get away by Paul's escape at Damascus, favorably impressed the magistrate. Hall's skill in stating his case and his boldness in facing officials recall, in these particulars also, the first apostle to the Gentiles. The missionaries would sign no bond not to leave Bombay without permission, nor give their parole, not even for a day ahead. Rather would they appeal to the governor as a Christian man and a just ruler not to defeat the pious object of their endeavor.

On December 22, 1813, nearly six months after their arrival at Bombay, they were told they might remain awaiting further instructions. Not until two years later did they learn that by the efforts of active friends in England, notably of Sir Charles Grant and William Wilberforce, the East India Company had accepted that interpretation of the renewed charter which permitted missionaries to work in the land, under certain conditions.

The early troubles were not all from without. While still in Calcutta, the Judsons and Mr. Rice announced their change of view as to baptism and offered themselves to be immersed by the Baptist missionaries at Calcutta who had welcomed them on their arrival in India. "What the Lord means," wrote Hall and Nott, "by thus dividing us in sentiment and separating us from each other, we cannot tell." Yet from this apparent disaster came another American society, the Baptist Missionary Union, another chain of missions for the Christian conquest of India, and, in particular, the opening of work in Burma, the very object for which that first company started to the East and from which the others had been turned aside.

Heavier Burdens

A still heavier sorrow was soon to be borne. The Newells' voyage to Mauritius was long and full of peril and hardship. The new-born babe died at sea; the mother soon after arrival at Port Louis. The pathos of this story, the figure of the stricken man left to his lonely battle with heathenism, most of all perhaps the exquisite character and lofty faith of Harriet Newell, as revealed in the record of her short life, proved a mighty incentive to the new missionary enterprise. It inspired her associates with fresh devotion to their task from which she had been taken, and it thrilled America. Here, also, what seemed a crushing loss became an abiding gain.

Long before official permission was given, the intrepid men at Bombay had gone quietly about their task. Even to their faith it could hardly have seemed other than a colossal venture. At last they were face to face with the heathenism that had oppressed their imaginations at home. The island city to which they were shut in was one of its strongholds. And when they looked across the narrow straits they saw there a land as yet almost untouched by western civilization. A score or more miles back from the coast were the high ranges of the Western Ghâts, running north and south; between them and the sea was the fertile region

The Outlook

called the Konkan; east of the mountains stretched the broad and drier tableland of the Deccan. In this territory, extending three hundred miles along the coast and some four hundred and fifty miles inland, with a population of about 11,000,000, far more than the United States could then boast, dwelt the Marathi people, one of the strongest races of India, yet in those days such notorious marauders that the government was compelled to interfere and, in the war of 1817, to force an absolute surrender. Among such a people, a mixture of Mohammedans, fire-worshiping Parsees, and idolatrous Hindus, the last altogether the most numerous, came these two men, without knowledge of language or of land, with no experience of missionary labor, the messengers of a society which had yet no standing or sure support, to attempt the establishment of the kindgom of God.

To be sure, they were not the first missionaries to the peninsula of India. The legend that the apostle Thomas planted Christianity in this land is doubtless to be discarded, but there is clear history of missionary work by the Syrian Christians in early times and by the Roman Catholics in later centuries. In the modern era both Anglo-Saxon and Continental societies found their first fields in India; the Danish mission located at Tranquebar, and Carey and his company at Calcutta and Serampore. But for the work of evangelizing the Marathi people not one step had yet been taken when the nineteenth century opened; the representatives of the American Board were the pioneers in a great wilderness, without map or path or guide.

Getting Started

Their first task was to learn the language, for which they had neither dictionary nor grammar; but in whose study the English wife whom Mr. Hall had married in 1813, and who was familiar with the Hindustani speech and character, was of great assistance. Moreover, it was the habit of the missionaries to take their daily walk where they might meet the people, by the temples, bazaars,

or burning ghats, pausing like their Master of old wherever a group would gather around to listen. Thus they soon began to make acquaintance, and to learn the life and habit of the people. Their journals and letters home described with vivid detail scenes that woke both horror and pity: the debasing idolatry, the shameless vice, the ignorance and superstition of the lower classes, the pride of the Brahmans, the woe of a weary land.

At once they were face to face with what was to prove their bitterest foe, the most stubborn obstacle that modern missions have had to meet, India's distinctive social custom, caste. Of ancient origin, an organized system five centuries before the Christian era, this principle of dividing the people of the land into separate groups was now fundamental to Indian society. Its law was absolute, rigorous, and unflinching, forbidding all marriage, breaking of bread, physical contact, or even pursuit of an occupation outside the boundaries of the individual's caste. Punishing all violations of its rules by the severest penalties, such as boycott and social ostracism, this tyrannous system had become the curse of India, destroying both national spirit and individual ambition, promoting pride and strife, crushing out human sympathies, binding life in its every action, and blocking every door of progress. The missionaries, seeing the misery of it, from the first made abandonment of caste a test of Christian discipleship. They have ever done their utmost to stamp it out of the Christian Church and community; but it remains a persistent and wily foe.

The Obstacle of Caste

As soon as a little knowledge of the language had been gained, parts of the New Testament were translated, and with a press from Calcutta and a printer gained by the transfer of a new missionary from Ceylon, portions of the Scriptures were printed and scattered wherever opportunity was found.

The Press and the School

At the same time free day schools using the vernacular were

started, which at first were of necessity taught by Brahmans. For this reason parents were less afraid to send their children to the mission schools, while the missionaries took care to inject a plentiful amount of Christian teaching into the day's routine. So rapidly did these schools multiply that fond hopes were awakened in America that Hinduism was fast being undermined. Within three or four years twenty-five such schools were in operation, with some 1,200 pupils, at a cost of only $11 a month for 100 boys.[1]

Beginning in Ceylon, 1816

While a beginning was thus made in Bombay the American Board was opening a second mission in Ceylon. The start there was for many reasons easier than in West India. Newell, who had stopped at Ceylon on his way from Mauritius to join Hall, had learned that the governor desired missionaries and that the people seemed not unfriendly to Christianity. The war with England now being over, the Board therefore followed what seemed a providential leading in designating its new appointees, who had been waiting for an open door, to this island so closely associated with India. Five missionaries, whose names were to become historic, Messrs. Warren, Richards, Meigs, Bardwell, and Poor, all married men except Mr. Warren, arrived in March, 1816, and chose Jaffna as their first location.

This comparatively small island, or rather peninsula of Jaffna, connected with the main island by a sand-bank forty miles wide, was occupied by a Tamil-speaking population of 350,000, whose ancestors had come over from South India, and were unlike in race, speech, and religion to most of the Ceylonese. Here the missionaries were able to enter into a work that had been begun by the Portuguese, passed over to the Dutch, and now, with the transfer of the island to the English in 1802, was open to new laborers. To the glebes and buildings thus abandoned by the Dutch the American missionaries succeeded. Large buildings of coral stone, amply

[1] The narrative of this mission is resumed on page 24.

sufficient both for public worship and for schools, residences for the missionaries, and gardens with fruit-trees, were at once at the disposal of this mission. Moreover, as a good translation of the Scriptures in the Tamil language had been in existence for years, there was less need of a printing press than at Bombay, whither Mr. Bardwell was accordingly despatched.

Beyond these outward aids the Americans inherited little from the previous workers. The Dutch had made Christianity compulsory, driving the people to church; the English on taking possession abandoned all religious effort. The so-called converts apostatized and the American missionaries found Christianity disgraced in the eyes of the natives. The religion of this people, like that of the Tamils on the mainland, was a composite of the Hinduism and the devil-worship of the Dravidian progenitors who had migrated into southern India. The result was a gross and multitudinous idolatry. Temples abounded with their demoralizing ritual. Religious festivals were seasons of puerile and corrupting practises, beginning with bathing and dressing the idols, and ending with a rough brawl over the distribution of cocoanuts for the feast.

Here, as in Bombay, the schools were the most effective agency for getting hold of the people. Parents were quite ready to put their children under the care of missionaries, provided they would support them. A boarding-school was soon started, in which boys were taken out of their old associations and subjected to a rigorous mental and spiritual discipline. For a time it was the peculiar habit in this mission to assign to these boys the names of the patrons in America who furnished their support.

Opening Schools

With the work of teaching went that of preaching. The year after their arrival both Mr. Poor and Mr. Meigs were preaching in the native tongue, surpassing in this respect the record of Hall and Newell in Bombay, who began to preach before the close of their second year. In 1820 reenforcements came, including Levi Spaulding and Miron Winslow, whose

long careers in Ceylon were to be among the formative influences of the mission there. The coming of these men was opportune for this among other reasons, that the new English governor of the island absolutely forbade any further increase of the mission, ordering back the next to arrive, and telling the missionaries frankly that he thought the English were able to take care of their own island and its natives; that America had enough to do for the Indians of that country; the missionaries of the English Church could be relied on to provide all the missionary work that Ceylon needed.[1]

Having at length authorized the presence of missionaries in India, the British government gave them full protection, and as reenforcements came to the mission it was possible to reach points outside of Bombay. By preaching tours along the coast the field was now extended and some schools were started. Yet it was slow work and disappointing in many ways. After five years there were no converts, and when the first appeared he was a Mohammedan from Hyderabad, who while on a visit to Bombay read a Christian tract, was won by it, attached himself to the missionaries, and afterward made several evangelistic tours on the mainland.

Advance in Bombay (See p. 22)

The first chapel for public worship in Bombay was erected in 1822. After his experiences in attempting to preach out of doors and in private houses, it was with great joy that Hall could gather a congregation in a place appointed for the purpose. The building was small and unpretentious, with the earth for a floor; its upper story was used for a chapel, while the lower was devoted to the press, the verandas being used for a school. Yet it was not without honor as the first of the many houses of worship which the American Board was to erect.

At the end of ten years' labor there was not much to report in figures, yet the missionaries rejoiced to feel that some real and wide impression had been made in this hard field, especially through the schools and the printed page. At least, the tools

[1] The narrative of this mission is resumed on page 26.

and the workshop were ready, and there was good-will among the workers. The comradeship which from the first had been evidenced by the missionaries of various societies in Bombay appeared in the formation in 1825 of the Bombay Missionary Union, in which the representatives of the American Board joined those of English and Scottish societies.

Advance on the Mainland

From the outset the American missionaries were eager to touch the mainland, but the government was fearful that this step would bring disorder. Schools, however, were begun and steadily increased on the continent as well as on the island. In some of these schools Jewish teachers were employed rather than Brahman, and so some Jewish scholars were attracted, until distinctive schools for this race were established both for boys and girls. This first work for girls and women in India called forth the appreciation of the governor of Bombay and other English friends.

Long before stations could be attempted outside of Bombay the missionaries were touring far inland, prospecting the field that should yet open. In this journeying Hall was the leader. Going alone but for his native attendants, he ventured far, getting close to the people, studying their life, conversing with whomever he might meet, a watchful visitor at religious festivals, marriage celebrations, the exorcising of the sick, the ritual of the temples. So the abominations of popular Hinduism, the fetishism and fakirism, the sensuality, cruelty, and groveling idolatry, were burned into his soul. He learned of the *Sati*, the immolation of the widow, of the hook swinging and the temple car, and of other inhuman practises, now largely abolished, but then tolerated in the land. It was as he turned his face homeward from one of these tours, after encountering an outbreak of cholera and dispensing to the people of the village all the medicines he had, that Hall found himself stricken with the dread disease. As he fell to the ground by the temple on whose veranda he had spent the night, helpless and knowing well that he could not recover, he gave directions to his attend-

ants, exhorted them to forsake their idols, prayed fervently for his wife and children, his missionary brethren and the multitudes around him, and quietly gave up his spirit to God. Thus passed from earth that superb missionary, Gordon Hall, pioneer in the first mission of the Board, who gave tone and power to all its undertaking, not alone in India, but on every field.

Heavy Losses

Hall's untimely death was one of many. In quick succession during these years of beginnings the missionaries fell at their posts or were compelled to withdraw, broken down by the strain. Reenforcements did not keep pace with the deaths; in 1826 the mission at Bombay was reduced again to two members, and after that there were seldom more than two in the city at any one time who could converse with the people. During the first twenty years of work among the Marathi people more missionaries died than natives were baptized. The average missionary life was about five years and three months, or, counting active service after the language had been learned, not more than three and a quarter years. The record for this whole period in the four missions which were in operation by 1850 is well-nigh unbelievable. On the highlands of Ahmednagar as well as at Bombay the missionaries were continually failing in health, or through ignorance of preventive measures falling victims to the ever-prevalent cholera. In Ceylon the death-rate was even greater. Often the reenforcements could not come fast enough to fill the places of those who fell by the way. The laying of foundations was ever costly.[1]

Educational Work in Ceylon
(See p. 24)

While the little company at Bombay were trying to penetrate their broad territory, in the more compact and freer field at Jaffna the missionaries had developed five stations. Here, too, the school was at first the most serviceable agency, and until a generation of Christian teachers could be trained Brahman masters were employed. The village schools were held

[1] The narrative of this mission is resumed on page 29.

in open bungalows, the boys seated on mats around the sides of the room, marking in the sand or conning their lessons, written on palm leaves, all studying aloud and learning by rote with little concern for the sense. Gradually native books were supplanted by Christian publications. Once a week the missionaries examined the scholars and conferred with the teachers, to counterbalance somewhat the baleful influence of pagan instructors.

Boarding-schools for boys and girls, which in the early days served as normal schools, increased in number, until in 1823 there was one at almost every station. It was not difficult to secure students. Boys were plentiful, and if at first parents were unwilling to let their daughters learn to read, by 1824 there were nearly 250 girls in the schools.

A Boarding-School Day in Jaffna

The regimen of these boarding-schools was stiff, the day's routine beginning at six in the morning, when the bell rang for prayers. The Sabbaths were scarcely less strenuous than the week days, with attendance on various services, the reciting of Scripture and catechism memorized during the week, occasional meetings of inquiry and assemblies where the pupils listened to "remarks calculated to make serious impressions," besides regular religious meetings among themselves. The indefatigable missionaries were gratified by the results of this training. But in view of the natural indolence of the people, the show and stir of religion in their temples, and the easy-going character of previous mission work in Jaffna, it is not strange that the Americans did not at once win all the people to the new faith.

Higher Education, 1826

So successful were the Ceylon schools and so urgent the need of trained native teachers that at length a seminary was established at Batticotta, some English residents being among its first benefactors, like Sir Richard Ottley, whose name is commemorated by its principal building, Ottley Hall. The missionaries were the first teachers, though it was expected that the school would

gradually develop its own instructors. That it met a want appears in the fact that two years after its establishment there were not less than 200 applicants for admission when only twenty-nine could be received.

At the same time a seminary for girls was established at Oodooville, its purpose being as frankly stated "to provide suitable companions for the graduates of the seminary at Batticotta." The significance of this school for girls is seen when one considers that in 1816 there were only three respectable women of Jaffna who were known to be able to read and write, as only dancing girls in the temples were given any sort of education. At first the pupils of this new school were practically adopted by the mission. They were taken between six and ten years of age, from different castes, and kept in school until their marriage, being housed, clothed, and fed by the mission; if married with its approval, they received a dowry of $25.

A Succession of Revivals

All through this period mission effort in Ceylon was marked by frequent revivals. The first of the series came in 1821 at Tillipally. The most notable of all was in 1830, when the work of the seminary at Batticotta was practically suspended for a time, while by day and night there was continuous prayer and confession. These religious awakenings appeared most markedly in the schools; in some cases nearly all the pupils acknowledged themselves disciples of Christ. Not all the converts, however, were young people; among the number were thirty native schoolmasters.

The weakness and indifference of native character were a constant source of anxiety to the missionaries, and disappointments were often heavy. So late as 1843 there was disclosed in Batticotta Seminary a wretched relapse into heathen practises, which almost emptied the school and required prompt and severe discipline. Yet from the early days there were individual cases of unmistakably changed lives, and enough

of them always to keep heart of hope. Such were the first three native preachers ordained in 1821, of whom the most distinguished was Gabriel Tissera, the first convert received into the church, a man of superior talents, with an ardent thirst for knowledge, who became one of the trusted teachers at Batticotta, and whose influence as teacher, preacher, and leader in all departments of mission life was one of the strong forces of the early years. His letter to Secretary Anderson and his private journal, both of which were beautifully written and rich in information and suggestion, made a profound impression when printed in America.

Others there were, no less genuine if less conspicuous witnesses to the power of the gospel on their lives; like that native Christian who, happening near a temple well as one of the worshipers was struggling in the water, with a crowd including temple priests looking idly on, leaped into the well and saved the man, thereby silencing some of those who had been declaiming against Christianity.[1]

The death of Gordon Hall shocked but did not paralyze the mission at Bombay. Work went on; converts began to appear; the press was active, schools popular and crowded. A start had been made; it was a time to move forward. After careful tours of exploration Ahmednagar was selected as the best site for a station on the mainland. Situated on the high tableland of the Deccan, 150 miles east of Bombay, a seat of Moslem rule in the time of the Mogul emperors, now a military station of the government, it was still a city of importance in the wide district with its 500,000 inhabitants. Work was begun in the same fashion as at Bombay, except that the missionaries were now better equipped and had the aid of some native helpers, like the Brahman, Babajee, the first to unite with the Bombay church and a valued teacher. Persecution was experienced at first, missionaries being hooted and pelted with

Ahmednagar, 1831
(See p. 26)

[1] The narrative of this mission is resumed on page 32.

dirt in the streets of the city. But they slowly won their way, the schools here as elsewhere proving an attraction and winning confidence. From this new center systematic tours were made through the entire region, with the valued aid of native Christians. Though these tours were openly itineracies for preaching and distributing the printed message, no harm was suffered among a people but a little while before regarded as turbulent plunderers.

In the field of the Deccan the mission came in contact with the Mahars and Mangs, two of the outcastes, the latter classed as hereditary beggars and thieves; but here the representatives of these castes were of higher grade than in Bombay. Next to the Brahmans the Mangs furnish the Hindus most of their *gurus*, or religious teachers, and the Mang converts brought to Christianity some of the best native workers. The reception of these people into the Christian community stirred again the caste spirit and provoked quarrels in the Ahmednagar church which the missionaries met with firm measures. Persecution of Brahman converts was bitter, parents wailing over a son who had become a Christian as if he were dead.

The charter of 1833 opened India everywhere to the free occupancy of the missionary. With the coming of substantial reenforcements to Ceylon a new mission on the mainland was begun by Messrs. Spaulding and Poor in the Madura Collectorate, a Tamil-speaking region across the strait from Jaffna. The city of Madura was first occupied, a principal seat of idolatry in South India, and the ancient and proud capital of a vast agricultural territory. Here, as in West India, the great majority of the people were caste and outcaste Hindus, with a considerable number of Brahmans and Mohammedans. And here again schools were an immediate and sure agency for attracting the people. Within a year, in thirty-five schools were gathered more than 1000 boys and nearly 900 girls. Soon a more advanced school was opened in Madura city. Native help-

Madura, 1834

ers were brought from various missions, eight from Batticotta. At first the schools suffered somewhat from reports that the missionaries compelled the scholars to swallow a dose prepared to bewilder their minds in order to make Christians of them. Other rumors declared that it was planned to make slaves or soldiers of the children or to transport them to a foreign country. But soon these delusions were dispelled. By 1835 there were three other stations in the mission, and at length, by the close of this period, a chain of stations covered the province, with many Christian congregations and communities, village schools, and a substantial seminary at Pasumalai. That the Board was able thus promptly and easily to launch a mission in the Madras presidency was due in large measure to the skill and tact of its first representatives there. To be sure, the new charter gave them legal footing. But officials might easily and naturally have hindered the introduction of a new sect among the warring religions in this region beyond the governor's oversight. The sagacious missionaries emphasized the value of their schools and the benefits they had brought to the people of Jaffna until the government felt there was nothing fanatical or dangerous in their plans, and they were warmly welcomed by collector and district judge. The battle was thus won before it was joined, and from that day the Madura Mission has enjoyed the good-will of local rulers and the people of the region as well as of the Madras government.

Madras, 1836

A mission was also opened in Madras in 1836, with the coming of Miron Winslow and Dr. John Scudder by another transfer from Ceylon. The primary purpose was to get a new location for a publishing house for the Tamil-speaking people. Both the Church Missionary Society and the London Missionary Society, already on the ground, approved the enterprise, and the work undertaken was to some extent cooperative. A large printing press, with Phineas Hunt as printer, was secured in 1838, and a stream of

publications, books, Scripture portions, magazines, and tracts began to appear. Though Mr. Winslow's time was largely occupied in the revision of the Tamil Scriptures, a work of wide use and influence published in 1850, yet both missionaries were able to undertake tours in various directions, even extending into Tanjore and Mysore. The hardships and dangers incurred on these trips show the stuff of which missionaries are made. The story of Mrs. Scudder, hastening to the help of her husband, who had fallen sick unto death with jungle fever on one of his tours, and spending a night alone with her little son in the worst part of a jungle road, her carriers having fled frightened by the sounds of wild beasts, reveals the heroism of the women as well as of the men.

Here, as elsewhere, the missionaries encountered opposition; the more impression they made, the greater the antagonism. On one occasion 8000 people met to devise means to prevent the spread of Christianity. It appeared that the Hindu, "though mild and timid, is yet exceedingly stubborn, and when excited, rabid." Some of the converts were frightened away, yet steady gains were made.

Hard Times (See p. 29)

It was a sorry coincidence that just as the young missions in India were being enlarged and the outlook seemed bright for advance, there should have fallen upon America the great business depression of 1837. Its effect was disastrous in the mission field, particularly in Ceylon, where 171 free schools had to be closed. Over 5000 pupils were thus suddenly dismissed, to the grief of the missionaries who had toiled hard to win them. The boarding-schools at Batticotta and Oodooville were kept from closing only by a timely donation from the Ceylon government. The heathen exulted over the supposed collapse of the mission; native converts were discouraged and scattered; confidence was lost, and the work crippled for long, if not permanently retarded. The only bright feature of the disaster was the noble behavior of some of the native teachers in the schools,

who voluntarily kept to their task, though their small stipend was greatly reduced.

The missions on the continent were embarrassed in like manner, though, owing to the liberal aid of foreign residents and of the government, not to the same extent. So the work was kept from disintegration until the churches in America rallied again to its support.

The young missions were further burdened by various catastrophes affecting them or the people around them. Fire, famine, and plague were recurring distresses. When cholera broke out in Jaffna in 1846 most of the Christians escaped, but some were stricken; there was general panic; school work and all mission appointments were interrupted, the time and strength of the missionaries being devoted to ministering to the sick and afflicted.

Looking Backward

Notwithstanding all these difficulties and distresses, it was impressive to see how the missions continued to grow and even to thrive. Evidently they had within them the mystery of life, with all its recuperative powers. As the missionaries looked back after the first generation to see what had been gained, their hearts were full of thanksgiving. In spite of obstacles, inexperience, and mistakes, as they had sought to follow the leading of God, they had already been enabled to accomplish what to human eyes seemed impossible.

Everywhere the schools were recognized as agencies of prime importance. They were not all equally strong; not so well maintained in Ahmednagar as in Bombay, where in particular Mrs. Hume's boarding-school for girls was an influence of first magnitude. The Ceylon missionaries were often anxious about the character of their scholars, wondering whether these "exotics" would be able to "endure the deadly blasts." At Madura, when in 1847 the missionaries set themselves to stamp out the caste spirit between Sudras and Pariahs in church and school, and applied strict tests, Pasumalai Seminary was

nearly stripped of its teachers as well as scholars, the very life of both church and school being for some time threatened.

At best, in all these missions the growth of the churches hardly kept pace with that of the schools. Few churches were able or disposed to bear much responsibility, and there were almost no native preachers. The beginnings of liberal gifts were found in some places, especially in native Bible societies in Ceylon, whose members subscribed for the spread of the Word of God.

The press stood beside the school in those days. The printing establishment in Bombay was one of the largest in all India, and at the height of its activity employed more than 100 workmen. The product of the press here and in Madras and Jaffna also was, in amount and influence, almost beyond belief. By 1850 Miron Winslow and his associates had finished the translation of the entire Bible into Tamil, and it had been published in Madras. Soon after, the Marathi Bible appeared in Bombay. Besides the Scriptures, text-books, religious and secular, dictionaries, hymn-books, tracts, papers, and magazines were being furnished to the growing communities able to read.

But the most conspicuous evidence of the progress of these missions during this period is found in the place which they had attained. Herein the passing of a generation marked an immense change. Confidence both of officials and natives had been secured and one barrier after another in the way of Christian toleration had been removed. The schools and the new knowledge taught in them had won the interest and respect of haughty Brahmans, so that other than low-caste men were now being approached. And when in 1850 the council of the governor-general of India passed an act giving protection to Christians and equal rights to all religions throughout the empire, it was recognized that the case was won. Missions were fairly planted in the land where a generation before both natives and Europeans had sought to cast them out.

Chapter III

FOLLOWING INDIAN TRAILS

When in 1820 the lieutenant-governor of Ceylon advised the American missionaries to turn their attention rather to the Indians of their own country he was quite behind the times. From the beginning it had been the purpose of Christian settlers in the New World to do something for the aborigines. Upon the colonial seal of Massachusetts, under the motto, "Come over and help us," was the figure of an Indian looking toward a star, the reminder of Bethlehem's gift to the world. And from the days of the Pilgrim Fathers, answering that imagined appeal, had appeared such men as Mayhew and Eliot, as John Sergeant, President Edwards and David Brainerd, as Eleazar Wheelock with his Indian school, and Samson Occam, his distinguished pupil, representatives of a gifted and devoted company of men who amid the struggle and excitement of founding this nation labored to make the approach of its civilization a blessing and not a curse to the red man.

Early Efforts

From its very organization the American Board had the Indians in its thought. Its first address to the Christian public in November, 1811, declared the intention to establish a mission in the East in the Burman empire and in the West among the Caghnawaga (Iroquois) tribe of Indians. By 1815 more definite plans could be announced. The Indians in the United States were then estimated at 240,000, about 100,000 of them living east of the Mississippi; of these, the four southern tribes, Cherokees, Choctaws, Chickasaws, and Creeks, made up about 70,000.

The Purpose of the Board

After tours of exploration, in which Samuel J. Mills, William Goodell, and Cyrus Kingsbury were engaged, in accordance with their judgment and encouraged by the success of a Presbyterian missionary among the Cherokees so early as 1804, the Board decided that these southern tribes of Indians offered the most promising material upon which to begin work.

Cherokee Mission Opened, 1817

In January, 1817, Rev. Cyrus Kingsbury arrived at the first location among the Cherokees, on the southern border of Tennessee, close to the Georgia line, the region of Chattanooga, afterward to be made famous by memorable battles of the Civil War, one of which swept across Mission Ridge. In memory of earlier efforts for the red men the missionaries named their first station Brainerd. The plan of operation was definitely announced: to establish schools in different parts of the tribe under missionary direction and superintendence; to teach common-school learning and the useful arts of life and Christianity; so gradually to make the whole tribe English in language, civilized in habits, and Christian in religion.

The United States government gave its cordial approval to the undertaking. By order of President Madison the Secretary of War promised definite aid to the enterprise, such as needed buildings, tools for the farm, and spinning-wheels and looms for the girls' school. But upon the arrival of Mr. Kingsbury and the associates who soon followed him, it appeared that no buildings had been erected, and the missionaries were compelled to hew the logs and build the cabins in which they were both to live and to work.

Schools were begun at once, made up both of full-blooded Cherokees and half-breeds, with Sabbath-schools for the black people. Twenty-six were almost immediately enrolled as pupils. The schools were organized after the Lancastrian pattern, a method devised by an English scholar, Joseph Lancaster, in which the older or more advanced students served as monitors and taught the younger, thus reducing the number

THE STATION AT BRAINERD

(*From a sketch by Thomas E. Paine in* 1821)

1 BOYS' SCHOOL HOUSE
2 BOYS' CABINS
3 MISSION HOUSE
4 GIRLS' HOUSE (*unfinished*)
5 GIRLS' CABINS AND SCHOOL HOUSE
6 BARN
7 FARMER'S HOUSE
8 CARPENTER'S HOUSE
9 SAWMILL
10 GARDEN
11 GRAVEYARD

of foreign teachers and making possible a larger number of scholars.

Quick Results

The routine of life was strenuous here, as in Ceylon, and as the missionaries' purpose was to train hand as well as head, the recreation of their pupils was provided for mainly by a shift from the schoolhouse to the field. From sunrise until nine o'clock at night the day's round was followed. Yet all labored cheerfully and effectively, even to the surprise of their teachers. When Secretary Treat made a visit of inspection in May of the second year, he found a farm of forty-five acres under cultivation, all manner of mission buildings finished and occupied, with some thirty head of cattle besides other stock in the barns. A year later, when President Monroe unexpectedly walked in to see exactly how the mission was prospering, he was loud in his appreciation of all that was being done, declaring that so effective a work needed even better equipment, and authorizing the Indian agent to provide for the expense of a new and better house.

Progress along religious lines was quite as notable. From the first, converts to the Christian faith appeared. The church in the wilderness grew in numbers much faster than in eastern lands. It was impressive to watch some of the converts, like that husky Cherokee half-breed, Charles Reece, once swimming the river in the face of his enemies to seize their canoes, now bowing before the gospel and becoming one of the early helpers of the mission; or John Arch, who, hearing of the school for his people, traveled 100 miles to Brainerd, offering his gun to pay for his tuition — so wild in appearance when he arrived that the missionaries hesitated to receive him, but soon showing signs of a new life, developing a remarkable thirst for knowledge, and becoming the missionaries' trusted interpreter and helper, a shining witness to his people of the reality of the Christian life. The methods of religious training were as rigorous as those in the school. Church services were frequent and tests of piety severe. But Secretary Treat

remarked the tractableness of the children, and there seemed at first no disposition to rebel under the discipline.

Such quick success stirred the missionaries to greater endeavors and strengthened the purpose of their supporters.

Reenforcements and Outreaching

Reenforcements came soon and strongly to these missions in the south. A prosperous young farmer of New Jersey and a group of his friends arrived with their families, offering themselves as industrial missionaries, adept in various trades, purposing to give their lives to the helping of the Indian races. As the Board planned to make Brainerd simply the center of operations for reaching the entire Cherokee nation, excursions were frequently made to promote acquaintance with the people and to find new openings for settlements. These advances were met with cordial good-will by the chiefs who visited the mission school and expressed a hearty appreciation of its work.

Mission to the Choctaws, 1818

The purpose to reach also the other tribes was not forgotten. Accordingly, upon arrival of the first reenforcements at Brainerd, and after careful exploration by Mr. Cornelius, Messrs. Kingsbury and Williams moved on to open work in the Choctaw nation, the largest of the four tribes originally contemplated. The new mission was thus located 400 miles southwest of Brainerd, within the charter limits of Mississippi and 100 miles from its northern boundary. Here, also, the expected buildings were not found and the missionaries, though weakened by sickness, delayed supplies, and the hardships of life in the wilderness, were again obliged to fell the trees and lay out the new station, which, in memory of the first apostle to the Indians, they named Eliot. There was no time to dwell upon hardships. Before the buildings were up some Choctaws came a distance of 160 miles, bringing eight promising children for the school, which they supposed was ready to receive them. These first pupils were crowded into the missionaries' home, and teaching was begun on the 19th of April.

The round of work in school and on the farm, and the weekly calendar of services for Indians, half-breeds, negroes, and whites were much the same as at Brainerd. The Choctaw people ardently welcomed the missionaries and, being possessed of fine lands and considerable wealth, were able to subscribe generously toward the equipment and conduct of the mission, the United States government joining in its aid. Within a year from the opening of the mission, the Choctaw nation had voted to donate the entire annuity received from the sale of lands to the United States, amounting to $500, to the support of the mission school. While such material help was welcomed, the missionaries were dismayed at the prevalent immorality, not only among the Indians, but among the white settlers, whereby all classes were callous to the religion which the newcomers brought them.

The Arkansas Mission, 1821

A portion of the Cherokees, amounting in all to one-third of the tribe, had migrated west of the Mississippi into the wilderness of the Arkansas and Missouri, inspired partly by their dislike for the growing civilization of their old home and partly by rumors that the government intended to transfer them with other tribes to meet the increasing demand for their territory.

In 1821, after careful inquiry and repeated attempts, the Board began a mission also among this part of the Cherokees at a station called Dwight, a little north of the Arkansas and nearly 500 miles, as the stream flows, from its junction with the Mississippi. It was a terrific undertaking to plant this mission, involving a journey of some 700 miles through swamps and trackless forests, prolonged exposure to malarial fever, and the daily dangers of such pioneering. The first attempt failed. Upon a second trial, the party at last staggered on to their destination. Finally, men and supplies arrived and the mission got under way. Among a people wild and restless and not too favorably inclined toward mis-

sionary effort, it was a matter of course that the beginning of work should be hard and slow.

Thus by 1821 the American Board had three missions for the Indians. Each year new stations were added, new schools started, and longer tours for preaching and teaching were ventured upon. Dr. Butrick covered hundreds of miles in his journeys through the region, entering into the people's life, counseling them in their affairs, healing many of their sicknesses, and always winning confidence and wider influence. If the church statistics do not show a rapid gain, yet the leavening influence of missionary work was manifest. Laws and courts of justice were secured; the dwellings of the people were more comfortable from year to year; industry was more regular and persistent. Even the less progressive Choctaws were persuaded to adopt laws against intemperance and the horrible custom of infanticide. A factor of great importance in the progress of the Cherokees was the invention of one of their number, George Guess, an ignorant half-breed, who could neither read nor speak English. Yet upon learning the idea of an alphabet, he actually devised one of eighty-six characters, with a symbol for every syllable of the Cherokee tongue. With this peculiar alphabet he began to write letters, to the admiration of his tribesmen, who flocked to learn the new method of easy writing and reading. In three days these pupils were able to master the principles and go home to teach others, and in three years nearly all the adult population in some places, and of all the tribe half, were capable of reading their own language.

Developing the Establishment

One advantage to the Board of these missions to the southern Indians, in particular that to the Cherokees in Tennessee, was their accessibility to the common routes of travel. They had many visitors, some of whom came long distances to observe the marvel of the missionary work for the Indians; their high appreciation as well as substantial gifts were a constant encouragement. Govern-

Some Readjustments, 1825

ment officials also made regular tours of inspection, and quarterly grants of from $200 to $300 were made to the schools at Brainerd, Eliot, and Mayhew during the early '20s. The secretary of the Board, also, was able to visit these Indian missions as he could not those over sea. And while obstacles seemed almost overpowering in the foreign field, it was of no small value to the missionary cause that the Indian missions should be so quickly getting hold. In the year 1820 one-half of the missionaries and nearly half the expenditures of the Board were for work among the Indians of North America.

The closer watch entailed a more direct supervision of the work, and as a result of Secretary Evarts' visit in 1824 certain changes were made at Brainerd, with the intent to make them also in the other Indian missions. It was felt that too much stress had been put upon merely industrial training. Instead of maintaining a large number of farmers and mechanics, as members of the mission, which was thus tending to become absorbed in secular pursuits, it was determined to leave the Indians to make their own engagements of teachers in the arts and to set the missionaries free from these distractions. And instead of building up large centers of work, the new policy should be to spread out the missionary force as widely as possible. At the same time it was decided both in Cherokee and Choctaw nations that the Indian youth in the schools should be taught their own language first, the early policy of teaching them nothing but English, that they might become the more quickly civilized, being thus modified by experience.

New Missions, 1826–27

The progress of the Indian missions and the interest they aroused encouraged the American Board to larger undertakings, while the breadth of its fellowship and policies opened to it new fields of work. In 1826–27 the United Foreign Missionary Society, an organization formed some years before by the Presbyterians, together with the Dutch and Associated Reformed churches, to conduct

missionary work among the Indians of North and South America, transferred to the American Board the care of its Indian missions: among two companies of Osages, one in Arkansas, near the border of the Cherokee country, and the other in Missouri; a mission in the famous Mackinaw region, the rendezvous for Indians of all the northwestern tribes; another at Maumee, in Ohio, in the midst of several small tribes, and still another for various New York tribes in the general region of Buffalo. At the same time the Board assumed the care of the remnant of the famous Stockbridge Indians, and of the Chickasaw mission taken over from the Presbyterian synod of South Carolina and Georgia.

The Board's Indian field was now widely extended among tribes of differing character. The religious ideas of many of them may be judged from the statement of an old brave of the Osages, who said that he knew of only four gods, the sun, the moon, and two constellations; the sun required men to go to war and bring a scalp, the moon to bring a skin for moccasins, and one of the constellations required the Indians to paint their leader when they go to war; he supposed the Osages would live after death at an old town on the Missouri, that they would hunt and go to war, and that different tribes would remain in different places.

The Storm Breaks, 1828

A dozen years of work had wrought great changes in the fields of the South. The Cherokees were well up with their white neighbors in education and material prosperity. Christianity was also accepted, at least outwardly, by most of the people. Intemperance had been checked and family life greatly improved. A similar development was manifest among the Choctaws. Moreover, a religious awakening had come to that tribe during 1829, bringing many hundreds of inquirers to the missionaries, the chiefs being the leaders of their people in the new movement. To the eager missionaries it seemed a wonderful display of divine power. Altogether there was a spirit of great hope-

fulness in the Indian work, when the blow fell that had long been dreaded.

The state and national governments had joined in the determination to move the Indians of the South beyond the Mississippi, and apprehensions of this removal threw the people of the four tribes affected into great agitation. Efforts to transfer them had been made in earlier years; before 1818 the Choctaws had made three cessions of their lands, thus belying the meaning of their name Alabama ("Here we rest"). But not until 1828 did the United States put its heavy hand to the task of virtually evicting these people from their land. The nearness of the white settlers, which the missionaries had counted upon as a help to their work, proved to be a double misfortune: their unstable people had been continually exposed to the temptations of the white man's vices; they were now to be made the victims of his greed for their land.

The Choctaws, and after them the Chickasaws, were finally persuaded to make treaties with the government, ceding their territories. The immediate effect of this sale was demoralizing in the extreme. Despondency, forebodings, lapses into idleness and intemperance followed the signing of the treaty. The work of the mission was of course sadly injured. No provision was made for refunding any part of the $60,000 invested by the Board in the plant; the devoted labor of twelve years could not be repaid by any indemnity.

The Cherokees resisted to the utmost, sending protests to Washington, but finally, by artifice, intimidation, and false promises, a fraction of the tribe assented to the new treaty. Meanwhile the state of Georgia was proceeding as if all had been settled according to her will. The Cherokees' territory was divided and sold by lot while yet the tribe was living on it. With the new settlers came all manner of vices and lawlessness. Everywhere was disorder and confusion; bands of Indians wandered about in idleness and despair.

The missionaries were left in worse plight, if possible; maligned by the whites as having encouraged the Indians to resist removal and hated by the Indians as belonging to the race that was oppressing them, if they were not indeed acting as its secret emissaries. Against both these misjudgments the Board and its missionaries asserted themselves vigorously.

Persecution of Missionaries

Worse treatment was before some of these devoted men. One of the blackest pages in this country's history is the record of the high-handed procedure against the missionaries by the state of Georgia. A law had been passed, evidently meant to drive them from the state. When they ignored this law, standing on their rights as United States citizens dwelling in the Cherokee nation, and remained at their stations, arrests followed, in which missionaries of other Boards were also involved. In one seizure, in July, 1831, Mr. Worcester and Dr. Butler were both taken. The story of their arrest, imprisonment, and trial is a record of brutality almost beyond belief. On the way to the jail Dr. Butler had his neck fastened by a chain and padlock to the neck of a horse, by the side of which he walked, until midnight, when, drenched with rain, the party reached a lodging-place. All through the next day Dr. Butler wore this chain about his neck, sometimes walking and sometimes permitted to ride on the long journey to the jail. For eleven days of mid-summer these men and others who had been arrested were left to lie in a filthy log prison, without window, bed, or other article of furniture, forbidden to receive or send any letter or to have an interview with a friend except in the hearing of a guard, and forced to listen to all manner of blasphemous and obscene taunts as they were made the butt of the soldiers' ridicule. A favorite joke of their captors was to look in upon them, as they lay awaiting their trial, and repeat the words of the Master, "Fear not, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom."

Yet these heroes made the best of their circumstances, enlarged some holes in the wall for a little more light and air, and were grateful that they no longer had to wear chains. At length the trial came off, conducted wholly in military fashion and with much parade. Although their defense was ably argued, the jury found them guilty and they were sentenced to four years of hard labor. The case being carried to the Supreme Court, this act of the Georgia tribunal was nullified and revoked; whereupon the court of Georgia actually refused to yield and the governor declined to interfere and release the prisoners. Undismayed, the missionaries settled down to prison life, and endured it for fifteen months, when the frightened officials proposed that the missionaries should be freed if they would drop the case. With the finding of the Supreme Court as their vindication the prisoners accepted the goveror's proclamation of release.

Immediately upon their deliverance these missionaries returned to their stations and attempted to resume their labors.

The Forced Removal

But it was manifestly impossible to do any satisfactory work. On every hand settlers were coming in, and the Indians were too excited over the prospect of their transfer to follow the routine of mission life.

The Choctaws had already gone to their new home; 7000 or 8000 of them were transferred during the fall and winter of 1831, the remaining 15,000 being taken the following year. The officers in charge appear to have been generally considerate in their treatment. Yet the suffering and loss were heavy and there was an appalling amount of sickness and death. The one bright spot in the story of the journey is where it records the behavior of the Christian Choctaws. By their soberness and good order, their morning and evening worship, and Sabbath rest, they formed a striking contrast to some of their companions. The captain of a boat carrying one party said they were the most religious people he had

ever seen, and an agent declared that the Choctaws who had been under the influence of the missionaries were not half so troublesome as the others.

In 1837 the Cherokees also had to go. They had been hoping against hope that something would occur to prevent the carrying out of the treaty, but at length soldiers came and drove them into an encampment, to make ready for the long journey. Their transfer was much like that of the Choctaws. The agents in charge did their best; yet the suffering and want were appalling. Not less than 4000 deaths were numbered by the time they arrived in Arkansas, ten months later. In this company, too, the behavior of the Christian Indians made a good impression. Yet the anger and grief of their hearts over what they regarded as an outrage of their treaty rights was sorrowfully manifest in the bloodshed that followed their reunion with those already in Arkansas, who, they felt, had betrayed them.

In the case of the Chickasaws no removal was necessary; for having the proceeds of their sale of lands to live upon, they so gave themselves up to idleness, drunkenness, and gambling that they faded away and their independent existence was lost. In this demoralization of the tribe, nearly one-half the members of the church relapsed. Though some endured the temptations and some were restored, the situation became so hopeless that the mission was closed in 1835.

A New Start

When it became apparent that the work among the Indians in the South was thus to be broken up the Board turned its attention to fresh fields, following the transferred tribes to their new homes and extending its lines to other tribes in the North and Northwest. Successive tours through all the Indian country beyond the Mississippi resulted in the opening of a group of new missions in the early '30s: the Ojibwa (1831), Creek (1832), Pawnee (1834), Oregon (Nez Perces and Flathead), Dakota (or Sioux), and Abenaqui (1835). By 1836 the tribes within the limits

of the states and territories of the Union had practically disappeared and the effort had been transferred to lands on the western frontier.

Two lines of approach were made to these western Indians: from the South to each of the emigrant tribes, Cherokees, Choctaws, and Creeks; thence to the Pawnee country, and, following the direction of Mr. Kingsbury's tour, to the stations among the Flathead and Nez Perces Indians by the Oregon River. On the north the chain of missions began with the Mackinaw and Stockbridge Indians; then from the southwest shore of Lake Superior the line extended through the Ojibwa country to the headwaters of the Mississippi, into the region of the Sioux, whose bands continued westward to the headwaters of the Missouri. Thence it was planned to extend the chain to the west until it should intersect the first line beyond the Rocky Mountains.

Disappointing Experiences

Though work in the new fields was begun bravely and with the wisdom born of experience on the part of missionaries, it became more and more clear that little was being accomplished. It was not simply that there were few converts, as in the Osage Mission, where after ten years not one could be counted. The fact was that the roving and lawless habits of the Indian, the interference of hostile white men, the growing prejudice against a government which broke its treaties so lightly, together with the repeated removals of the tribes as the country expanded, made constructive work almost impossible. Many of these new missions were short-lived. The incoming of whites led to the ceasing of effort for the Creeks and Osages in 1836; the shifting of tribal homes closed the mission to the Maumees in 1835, of that to the Mackinaws in 1836, and to the Stockbridge Indians in 1848. The Pawnee mission was taken over by other denominations in 1848.

The mission to the Sioux was the only one of those more recently established which proved long-lived. The work for

this largest and most warlike tribe on the continent, dwelling on the upper Mississippi and its tributaries and roaming over Minnesota and west to the Black Hills, was begun under the lead of Dr. Williamson and the brothers Pond, and soon branched out from its center at Fort Snelling over a wide area.

It was the roughest sort of life which these missionaries to the Sioux experienced. The tribe lived in typical Indian fashion, in wigwams, and tepees, swinging from plenty to famine, according to the fortunes of the hunt. While the missionaries were not obliged to dwell with the Indians, they had to share much of their life; mention is made of hickory chips being boiled to get nourishment. With two locations from the first, at Lake Harriet, near the Falls of St. Anthony, and at Lac-qui-parle, the missionaries had at least a fixed habitation, while the tribe, roving here and there, were sometimes near them and sometimes far away.

Hard Conditions

It was slow work at best and a test of patience and faith. The religion of the Sioux seemed to the missionaries full of superstition and fear, a pantheism running down to devil-worship. The braves held the message of the gospel to be womanish, and taunted any who listened to it. Yet progress was made and characters were transformed, like that of Joseph Renville, the half-breed agent of the American Fur Company, who acted as interpreter for the missionaries, and whose home was ever a hospitable resting-place for them.

By 1850 two churches had been formed, with some steadfast and consistent members, though lapses were frequent and distressing. Here, as elsewhere in missionary labor, the more evident the progress, the fiercer the opposition became. One of the signs of increasing influence was an intense spirit of persecution.

The unhappy experience of trying to work for Indians just where they met the tide of white emigration prompted the

desire to open a mission beyond the frontier where the missionaries might escape its influence for evil. Several exploring tours were made, one in 1829 on the Pacific coast by Rev. J. S. Green, a Sandwich Islands missionary, with no encouraging result. Other parties went overland across the Rockies in 1834–35. Rev. Samuel Parker and Dr. Marcus Whitman, a physician from New York state, made up the second party. So long before as 1804–06 Lewis and Clark, on their tour to the coast, had promised to send to the Nez Perces Indians the desired religious teachers. After the Indians had waited long in vain, upon some further Christian teaching from a few fur traders, a deputation of five was despatched to St. Louis, where they stirred the hearts of the Christian public by their pathetic lament for the missionaries that had not come.

The Oregon Indians, 1836

It was partly in answer to their appeal that, as the American Board pathfinders came upon a band of these Nez Perces, the mission to the Northwest Indians was located in what is now the state of Washington, with Dr. and Mrs. Whitman at Waiilatpu, near the present city of Walla Walla, among the Kayuses, and with Rev. H. H. Spalding and wife, among the Nez Perces, near the northern boundary of the territory. So remote was this new mission that literally the longest way round was the shortest way home, most of the supplies being sent to the missionaries by way of the Sandwich Islands. Indeed, Dr. Whitman's first helper was a Christian Sandwich Islander who had come to the Pacific coast. Another connection with the Board's mission in mid-Pacific was established when, a printing press being needed for the Oregon Indians, the old mission press, no longer required in the Sandwich Islands, was sent to become a part of the equipment of the new field.

Reenforcements followed along the difficult trail, and at the same time the Methodists opened a mission in the Willamette valley. As the Indians were hospitable and ready to

help, a Christian church was soon established. At first it seemed that a strong impression was to be made; but as time went on and curiosity slackened the Indians became indifferent, in some cases hostile. Discouragement and some disagreement followed among members of the mission. By 1842 the question of contracting the field was being discussed and the Prudential Committee had even voted that the southern station should be closed. A meeting of the mission, called to consider the situation, decided that this action was not wise and urged that Dr. Whitman should visit "the United States" to see if it could not be revoked. The story of that hurried journey has become so famous in American history that it need not be retold here. For by the testimony of fellow missionaries and from various other contemporary sources it has been brought out that the second, some say the primary object of Whitman's ride, was to save Oregon to the United States.

This exploit of Dr. Whitman has come to be challenged as a myth; both his purpose and his accomplishment have been made the subject of almost fierce controversy. The denials upon one side have been far more sweeping than the claims upon the other. Much of the "evidence" has been challenged as inconclusive and even as manifestly false. In the face of this bitter dispute and with all the data not fully tested, one may hesitate to express an absolute or final judgment. But certain facts are evident from the records of the American Board and from other unimpeachable testimony that has been slowly gathered. It is clear that there were difficulties in mission management which prompted the sending of Whitman to Boston; it is no less clear that he was much concerned as to the settlement of the Oregon country and eager that the interests of the United States, and particularly Protestant interests, should be dominant therein, so eager indeed that the officers of the Board and some of his fellow missionaries felt that Whitman had been too much diverted from his missionary

work to activity in public affairs. Competent witnesses establish at least these facts: his daring ride, his visit to Washington, his interview with President Tyler, his satisfactory explanation of his conduct and plans to the Board's officers in Boston, and his return to the mission as companion and helper, if not actually organizer of an emigrant band that brought new settlers with wagons into the territory whose destiny was at stake. Unquestionably lapses of memory, possibly flights of imagination, are discoverable in some of the reminiscences of those who have contributed to the story. But there are too many honest witnesses and too many precise and corroborative statements to permit the brushing aside of the whole story as a myth. After making just allowance for what may be legendary, the figure of Marcus Whitman as missionary hero and statesman is left fundamentally as historical as that of Paul Revere.

The Oregon Massacre

Another dramatic event which gave fame to the Oregon Mission was its sudden close in the massacre of 1847. There had been signs of trouble during the preceding winter. The causes are not altogether clear. It was said that an unusual amount of sickness had by some been charged to Dr. Whitman's medicine. It came out later that the plot contemplated the slaying only of American missionaries; Frenchmen and Roman Catholics were to be spared, which facts point to certain influences as fomenting discord. The execution of the plot was swift and terrible. Almost before the company in the mission premises at Waiilatpu realized what was coming, the Indians burst into the house and the first deadly blow was struck. Details are too revolting to be related here. All the cruel ingenuity of the savage was let loose. Both Dr. and Mrs. Whitman were ruthlessly slaughtered, while the surviving children were assembled to be shot in the room where their father lay, horribly cut and mangled, but still breathing. But for some reason at last the command was given to spare them.

Through the efforts of the Hudson Bay Company and the cooperation of some friendly Indians, the survivors of the massacre and the missionaries at other stations were quickly brought to safety. The escape of several, in particular of Mr. Spalding, was marvelous. In the face of this crushing disaster it was manifestly impossible to continue the mission in so lonely and indefensible locations. All the stations were soon abandoned; most of the missionaries, however, remaining in the territory, where some of them, notably Mr. Spalding and Cushing Eells, were yet to render distinguished service. Not for many years and then under other auspices did the way open to reestablish a mission on this martyr ground.

Anti-Slavery Questions

Since there were many southern churches of one denomination or another in the constituency, it was inevitable that the American Board should be involved in the early agitation over slavery. In the settlements among Cherokees and Choctaws there were from the beginning negro slaves. Not a few Indians were slaveholders, and some of them became members of the native churches. A slave and his owner were occasionally found in the same church or Christian community. So early as 1840 a memorial was presented to the Board at its annual meeting by ministers from New York state remonstrating against the solicitation of gifts from slaveholders or slaveholding states. The next year it was New Hampshire ministers who presented a memorial. They recognized that the Board had been "goaded in unchristian methods," and "censured for not carrying out plans that were neither wise nor good"; but they declared that the Board should not keep silence, but make known its views and feelings in the matter. The answer, repeated year by year to these memorials, was that while the Board could sustain no relation to slavery which implied approbation or sympathy, it could not declare itself in measures against this system any more than against any other specific form of evil existing in the community. It had one definite task to do, and it could not

be diverted to become an agitator or a makeweight on either side of the controversy. As the years went on and the anti-slavery agitation became more bitter, this non-committal attitude was increasingly unsatisfactory, the debates at the annual meetings grew more intense and the policy of the Board less confident. By 1842 there were threats of another missionary society. Indeed, the American Missionary Association, founded in 1846, and which set out to serve the heathen abroad as well as the negroes at home, was designed to be an effective protest against what its founders deplored as a timid and compromising attitude.

Later, when opinion cleared and hardened, the American Board began to express itself more distinctly as opposed to slavery. An earnest, not to say sharp correspondence followed between the officers of the Board and its missionaries among the Cherokees and Choctaws. Even so fine and loyal a soul as Mr. Kingsbury, one of the founders of the mission, pleaded for the continuance of a temporizing policy until conditions should change, declaring that while they abhorred slavery the missionaries to the southern Indians, situated as they were, could not break sharply with it.

The situation was difficult and delicate. On the one hand was the rather violent, uncompromising abolitionist, who sought to make the Board his advocate; on the other, were some of its devoted missionaries and their loyal converts and church members, who pleaded that the Board was disrupting its missions by allowing itself to become a court of appeal in questions that were outside of its jurisdiction. Between these extremes stood the large constituency of the Board, arraying itself more and more against slavery, yet disposed to move cautiously and patiently, and desirous not to involve the Board more than was necessary in disputes it could not settle. It is not to be wondered at, or perhaps to be deprecated, that the course of the Board was somewhat temporizing until the sentiment had strengthened and the progress of events made

it possible to cut out the sore without destroying the life of the missions. And if some of the old supporters of the Board were alienated, their defection occasioned the American Missionary Association. That result, like the withdrawal of Judson from the first mission of the American Board, though regarded at the time as a calamity, has proved to be a gain to the kingdom of God.

A Résumé of the Period, 1850

A review of the Indian missions, after a generation of effort, prompts some disappointment. Fields undertaken at great cost of men and money were already closed; others were languishing. Before the flood of white immigration, the red man was slowly but surely falling back or falling under. The extinction of some tribes was imminent. The Indian tribes were not, however, by any means alike: they differed as do the various white peoples. Forest tribes were ever more amenable to missionary work than those of the prairie; the eastern and southern tribes were more inclined to adopt civilized ways than the more savage and degraded Indians of the West. But all were kept unsettled and irritated by their frequent transfers. The white man's word came to be little respected, so that the reputation and good-will of the missionaries were seriously hurt in the eyes of those who inclined to regard them as of like character with the rest of their race. While many of the government agents were men of good principles and just intent, the careless or wanton action of one official often spoiled much good service. Sometimes the example of the Indian agents as well as of white traders was desperately bad.

But this view of the situation, though true to facts, does not represent all the facts or rightly measure the value of the work which had been done so far by these missions to the aborigines of America. In spite of all obstacles and interruptions, and the difficulty of the Indian's nature and life, solid results were evident. Some tribes were now fairly to be called civilized, having all the customs, laws, and institutions

of Christian states and communities. Industry and thrift had been instilled into natures predisposed to idleness. Thousands had been won to the Christian way and gathered into church membership. And in all the missions there were shining examples of Christian character and life. The cause of temperance, which touched the Indian's besetting sin, had so far advanced in some of the nations, notably the Cherokee and Choctaw tribes, that the general sentiment of the people was against the sale of intoxicating liquors within their boundaries. Conspicuous among the missionary achievements of the period are to be reckoned these Indian missions wherein a heroic and devoted company had proved themselves true witnesses of Christ to his needy ones; in the very spirit of their Master they laid down their lives for those who often behaved as their enemies.

Chapter IV

TRANSFORMING THE SANDWICH ISLANDS

The Incentive

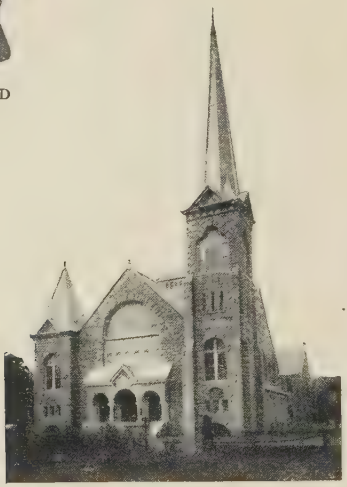
The beginning of the American Board's mission to the Sandwich Islands lies back of the organization of the Board itself. When Samuel Mills came down from Williams College to be a graduate student at Yale, he found there Henry Obookiah. This lad had left the islands during a civil war in which his father and mother had been killed before his eyes, and his infant brother speared to death as he was carrying him on his back. The kindly sea captain, with whom he found refuge, brought him and two other waifs to this country and to New Haven. There Obookiah was discovered one day on the steps of the college, crying for sheer loneliness and with hunger for the education which he saw others were getting. To the flaming heart of Mills the boy's story of his land and its people was irresistible. He reported it to Gordon Hall: "What does this mean? Brother Hall, do you understand it? Shall he be sent back unsupported to attempt to reclaim his countrymen? Shall we not rather consider these southern islands a proper place for the establishment of a mission?" From that time the Sandwich Islands were not out of the minds of some of the founders of American foreign missions. Obookiah died before he was ready to return to his people, and his death reenforced the appeal to send them missionaries.

The First Missionaries

The first band was ready to be sent out in October, 1819. After prolonged and impressive services in Park Street Church, Boston, including the organizing of the adults into a church and the celebration of the Lord's Supper by a great company, the party embarked, Saturday, the 23d, on the brig *Thaddeus*, for the long voyage to the Pacific.

THE POISON GOD

THE FISH GOD



CENTRAL UNION CHURCH, HONOLULU

There were twenty-one in the party: two ordained missionaries, Rev. Messrs. Bingham and Thurston, two teachers, a physician, a printer, and a farmer, the wives and children of these men, and three natives of the Sandwich Islands, young men who, like Obookiah, had been trained in the foreign mission school at Cornwall, Conn., and were believed to be prepared for Christian work among their own people.

A Surprising Reception

The five months' voyage around the Horn gave time for speculation as to what might befall the party on their arrival. Would they be allowed to land? If so, would it be peace or war? What shocking idolatry, cruel sacrifices, and revolting superstitions would they face? The prospect tested courage. For the judgment of Captain Cook, who discovered the island, that a white man would not be safe there, had been justified by his own murder; while in the neighboring Society Islands English missionaries had but just won out in a struggle for very life. Imagine the amazement of these Americans when they reached Hawaii and sent Hopu ashore to have him come quickly back, waving his hat and shouting, "Oahu's idols are no more!" It seemed that when the old king Kamehameha had died in the preceding May, his son had straightway overthrown the religion of the land, abolishing its rules and rites, deposing the priesthood, forbidding idolatry and human sacrifice, and doing all this with the consent of the high priests and the approval of the people. The idols were burned or dumped into the sea. The missionaries found a land that had disposed of its traditional religion and was ready for another.

Not a Religious Reformation

This overthrow of idolatry was not due to the awakening of a higher religious idea; it was only a revolt from an unbearable oppression. The chief feature of the Hawaiian religious system was the *tabu*, in some respects a more terrible bondage than caste in India. For it was a rigid system of prohibition touching every person and all his possessions and actions. It put into the

hands of higher personages, chiefs and priests, the weapon of an absolute and arbitrary control by which they could claim or doom whatever they would. The penalty of *tabu* was death; the fear of it made life one long terror. It was the growing revolt against this burden, particularly bound up with the exercises of religion, that enabled Liholiho to wipe out at once and completely the religion of the island. When the king, albeit in a drunken orgy, himself broke the *tabu*, by eating swine flesh, the news spread through all the islands and the old system was forever abandoned.

The Stupendous Task

Although the missionaries rejoiced with gratitude to God that their arrival should have been so well timed, it was by no means a small or easy task which was left to them. Notwithstanding their break with the past, these islanders could hardly yet be called other than savages like the rest of the Polynesians. It was their habit to put out of the way the aged and the infirm, casting them over precipices or burying them alive. Cripples were the common object of sport even to the children, and sympathy and kindness were almost unknown. Naturally a well-formed and vigorous people, apparently of the Malay race, they were so depleted by war and vice that their number had decreased from perhaps 300,000 to about 130,000.

The ten islands making up the group had altogether an area less than that of Massachusetts, cut up into little kingdoms, till the masterful Kamehameha I brought all under his sway. Such civilization as he could command he adopted, securing some vessels, building forts and drilling his soldiers; but no real progress in the arts had been made. There was no written language nor any thought of one, no commerce, trade, or regular industry. The people lived chiefly on the few tropical products of their islands, with an occasional delicacy of raw fish. They had not even learned to use the sugar-cane or arrow-root that were growing all about them. As for their home life, they lived in the rudest of low hovels. Men, women,

and children crowded into the one room, where they slept on the ground covered with grass or a thin mat, with the domestic animals huddled round them, and rose in the morning to eat from the same calabash of *poi*, their fingers serving as knives and forks; at the close of the meal the great pipe was passed about from father to four-year-old child.

Under such physical conditions, it was not surprising to find the moral status of the people terribly low; and it was at almost its lowest point when the missionaries arrived. Marriage and family ties were scarcely regarded. Children were not desired, and were seldom taken care of by their own parents. If nobody would take them, they were strangled or buried alive. There was no sense of modesty; not only children, but men and women for the most part went without clothing. The king, with his five wives, called on Mr. Ruggles just as they came from the surf; when reproved, he came the next time wearing a pair of silk stockings and a hat!

Moral Degradation

The eighth commandment was as little regarded as the seventh; thievery was everywhere. The people were a race of gamblers, and since they had come into touch with the white men, were fast becoming a race of drunkards. With no regular habits of work, gorging themselves when there was plenty and fasting when there was little, turning night into day, living entirely by impulse and as circumstances made easy, they were so indolent, brutish, and unreliable that it was a desperate outlook for those who came with the hope of winning them to Christian life and civilization.

A fortnight's conference was required to settle the question whether the missionaries should be received. Before the king and his trusted counselors, the two wives of his father, Keopuolani and Kaahumanu, the prime minister, Kalanimoku, known by the foreigners as "Billy Pitt," and other chiefs and governors, women as well as men, the newcomers stated their case, asking permission to

A Welcome and Location

remain for a year on trial. Here, as in Turkey, the fact that the missionaries had brought their wives convinced a suspicious people that they had come to dwell and not to plunder. The Sandwich Islands chiefs said, "If they had come to fight they would not have brought their women." Their request was granted, and they were allowed to occupy three stations, Kailua on Hawaii, Honolulu on Oahu, and Waimea on Kauai. The king showed them such hospitality as he had to offer, providing for the temporary shelter of these twenty-two persons, "a large barn-like thatched structure, without floor, ceiling, partition, windows, or furniture." Soon the company divided to occupy the several stations. When a little later the court was transferred to Honolulu, the Thurstons, not daring to stay in Kailua without the protection of the king's presence, followed him to the new capital. It is worthy of note, perhaps, that the act of a coarse priest in Kailua, who attempted to lay his hands upon Mrs. Thurston one day while her husband was at the school, was the only insult ever offered by a native of the islands to the missionary ladies.

The Press and the School

The starting of work among such a people involved not only learning their language, but reducing it to written form. As the alphabet was short and simple, this was not difficult. Within two years it was possible to use the printing press, and by the beginning of 1822 the first sheet was printed. Schools were soon opened, pupils coming from the families of the chiefs, the king himself being one of them. It was considered to be a prerogative of royalty to have the earliest benefit of what the missionaries brought. The governors of the islands thought that each of them should have a resident missionary as a sort of private tutor, and the schools were largely extended through the patronage of the chiefs. When a native teacher was made ready, the chiefs who were interested would send him out to teach in one of the districts, ordering the head men to furnish support and equipment. thus distributing teachers among the islands. A few

of the Hawaiians were taught the rudiments of English, but the main effort was to reach the islanders through their native speech.

Hard Conditions

The first steps in this missionary work were even less pretentious than teaching primary schools or preaching short sermons in broken speech. Before all, it was necessary to create a desire for better things. Here again the value of the missionary family was evident, with its example of a Christian home and the manners of a Christian civilization. Mr. Bingham has described a missionary's wife cutting and fitting a dress for the queen, who would hardly stop from her gambling long enough to try it on, and then would reject it with a curt "Too tight! Off with it! Do it over!" And while the poor missionary was trying to show the queen's serving-women how to make her dresses, a pet hog was burrowing in the cloth like a puppy. Such ministry seems very humble and petty, but it was necessary if any progress was to be made, and it was undertaken without a murmur.

The hardships of missionary life in those early days were correspondingly heavy and inevitable. At first, no house could be secured but a one-roomed hut like those of the natives; cooking was often done outdoors. For more than a decade these men and women of culture lived in thatched houses with the very barest and simplest furniture. In the matter of food they were reduced almost to the fare of the natives. No milk could be had for several years. Such salt meats and hard bread as could be obtained from ships, with the fruits that the land afforded, were the staples of fare. Supplies were forwarded from the United States, but so long was the voyage and so slow the transfer that, as Mr. Coan once wrote: "Our news became old and our provisions stale before they reached us, while our stationery might be exhausted, our medicines expended, our flour moldy and full of worms before the new supplies arrived. Many a time have we been obliged to break

up our barrel of hardened flour with an ax." Yet as they shared the native life in these outward conditions, the missionaries won, more quickly than otherwise they could have done, the confidence and good-will of the people to whom they had come.

Helpful Arrivals

The arrival in 1822 of Rev. William Ellis, one of the London Missionary Society's men in the Society Islands, who happened to visit Honolulu en route to the Marquesas group, was of immense help to the young mission. For it chanced that the foreign residents of Honolulu were then conspiring by false arguments as to the state of affairs in the Society Islands to persuade king Liholiho to banish the missionaries. The coming of Mr. Ellis and his native associates brought direct and effective denial of these charges, and swung the balance in the missionaries' favor. Moreover, the party were persuaded to remain for a year or more as helpers in the Sandwich Islands Mission, where they were the first to preach freely to the people in the Hawaiian speech. When a substantial reenforcement was made to the mission in 1823, including seven new missionaries and three more Hawaiians from the Cornwall school, it became possible to broaden the field of work. A tour of exploration was made around the large island of Hawaii and new stations were soon opened at Hilo and Puna on the eastern side and at Lahaina on Maui.

Soon it became fashionable to belong to the mission school and to listen to the preaching of the missionaries. Some of the chiefs began to give genuine evidence that they were taking the truth of the gospel to heart. Keopuolani, now the wife of the governor of Maui, was in 1823 the first native to receive the seal of baptism, and Kaumualii, the banished king of Kauai, compelled to live under the eye of the king at Oahu, became a devoted friend and patron of the mission. When he died, instead of the customary carouse upon the death of a chief, Christian prayer and song marked the service in his memory.

The death of the king and queen, during an ill-starred visit to England, in 1824, proved a blessing to the missionaries.

Better Rulers

For although Liholiho countenanced and even aided the introduction of Christianity, by his example he encouraged the coarsest vices. Upon his departure Kaahumanu became regent, and the advantage of her strong and steady character was immediately felt. Moreover, the responsibilities of office soon made her a docile pupil of the Christian teachers, and before long she committed herself openly to their instruction. The prime minister was already an outspoken supporter of the new way, and together they began to Christianize the government. Several others of the leading chiefs of both sexes, such as Kuakini and Kapiolani, of Hawaii, and Hoapili, of Maui, had also taken the Christian stand. In connection with the funeral ceremonies for Liholiho a national convention of chiefs was held, to affirm before the representative of the British government their support of the missionaries, and a strong pronouncement was made against immorality and crime. At the same time it was agreed that the young prince, the brother of the late king, should be left in the care of the missionaries to be trained for the throne, the present regency being continued.

With such royal favor and leadership the work prospered and broadened. By the end of 1824 not less than fifty natives

Spread of the Work

were employed as teachers on the various islands, and 2000 pupils had already learned to read. Schools were introduced into the new district of Hilo and a church built there, the ninth erected in the first four years of the mission. When the church at Honolulu was burned the prime minister immediately ordered timber to be brought from the mountain for another building. By agreement of the chiefs the Sabbath was formally recognized in the land and the ten commandments adopted as the basis of government. Laws were also passed in the interests of morality and women were forbidden to visit the ships that came to

port. By the following year more than 100 natives of both sexes, among them several chiefs of royal blood, presented themselves at Honolulu as candidates for Christian baptism. They were all carefully examined and watched before they were admitted to the church, but within a few months most of them were received. A chief feature of their Christian culture was what they called a "tabu meeting," in effect a prayer meeting shaped to encourage and safeguard morality. Separate associations of this sort for men and women were formed in many of the stations and some of them came to have a large membership.

Against Mighty Odds

Notwithstanding all these helps and encouragements there were still tremendous obstacles to overcome. Habits of indolence and indulgence were so ingrained in the native life that it furnished discouraging material to mold into Christian character. Lapses were frequent. Although the people had adopted the ten commandments as the law of the land they found it hard to live up to them. The native helpers, even some of those trained in the United States, often disappointed the missionaries. One of the Cornwall students, George, son of the king of Kauai, upon his father's death, in 1824, actually led an insurrection against the new order, which threatened to bring on civil war, but which was fortunately averted by his defeat and subjection.

Yet when one realizes the situation in the islands the wonder is not so much that many fell back as that any stood firm. The missionaries doubted whether there was ever a place in the world where there was so much concentrated and seducing wickedness, with so little restraint of conscience, as at the station of Honolulu. While some captains of whaleships were friendly, and men of Nantucket are particularly mentioned as having shown all kindness to the missionaries in their work, even contributing generously to the first house of worship, the majority of them were hostile and vicious. The pressure of evil was tremendous. Even one of the missionaries of the

first group to arrive, the young physician, Dr. Holman, was drawn away and left the mission to join its opponents, thus adding to the strain and burden of the rest.

Persecution by Foreigners

From the beginning of the mission the foreigners who were exploiting this weaker race objected to the presence of the missionaries and sought to hinder them. Now they undertook a more open and vigorous protest. The growth of temperance sentiment and the laws to protect womanhood were particularly obnoxious. False charges and threats were made by angry shipmasters. The most prolonged and worst outrage came from a source that was least dreaded. For the commander of the *Dolphin*, the first United States government ship to visit the islands, in 1826, demanded the repeal of the law against the visiting of ships by women, threatened to shoot Mr. Bingham if he interfered, and to tear down the houses of the missionaries unless his demand was granted. After more than a month of parley, one Sabbath a half dozen sailors from the *Dolphin* forced their way into the sick-room of the prime minister, where service was being held, renewing the demand. When Mr. Bingham attempted to escape to protect his house, the rioters set upon him, and had not the natives fought them off would probably have taken his life. At length, by persistently terrifying the chiefs, the commander succeeded in getting the law revoked, and from May to December Honolulu was shamelessly defiled. The corruption which ensued was a heavy injury and sorrow to the mission, but it was comforting to see how many of the natives, not only chiefs but common people, who had been identified with the missionaries, held fast to them despite every slander and artifice of their enemies. The behavior of these humble people in dealing with powerful foreigners and in protecting their Christian teachers is one of the glories of missionary history.

A similar attack being made a little later at Lahaina by the crews of American and British ships, and in the absence of

the governor, the faithful natives guarded Mr. Richards, while the governor's wife, Hoapiliwahine, apprehending the danger in time, called the women to follow her to a safe hiding-place in the mountains. The protest of the American Board at these outrages resulted in a court-martial, whose findings, however, were so deferred or suppressed that the case was practically lost.

Progress, Nevertheless

In spite of these heavy adversities and the partial overturning of the missionaries' work, progress was made. In 1826 a statement was issued from the mission press, signed by eight missionaries representing all the stations, which set forth some of the changes that had been wrought since their coming: that nearly all the leading persons on the islands had been taught to read and write; that drunkenness and gambling, which were formerly universal, were now limited to a comparatively small number; that the observing of the Sabbath was general; that schools had been established on the principal islands and were attended by nearly 25,000 scholars, and that some of the leaders of the nation, as well as those of lower rank, had publicly committed themselves to the faith and practise of Christianity. Following this pronouncement and in accord with its closing challenge, a remarkable trial of the missionaries' case was held, in which Mr. Richards spoke for them, and the British consul in opposition, while the captain of a United States sloop of war, then in Honolulu, served as judge. The case for the opposition broke down, and Captain Jones' farewell letter, expressing his endorsement of the work of the mission, while it did not end persecution or stop the mouths of the angry seamen, marked the beginning of a better attitude on the part of the more reputable foreigners and the representatives of the United States.

Covering the Islands

Work now went rapidly on. Schools were everywhere welcomed; attendance of both young and old was compulsory. In Lahaina, in 1829, half the population was in school, and at another time the same was true of all the islands. The weakness of these schools was in the

line of their strength; for, as they multiplied fast, and pupils soon became teachers, they were able to carry their scholars but little way, and, as they were not often persistent in further study, the schools soon reached their zenith of interest and power. Yet by contrast with their former condition these people seemed uplifted "more than half way to a Bacon or a Newton."

The work of translation and publishing kept pace with that of the schools. As the number of those who could read increased, the demand for books grew also. In the first eight years of the mission's history twenty-two books were printed, of which 387,000 copies were distributed, besides many books and papers brought from the United States. The translation of the Scriptures by Mr. Richards and Mr. Bingham was pursued and portions appeared from time to time as they were ready. By 1828 the four Gospels had been translated and were in circulation.

The acquisition of a small packet in 1827 encouraged touring among the islands, which in native boats had been desperately slow and uncomfortable work. Several tours of exploration and preaching were made from 1826 to 1828; with delight it was found that schools had in many cases preceded the missionary. The tours themselves sometimes became training-schools, people crowding around their visitors with note-books to take down and commit all they were taught.

First Awakening, 1828

A deepening seriousness among the islanders was shown by increased attendance at religious services and a growing religious sense, which if somewhat superficial seemed in the main honest. Mr. Richards on Maui reported that there was scarcely an hour in the day when he did not have inquirers. In Hawaii, too, and Oahu groups were waiting at the missionary's gate in the morning; as they were received, others took their place. At Kailua the church was often filled to overflowing, the canoes drawn up on the beach, at the time of the service, making the missionaries think

of the row of carriages drawn up by the country church in the homeland. Mr. and Mrs. Ruggles had names of 2500 inquirers on their books. The characteristics of this awakening were like those familiar in more civilized lands: a sense of sin, the impulse to repentance, the joy of faith, the fellowship and zeal of the new communion.

Those were happy and inspiring days to the missionaries who had labored long and hard. They did not overestimate the event; they knew well the instability of the native character and they were prepared for some reaction. Yet, when in the report for 1832 the question was raised, "Are the Sandwich Islanders a Christian nation?" they could only answer affirmatively. By all the rules usually applied, these people had grown within twelve years to be a Christian people. Christianity had preceded civilization and was leading it. So strong an impression did this argument make that it was seriously proposed that further missionary efforts should be confined to the less known islands. A new mission to the Washington or Marquesas Islands was therefore undertaken in 1833, but the attempt to reach the savage and polluted cannibals of that group was soon abandoned as untimely.

A Decline in Religion and Morals

The death of Kaahamanu, the queen regent, in 1832, was accompanied by a general decline in the better life of the islands. This remarkable woman had proved herself a pillar of strength to the Christian influences in her land. Naturally proud, high-spirited, and loving power, in heathen days she had been an imperious and often cruel ruler. Her unusual keenness of mind, energy, and resoluteness of will had made her since the death of her husband, the great Kamehameha, a figure of supreme importance in the land. During the decade since the death of Liholiho she had ruled with a firm and wise hand. In the early years her people feared while they respected her. As she came more under the influence of the missionaries and was softened by sickness and the responsibilities of office, her character was radically changed.

In her later years, during her tours through the islands, so impressed were the people by the sincerity of her Christian life and her sympathy for them that they called her "the new Kaahumanu." During her regency this little nation in the South Seas was perhaps as near to a theocracy as any people since the early days of Israel. Her death following that of the prime minister left the rule to less competent and devoted hands. The crown prince, on coming into power, so inclined toward evil advisers and relaxed the government that widespread demoralization and disorder ensued. At the time it seemed a dark providence that thus allowed the weakening of royal support to the cause of the missionaries. Later it was judged not to be without advantage that the alliance between church and state should have been parted, in view of the danger of the church being perverted to the ends of evil and unscrupulous rulers. The unhappy effects of the change were widely felt in the falling off of schools and congregations, the desecration of the Sabbath, and the loss of devotion on the part of church members. From the missionary standpoint, in 1834, the outlook was dark indeed.

Renewed Effort

The progress of the mission was thus clouded for only a little while. The American Board was persuaded that in this field, with forces so well in hand, it should be possible to demonstrate the power of the gospel to evangelize in one age an entire people. With this end in view, the missionaries were called upon to survey their fields again and to estimate their needs. In 1836 there went to the islands the largest number of missionaries ever sent out at one time to any mission, thirty-two men and women. Many of this party were not ordained, but were secured as lay helpers to aid in a more rapid effort to evangelize the field. By 1837 the forces of the mission had been so enlarged that there were seventeen stations occupied, with seventeen churches and twenty-seven ordained missionaries, the total missionary force numbering sixty.

All forms of mission work were now pressed with fresh determination. The revival and improvement of schools was being accomplished through the development of higher institutions; the graduates of the seminary at Lahainaluna and the other mission schools were going forth better equipped for the work of teaching. The boarding-schools on several of the islands were getting well under way — one for boys at Hilo, and another for girls, the latter opened by Mrs. Coan upon her arrival, and a larger school for girls on Maui — so that the proportion of youth under instruction was now far greater than in former times. But the schools for adults shared in the general revival of learning, and better houses and equipment were secured.

In the same way new houses of worship were erected, many of them substantial buildings of stone; one at Kaulua glorying in a gallery, steeple, and bell. New lines of industry were being introduced and a marked improvement in thrift and personal appearance was manifest among the people. The missionaries began to hope that the idle habits of the race might be overcome. In the interior districts the conditions were still bare and hard. In one part of Hawaii it was reported that there were not forty families in the church whose entire wardrobe and household furniture would be worth more than $20. A canoe, a hog or two, a grass house, a few mats and calabashes, a shirt apiece and one pair of trousers for the men, one dress for each woman, rarely an ax, more often a fish-net, made up the inventory of property belonging to most of the families on that island.

The New Code of Laws, 1839

However, better conditions were coming to pass. For in 1839 the old order which had made the people virtually slaves of their rulers was superseded by a code of laws, proclaimed by the king and his counselors, which gave to every man a true bill of rights to himself and his family, to land which he acquired, and to the avails of his own skill and industry. Real progress on a basis of

liberty and law was now possible. Where else in this old world than in these islands just out of savagery was a hereditary despotism ever changed to a constitutional government by the voluntary action of those in power?

The coming of the Coans to Hilo in 1835 marked a new era at that station. During the first half year of his missionary life and before he could use the language, Mr. Coan had begun his famous tours of the district. His splendid physique enabled him to undertake such journeys as would appall most men. On one trip he crossed sixty-three ravines, one-fourth of which were from 200 to 1000 feet deep. It was often a matter of climbing with both hands and feet, over perilous places, sometimes of being let down by ropes from tree to tree, or being carried on the shoulders of a native while a company of men with locked hands stretched themselves across the torrent to prevent the danger of being carried over the falls. As each village was reached there was plenty of missionary work to be done, the weekly number of sermons being never less than six or seven and sometimes as many as twenty-five or thirty.

Advance at Hilo

The value of this touring was apparent as the people flocked in to Hilo to hear more of the gospel. During the years 1837–38 Hilo was crowded with strangers; the cabins of the visitors studded the plain like the camp of an army. Entire families would come in together, the aged being brought on litters, until whole villages in the country were left practically deserted. By fishing and planting taro and potatoes, this great company was able to maintain itself and found time to crowd the services in the great house of worship. It was a moving sight to the missionary to look down upon the sea of faces waiting for the Word.

So in Hilo and in like manner elsewhere came gradually and quietly a religious awakening that soon shook the land. Beginning in 1836, it reached its climax in 1838–39. The missionaries at that time were burdened with special longing for the conversion of the whole world. They had sent a printed appeal to the churches in the home-

The Great Awakening, 1838–39

land to join them in prayer and effort for this end. It reached the United States in the year 1837, in the midst of the financial panic, a time not favorable for appeals for more consecration or the expenditure of more money. Though disappointed at the reception of their message, the missionaries kept on praying until their reward came in the unmistakable signs of a religious awakening in their own field. A new spiritual life stirred in the native churches; the standard of piety was raised; inquirers and then converts began to appear. There was a new eagerness to hear the preaching of the gospel. The themes were its old familiar call to repentance and faith, and its appeal to the will. The response became tremendous. Some startling demonstrations occurred, requiring restraint, but in the main there was little tumult and hysteria, but much heart searching, confession, and earnest seeking after God. Congregations increased until in some stations 2000, sometimes even 4000 or 5000 people assembled. The numbers won to the Christian life were beyond all precedent. During the years 1839–41 the accessions to the eighteen churches were 22,297, and this with the greatest care in sifting candidates. Careful lists of converts were kept; they were assigned, visited, examined, and reexamined, enrolled in training classes, put on probation, and then held back for months and even years before they were admitted. Friends and enemies alike were called upon to testify concerning the candidates. Instead of a lack of caution, it was afterward thought that there had been an excess of caution in admitting new members.

Of course there were relapses and, in some places and to an extent, reaction. Yet this great awakening Christianized the nation. It changed the outer as well as the inner life. That it did not develop Christian character to an even greater degree was perhaps due in part to the missionaries' reluctance to put much responsibility upon the young disciples; so they failed to evoke a life and service corresponding to the new devotion.

The distinguished traveler, Miss Isabella Bird, in an account of her visit to Hilo and the acquaintance there made with Mr. Coan, relates, as she heard it from him, the story of the revival, and, in particular, of that first Sunday in July, 1838, when he baptized 1705 persons. The candidates were seated close together in rows, while Mr. Lyman and Mr. Coan, passing between, sprinkled every bowed head and then pronounced the formula for baptism. Afterward 2400 converts received the Holy Communion. Mr. Coan's own words picture that service: "The old and decrepit, the lame, the blind, the maimed, the withered, the paralytic, and those afflicted with divers diseases and torments; those with eyes, noses, lips, and limbs consumed; with features distorted, and figures depraved and loathsome; these came hobbling upon their staves, or led and borne by others to the table of the Lord. Among the throng you would have seen the hoary priest of idolatry, with hands but recently washed from the blood of human victims, together with thieves, adulterers, highway robbers, murderers, and mothers whose hands reeked with the blood of their own children. It seemed like one of the crowds the Saviour gathered, and over which he pronounced the words of healing."

Almost from the beginning the missionaries had been encouraged and helped at their task by converts of rank and influence.

Eminent Converts

Some of them have been already mentioned: Queen Keopuolani, the subject king of Kauai, the regent Kaahumanu, and her prime minister, Kalanimoku, whose conversion overcame the pride, ambition, and baser vices of a strong savage and produced a true servant and benefactor of his nation.

A favorite heroine of the Christian conquest of the Sandwich Islands was Kapiolani, a descendant of one of the ancient Hawaiian kings, whose landed possessions sloped back from the waters of Kealakekua Bay to the woodlands of Mauna Loa. When she first came into contact with the missionaries, like the rest of her people, she was ignorant and intemperate,

and as was customary among women of her rank, the wife of two husbands — a pagan in every sense of the word. Soon she became a devoted believer in the gospel and set about conforming her life thereto. She renounced all gambling and drinking, gave up her younger husband, with her own hands destroyed idols, founded schools, ministered to the sick, and went about her province doing good. In her well-ordered home she entertained graciously, and even with the niceties of civilized life, not only her missionary friends, but distinguished visitors from other lands.

The one act which makes her name immortal is her visit in 1825 to Pele, the great crater of Kilauea. Realizing the superstition with which her people regarded this smoking mountain, while they worshiped with sacrifices the reputed goddess supposed to dwell within its seething abyss, this high chief resolved to visit the volcano, defy the goddess and break her spell. Her husband and her people besought her not to proceed. Her answer was, "If I am destroyed, you may all believe in Pele; but if I am not, then you must all turn to the *palapala*." When a prophetess of Pele stood in her path and warned her not to go further, she confounded the impostor by demanding proof of her prophetic gift. After the babble of unmeaning sounds was over, Kapiolani began to read from the Scriptures a message from the true God until the supposed prophetess was silenced.

On reaching the crater she marched straight to the brink, ate of the berries consecrated to Pele, threw stones of defiance into the boiling mass, and challenged the weeping natives who had followed her to acknowledge Jehovah. Then with words of hymn and prayer the whole company worshiped the living God. The enlightened traveler who gazes upon the awful majesty of this volcano is silenced into half fear by the spectacle, yet this woman, scarcely four years out of paganism, stood forth superior to the horror of the place and the terror of her people and by one act broke the fetters of superstition.

Not all the witness was borne by those of high rank. Puaaiki was a blind dancer and buffoon in the king's train when the missionaries came to Hawaii. Only thirty-five years of age, he had almost burned his life out with gross vices. A pitiable figure of small frame, with haggard face, feeble limbs, half-clad and underfed, when in a fit of sickness he received some kindness from one of the Christian islanders brought from America, the king's fool was won to the life of a child of God. He began to come regularly to worship, gave up his drink, and sought eagerly to learn the new way. His blindness shut him in to store in his powerful memory the words and ideas that came to him. At length Puaaiki, or Bartimeus, as he was called upon his admission to the Church, became known as a remarkable preacher. During the awakening of 1838 his heart was overflowing with joy, and his words were as of one lifted up by the power of the Spirit, while his face shone as if it reflected some of the glory of heaven. His preaching was a wonder and delight to the missionaries, while his humility, gentleness, and loving zeal endeared him to all.

Blind Bartimeus

The joyful scenes of the great awakening were rudely broken by the arrival of a French corvette *Embuscade*, whose captain announced that he had come to further the interests of the Roman Catholics in the islands. This was not the first attempt of the sort; Roman ecclesiastics had early tried to get a foothold in the islands, but were driven out by the king. In 1839 a French frigate arrived, whose officer claimed that France had been insulted by the rejection of the Jesuits and who demanded reparation and a new treaty showing favor to them. Issuing his ultimatum, he threatened hostilities if prompt reply were not received. Under such stress the king yielded, the treaty was signed, indemnity paid, and the frigate sailed away with the desired concessions to the cause of French Catholics and French brandy.

Political Disturbances, 1842

Now in 1842 the demand was even more curt and insulting. The king made calm reply that representatives were already on the way to France to arrange a new treaty. So critical was the state of affairs that an embassy, of which Mr. Richards was one member, was sent to Europe and to the United States with the request that the independence of the Sandwich Islands be acknowledged, with guarantee against usurpation. During the absence of the embassy, affairs were brought into still further tumult by the high-handed action of an English commander, who forced a cession of the islands to Great Britain in February, 1843.

This seizure was short-lived, but during the months until relief came the situation was deplorable, with law and order relaxed and a carnival of lust and intemperance recalling the early days of the mission. The king in despair gave up the attempt to rule and retired to Maui. Dr. Judd, acting in Mr. Richards' absence as recorder for the government, rendered great service by his bold and ingenious act of hiding the national records in the royal tomb. In that unsuspected spot, using Kaahumanu's coffin for a table, he made his office for several weeks, working quietly for the welfare of the country. The arrival of both United States and British warships reinstated the king and restored order, and on July 31 the king and chief repaired to the great Stone Church at Honolulu to give thanks to God for their deliverance. Soon afterward the independence of the Hawaiian nation was formally acknowledged. Thus in a quarter of a century had come forth from the depth of savagery a civilized nation, an event unmatched in the history of the world.

A Spiral Progress, 1840–1850

The decade following the great awakening was characterized by fluctuations of hope and discouragement in the work of the mission. Sometimes two missionaries writing at the same time told quite different stories. There were always two sides to be observed. The Sandwich Islander was still a difficult problem; even when he became

a Christian much of his old unstable and evasive nature clung to him. There was a deal to lament in his course; it was good that he still struggled on. The period of public disorder and political agitation was not conducive to missionary work, and the growing intercourse with the civilized world, while it brought advantages and new life to the islands, brought also new temptations and actually tended to lower the moral tone of the community.

Yet on the whole signs of progress were manifest in almost every direction. The social condition of the people was brighter; the islands became prosperous. With the rush to California, upon the discovery of gold, there came new markets both for the labor and products of the islands. The industrious could now acquire property and better homes and farms began to appear. The higher schools had become important forces in the nation's life. In the schools for girls, the seminary at Lahainaluna and Oahu College some of the ablest missionaries were devoting their labors to training native leaders and teachers. A school instituted in 1839 for young chiefs was soon supported by the government, and had fourteen students, two of whom have since reigned as king and one as queen.

The organization of a national temperance society, the systematic cultivation of temperance sentiment through the schools, and, in particular, the signing of a total abstinence pledge in 1842 by the king and thirteen of his chiefs, brought a glorious change in one characteristic of life in the islands. It cut off in a day nine-tenths of the power which some unprincipled foreigners had before possessed over the king and the kingdom.

The watch and care of the missionaries for the native Christians was no formal matter; they regarded their converts with the same spirit of love and yearning which Paul felt in his day. When the young men went to sea their teachers watched for their return, and inquired whether they had fallen

into the way of drink or violated other rules of morality, and, in particular, whether they had chased whales on the Lord's Day. When fifteen went from the Lahaina church in 1850 to dig for gold in California, Dr. Baldwin reported with delight that not one was known to have dishonored his profession.

In more directly religious lines progress was also apparent. The translation of the Bible into Hawaiian speech was completed in February, 1839, less than twenty years after the arrival of the first missionaries, and gave a new impetus to the circulation of the Scriptures.

A Self-Reliant Church

Larger things were now undertaken in the way of native contributions. The people had always been generous according to their ability. In the earlier days, when they had no money they gave their labor. The people of Hilo brought in weekly supplies of food for the girls' school, at length setting apart a parcel of ground and appointing each "monthly concert" day as a time to cultivate it as the school garden. In the same way they toiled to build their churches, often bringing timber for miles over country so rough that only one stick could be brought in a day by the company of from forty to eighty persons. The new church at Honolulu, in 1842, was built of stone brought from heathen temples, lime made from coral, obtained by diving to the bottom of the sea and then carried seven miles, and timbers drawn from the mountain forests. Mr. Coan's account of the drawing of lumber for the first frame church in Hilo, in 1840, gives a vivid picture of one of these building bees: "When a large number of pieces were ready, hundreds of willing men and women, provided with ropes made of the bark of the hibiscus, with light upper garments, and with leggings of the Adam and Eve style, such as never feared mud and water, went to bring down these timbers. Arranged by a captain in two lines, with drag ropes in hand, ready to obey the command of their chosen leader, they stood waiting his order. At length comes the

command, 'Grasp the ropes; bow the head; blister the hand; go; sweat!' And away they rush, through mud and jungle, over rocks and streams, shouting merrily, and singing to measure. Then comes the order, 'Halt, drop, drag ropes, rest!' This is repeated at longer or shorter intervals according to the state of the ground."

Self-support began to be considered by 1840, when Mr. Richards proposed that the native churches should relieve the American Board of a part of the burden of their maintenance. The idea gained headway slowly until the church at Wailuku reported to Mr. Clark that they were ready to support their own institution. By 1850 it was seriously considered that the time had come for closing the mission. The large company of missionaries and their families was now a heavy financial burden, while the missions in other lands were so urgently calling for enlargement that it was felt the Sandwich Islands should speedily provide for their own needs. When terms of closing began to be discussed, opinions differed as to whether more responsibility could be placed upon the native churches. The mission had been slow to develop in this direction, many of the missionaries thinking that the peculiar characteristics of the Sandwich Islanders were unfavorable to their assuming any responsibility. The carrying out of the proposals was thus delayed for another decade.

The suggestion that the Sandwich Islanders should themselves maintain a mission in Micronesia was just beginning to be heard as this period closes, and was itself the best evidence of the progress made. What the missionary accomplishment had been in these islands in less than a generation is emphasized by the testimony of the American consul at Honolulu in 1848. After confessing that in the United States he had been opposed to missionary effort, he declared, "I do not believe that another instance can be found where, with the same amount of means, so much good has been done to any people in so limited a period."

Chapter V

REENTERING BIBLE LANDS

Upon William Goodell's visit to the Choctaw Indians in 1821 he was welcomed with special interest as "expecting one day to preach the gospel at Jerusalem." From the beginning the American Board had its eye on the Holy Land. It seemed intolerable to its founders that Christianity's birthplace should be forever in the grip of Islam, or left to exhibit a form of Christianity, ancient and intrenched, but for the most part lifeless.

A New Crusade

The first attempts at missionary work were not directed particularly toward the Mohammedans nor to the Oriental Churches, but to the Jews, as in November, 1819, Pliny Fiske and Levi Parsons were sent out to labor in Palestine, with their anticipated location at Jerusalem. However, their instructions gave them ample range. From the heights of Zion they were to survey, not only the Holy Land, but surrounding countries, and then to put to themselves two main questions: "What good can be done?" and "By what means?" "What can be done for the Jews? What for pagans? What for Mohammedans? What for Christians? What for the people in Palestine? What for those in Egypt, in Syria, in Persia, in Armenia, in other countries to which your inquiries may be extended?"

The view before these pioneers was a challenge for the stoutest heart. The vast Turkish empire, with 2,000,000 square miles of territory, then covered almost every land named in Bible history. Beyond Palestine and Syria to the north and west lay the great tablelands of Asia Minor, which Paul traversed as he followed the highways of the Roman provinces. To the east and south

The Land to be Possessed

stretched the wild deserts of Arabia; and northward, again, Mesopotamia and Assyria to the Persian border. On the southern shore of the Mediterranean were Egypt and the African provinces; on the northern side, Greece and the Balkan provinces, then a constituent part of the empire.

And in this vast territory dwelt a strange medley of races and religions. There were the Mohammedans, first of all Turks, the dominant race in the land, but including also Arabs of Syria, Arabia, and Africa, Kurds of Mesopotamia and Armenia, Druzes of the Lebanon, and a majority of the Albanians in European Turkey. Over against these Mohammedan and semi-pagan peoples, disagreeing among themselves, were a variety of Christian sects, of which the Armenians were the most numerous and potent. Other Christians in this huge body politic were the Greeks, found in European Turkey and in western Asia Minor, the Nestorians in the plains and mountains between Assyria and Persia, and the Jacobites, Maronites, and lesser cults of Syria and the region thereabout. In Palestine, and more or less all over the empire, in Europe as in Asia, were the Jews.

Here were 40,000,000 people crowded together and yet separated by irreconcilable differences of race and religion, and embittered by years of controversy and warfare. Except in the coast cities there were scarcely any educated men; the women were uniformly illiterate. There was no literature, apparently no desire for it; everywhere a stagnant barbarism, under the oppressive hand of the sultan-caliph at Constantinople. From one end of the empire to the other there was not a missionary station permanently occupied, not even an established missionary to whom these pioneers could go for counsel or with whom they could divide the land.

Spying it Out, 1820

Making Smyrna their temporary base, Messrs. Fiske and Parsons began their language studies. At length, after a tour through Asia Minor visiting the seats of the seven churches and consulting as to the best methods of

approach, they decided that Parsons should go at once to Jerusalem, where in 1821 he took up his residence near the Holy Sepulchre, attempting particularly to reach the multitudes of pilgrims coming to the city. But Jerusalem was not a hospitable place for a mission station. The outbreak of the Greek revolution presently compelled a retreat to Smyrna. Attempting to return to Jerusalem the next year, Parsons died on the way at Alexandria. His place was promptly taken by Rev. Jonas King, who gave up a prospective professorship at Amherst College for temporary service in the emergency. Upon his joining Mr. Fiske at Malta, a caravan of seventy-four persons, Arabs, Turks, Greeks, and Armenians, under the lead of these two missionaries, set out for Jerusalem by way of Alexandria, Cairo, and the desert, distributing Bibles and tracts at villages along the Nile.

Two busy years were spent in the endeavor to get a foothold in Jerusalem. Tours through Syria and Palestine promoted acquaintance with the land and with its people. Careful inquiries and observations were made, to be set down in journals and reported to officers of the Board, as to the prospects of a Palestine mission and the claims of different locations. Such centers were visited as Jaffa, Beirut, Hebron, Damascus, and Aleppo, the study of languages meanwhile going on, Mr. Fiske working chiefly with Italian and modern Greek and Mr. King with Arabic.

The disturbed state of the country led to withdrawal from Jerusalem to Beirut in the spring of 1825. Mr. King's term of service expiring in August of that year, he wrote a farewell letter to his acquaintances in the land, which was really an argument for the evangelical faith, and, as translated into Arabic and Armenian, exerted an important influence in the evangelization of Turkey. On his way to the homeland, he learned of the death of his associate at Beirut. The missionary qualifications of Pliny Fiske were of the finest type, and his loss was an inexplicable calamity to the new enterprise

in Palestine. By such stern necessity the station at Jerusalem was again closed. A final effort to reopen it some nine years later, though tenaciously made, was at length relinquished, Dr. Joel Hawes, who with Secretary Anderson visited the city in 1844, rendering judgment that Jerusalem bore such a resemblance to the contents of the sheet which Peter saw let down from heaven by its four corners that it appeared an especially disadvantageous place for any missionary work.

The field which Parsons and Fiske had entered was not to be abandoned. Rev. William Goodell and Rev. Isaac Bird, with their wives, had arrived at Beirut on November 16, 1823, just before Mr. Fiske had made his last visit to Jerusalem, and they were well settled at the station before he returned to it to die. The disturbed conditions in Jerusalem decided them to locate at Beirut at least for a time. This busy seaport, with healthful mountains close by and a friendly English consul at hand, was soon recognized as the most promising center for a permanent establishment. The mixture of races and religions there to be reached is indicated by the amazing variety of languages employed. The Scriptures were daily read in Arabic and Greek, ancient and modern, as well as in Turkish, Armenian, Italian, and English, while in the table talk most of these tongues were heard. In Bible translation, versions of the Scriptures in all these languages were used, besides those in Hebrew, Syriac, and French. Among the daily callers at the missionaries' house were likely to be Arabs, Turks, Jews, and Maronites, with all varieties of dialect.

The Syrian Mission

Work opened speedily. Visitors were disposed to receive the Scriptures and religious tracts. Soon schools were started, beginning with one where six Arab children were taught by the missionaries' wives; in 1827 thirteen free schools were to be found in the city and vicinity, with 600 pupils, more than 100 of them girls.

Opposition was aroused almost at once. Starting among

the Roman Catholics rather than among the Turks or Armenians, it was directed particularly against the schools and printing press. To the influence of Rome, working through its priests, was added that of French and Russian officials, scheming to crush out missionary efforts. With such ecclesiastical interference and the political disturbance of the Greek revolution in 1826, the situation appeared alarming enough. The landing of Greek troops in the city brought on a reign of terror, the wild Bedouins sent to drive out the invaders proving even more injurious than the foe. In the general lawlessness Mr. Goodell's house was plundered, though restitution was afterward made. A strange providence in the event was that the invasion caused the flight from the city of the Maronite bishop who had come down from his mountain monastery to compel his people to drive out the missionaries, threatening to excommunicate anyone who should rent a house to them. His departure left the braver missionaries in possession of the field.

In spite of opposition, advance was made and converts won. Some of these converts were notable characters like the two Armenian ecclesiastics, Gregory Wortabet and Garabed Dionysius. These men, who had been secured by the missionaries as language teachers, under the influence of this association and of Bible study, were won to the evangelical faith, becoming not only shining examples of its power, but effective preachers of its truth.

A still more remarkable conquest was that of Asaad es Shidiak, a Maronite scholar and theologian, who had been in the employ of bishops, Arab sheiks, and princes, and finally of the patriarch, and who, in endeavoring to controvert the missionaries' teaching, was led to accept it. Applying for employment, he was at first put off, from suspicion of his motive. Received at length, he became a trusted and efficient helper of the missionaries until, ensnared by the patriarch, he was imprisoned, beaten, and subjected to all kinds of cruelty and trial; loaded

with chains, he was walled into a filthy prison, and fed, through a hole, on the scantiest fare, until, with faith still unshaken, death at last relieved him of his suffering, and his body was thrown down a mountain-side among the jagged rocks.

Other converts endured similar persecution. Yet new ones appeared, until, when Eli Smith reached Beirut, in 1827, sixteen persons were numbered in the mission church, gathered from nine different communions and almost as many races. As hostility increased and reached even to the missionaries, and as the battle of Navarino made the whole land feverish and the situation dangerous, the British consulate at Beirut was closed, and it was felt necessary to suspend the mission for a while. In May, 1828, the missionaries embarked for Malta, taking with them their language teachers. How critical the situation had been appears in a remark of Mr. Goodell that during the last two years of the stay at Beirut he had seldom closed his eyes for sleep without first thinking over ways and means of escape, if his enemies should come in the night; while on his walks abroad he had been continually looking for bushes and caves where the persecuted might seek refuge in the hour of danger. For months before leaving he had many of his goods packed, ready for flight, and with money so placed that, if hurried to prison, he would not go penniless.[1]

The Printing House at Malta

The assembling of so many missionaries at Malta increased the activity of the printing establishment. Malta had been taken as the headquarters for this department of work, not of choice, but because when Rev. Daniel Temple, in 1822, brought to that part of the Mediterranean the first press and font of type ever seen there, it was judged unsafe to take them beyond the protection of the British flag. By 1826 a trained printer was in charge, with an equipment of three presses and fonts of type in seven languages, though most of the printing was done in but three, Italian, modern Greek, and Armeno-Turkish.

[1] The narrative of this mission is resumed on page 98.

The New Testament in the last-named language was soon issued under the auspices of the British and Foreign Bible Society. Within a decade the presses had turned out 350,000 volumes; in all, 21,000,000 pages of printed matter, and tracts, papers, and schoolbooks were being widely scattered through Turkey and Greece. Many of these tracts and books were translations of pious writings, reflecting the religious ideals of the time in the homeland and written without knowledge of the people among whom they were now circulated. The titles of some of these volumes seem ludicrously inappropriate. Yet it is to be recognized that, on the whole, this literature did accomplish remarkable results. It was a copy of *The Dairyman's Daughter*, a favorite devotional work of those days in America, that first roused Nicomedia to the message of the missionary and brought the religious awakening there.

While in the review of work in the Syrian Mission it could not be found that there had been a single instance of radical conversion unto God where there had been no intercourse with the missionary, but only the reading of the printed word, yet the judgment was decisive that the printing press was to be put above all other agencies as opening the eyes of the people in Turkey to evangelical Christianity. In the fields of education and reform, of social betterment and political awakening, as well as in distinctively religious culture, the work of missionary publication which began at Malta has had an immense influence in all the lands through which its output has flowed.

Transfer of the Presses

By 1833 political conditions had so improved in the Levant that the press could be brought nearer to the center of missionary operations. The Arabic equipment was then taken to Beirut, already reopened, which thereupon became the headquarters for the Syrian publications, while the Greek, Turkish, and Armenian equipment was transferred to Smyrna, where some years before (1826) the Board had located two missionaries, Rev. Elnathan

Gridley and Rev. Josiah Brewer, the former intending to work particularly for Greeks, the latter for Jews. Smyrna thus became the first established center of missionary operations strictly in Turkey, and that which had been called the Palestine Mission was now more properly named the Western Asia Mission.

The bringing of the press to Smyrna resulted in a more intense opposition to its work. Here, too, the Roman Catholics were the fiercest opponents, the Mohammedans being fairly tolerant of the press as of all efforts of the American missionaries, partly because they knew so little about America as not to feel the significance of the mission, and partly because they had so great confidence in Islam that they cared less what the missionaries might do. But at Smyrna a new source of opposition was aroused in the Armenians, who were astounded to find their former bishop, Dionysius, now an expounder of the new faith.

A lively sympathy for the Greeks in their struggle for independence had been awakened in America. In particular, the missionaries at Malta became interested in some Greek youth who took refuge there, and who were sent to America to be educated at the expense of the Board, for work among their own people. Several of the number did afterward serve the interests of missions in their own land; one of them became famous as Professor Sophocles of Harvard University. In 1830, after investigation and conference with Greek leaders by Secretary Anderson, the Board began a mission for Greeks in Athens, then just evacuated by the Turks, putting in charge of it Rev. Jonas King, who had now returned to the Levant to enter upon a remarkable career in Greece. Soon a school was started, on the Lancastrian plan, in those days so commonly used by the Board. Rev. Elias Riggs and other missionaries followed, and new stations were opened, both on the mainland and on islands of the Ægean Sea and on Cyprus.

Reaching the Greeks

But as the Greeks realized their independence they became unfriendly to missionary work, and by intrigue, slander, and even open conflict piled obstacles in the path of the missionaries. Absurd stories were circulated which roused the superstitious fear of the people. Riots began to break out, and schools had to be closed. A gradual withdrawal from stations followed, until, by 1842, Dr. King and one associate at Athens were the only remaining members of the mission to Greece. Mr. Riggs had gone to Asia Minor, where he was to be associated with such men as Temple, Schneider, Van Lennep, and Ladd in work for the Greeks in Turkey, which was vigorously pressed both at Smyrna and Broosa.[1]

Relocating Fields in Turkey, 1829

Secretary Anderson's visit in 1829 had further purpose than to locate the mission to Greece. In view of the closing of the Græco-Turkish war and the possibilities of freer and broader fields, he was to study the whole situation looking toward new locations. As a part of this inquiry, Mr. Bird explored the north coast of Africa, interrogating Jews, Moslems, Roman Catholics, and men without religious connection, with a view to possible openings at Tripoli and Tunis, but without favorable result. The outlook in Turkey, however, was found to be brighter. Mr. Bird was sent to resume the mission at Beirut and Mr. Goodell to open a station at Constantinople, while Eli Smith, with Harrison Gray Otis Dwight, who had just arrived as a new appointee, was designated to explore the eastern parts of the Turkish empire. This broadening of plan and reassignment of workers mark a new stage in the history of the Turkish missions.

The Tour of Smith and Dwight, 1830

It has been already apparent that the American Board did not plant its missions without careful investigation. An enormous amount of exploring lies back of the choice of fields and even the determining of stations. The pioneers were prospectors and faithfully scanned their territory. Yet the journey of Smith and Dwight, both in the boldness and extent of its under-

[1] The narrative of this mission is resumed on page 101.

taking and in its results, is conspicuous in the long list of the Board's explorations.

Leaving Constantinople in May, 1830, the travelers took the road in oriental fashion, with camp equipment reduced to what one packhorse could carry, a strip of carpet for a bed, a fur-lined pelisse for a wrap, a few cooking utensils, and a round mat of leather which would serve for a table when they halted and for a bag in which to carry their bread and cheese when they traveled. To escape attention, if not trouble, they wore oriental robes and turbans and enormous Tartar stockings and boots. For protection they had the needful *firmans*, passports, and letters of introduction, and their guide, a Tartar chief, signed and sealed a contract before an official by which he became responsible for their persons and property, thus making his government a sort of accident insurance company.

Their route was the customary highway from Constantinople to Persia. They passed through Tokat, where they visited Henry Martyn's grave, Erzroom, Kars, and Tiflis, rested with kindly German missionaries at Shoosha, and pushed on through Nestorian country to Tabriz, where another sojourn was necessary for Mr. Smith's recuperation from illness. From Tabriz they toured somewhat through Persia, acquainting themselves with the land, and in particular with the Nestorian people. Their return journey brought them to Constantinople after an absence of a year and a quarter, to reveal in the narrative of their trip, *Christian Researches in Armenia*, a wealth of information concerning the races, peoples, and religions of the region they had visited, so accurate and full as to be practically authoritative to-day.

Constantinople at Last

Before leaving for their long tour, Messrs. Smith and Dwight had earnestly recommended that Constantinople should be made a station of the American Board. They returned to find Mr. Goodell already established there and work among the Armenians definitely begun. So strategic is this capital for any enterprise within

the Turkish empire that it seems strange the American Board should have come to it by so roundabout a route. Then as now the great highways between East and West passed through that city. All the races and religious communities within the Turkish empire looked to their representatives in Constantinople for the protection of their rights. Moreover, the prestige of the sultan as *padishah* (father of all the sovereigns of the earth) and caliph of Islam made him a mighty figure beyond the boundaries of his empire. It was inevitable that the Board should settle at length upon Constantinople as its base for the Turkish missions.

In William Goodell the right man was found to open this important station. With breadth of vision, deep spiritual life, sympathy, courage, bubbling humor, and patient devotion, disciplined by his experience at Beirut and Malta, he was remarkably fitted for the delicate and difficult task of laying foundations at the capital. Associated with him almost from the beginning and for more than a generation were Dr. Dwight, assigned to this post upon return from his tour, and William Schauffler, whose special task was to reach the Spanish Jews who, upon their expulsion from Spain, had crowded into Constantinople more of their race than were then in any other city of the world.

At its beginning the new station suffered a baptism of fire. Within two months of Goodell's arrival, his home and all its furnishings went up in flames. Though fires were continually recurring, five threatening in a single year, other dangers even more serious were felt. In 1832 the black plague broke out, followed by cholera, with which Mr. Goodell was slightly attacked. The plague was almost constant in the city, compelling the frequent closing of schools and cutting off communication with the people; Mrs. Dwight and her child died of it in 1837. The seclusion of these times gave the missionaries opportunity to pursue their language studies and to prepare new material for publication.

Missionary work among the Armenians was begun quietly and carefully. The investigations of Smith and Dwight had shown that they were one of the great and virile races of Turkey. Industrious, temperate, thrifty, the bankers of the empire, furnishing in large measure the strength of its commercial and industrial classes, the Armenians were also a religious people, strict in the observance of the forms of their national Church. Won to Christianity in the fourth century by St. Gregory the Illuminator, the Armenians named their branch of the Church after the famous preacher. Regarding the word of Scripture with almost superstitious reverence, and in doctrine closely allied with eastern Christianity, this Gregorian Church yet separated from the Greek Church after the council of Chalcedon, whose decisions it rejected. It was estimated that 100,000 of these Armenians were then located in Constantinople.

Beginning among the Armenians

The missionaries discovered that there were already signs of an awakening in the Gregorian Church; reformers and religious enthusiasts had striven to break through its formalism. The British and Foreign Bible Society had put the Scriptures within the reach of the more educated classes in the ancient Armenian tongue, and had just brought out the New Testament in the vernacular, making it available for all to read. Dr. King's letter on leaving Syria had made a deep impression upon some prominent Armenians in Constantinople, to whom it had been sent, and, in the hope of purifying the Church, a new training-school for priests had been organized by the scholarly and devout leader, Peshtimaljian. Although he did not venture openly to ally himself with the missionaries, this remarkable man privately encouraged his pupils to come in contact with them and by all the force of his own evangelic temper sought to inspire a new type of priests for the ancient Church.

With such preparation and encouragement, the beginning of work in Constantinople was a far different matter from what

it had been in Syria. Even the Armenian patriarch, interviewed by Mr. Goodell concerning a better grade of schools, responded, with oriental courtesy, that if his visitor had not come to him, he must certainly have gone to see Mr. Goodell!

The purpose was not to proselyte the Armenians. At first, the missionaries established no schools, but sought to encourage and aid this people in starting its own schools. Likewise at first, they held no public services, conducting worship only for their families and other English-speaking Christians in the city. They attended services in both Gregorian and Greek churches, often taking part at the invitation of those in authority. Their evangelizing efforts were thus confined to such personal interviews as they might have with those who called upon them or whom they might meet as they went here and there. "We tell them frankly," said Mr. Goodell, "'You have sects enough among you already, and we have no design of setting up a new one, or of pulling down your churches, or drawing away members from them in order to build up our own.'" As helpers, never as antagonists, the missionaries of the American Board went to meet the Armenian people and their Church.

A Quick Impression

Results began to appear so early as 1833, when some earnest-minded students accepted the evangelical faith. Opposition was aroused when inquirers and visitors increased. In that year fifteen priests trained in Peshtimaljian's school were ordained in the old Church. These men had caught the new vision and went to their ministry with a new spirit. Later they cast in their lot with the Evangelicals, as those came to be called who were reading the New Testament and living by its message, in the face of ecclesiastical disapproval. Soon an Evangelical Union was organized of those who were seeking to reform the Gregorian Church and a secret correspondence was begun with men of influence throughout the empire. At this time the sole aim of the Evangelicals was to redeem their Church to a more vital religion.

The movement spread from Constantinople to other centers. Schools were established, notably one for girls at Smyrna. As new missionaries arrived, new stations were opened. Benjamin Schneider began his career at Broosa, the ancient capital of the Ottoman empire, in 1834; Trebizond was occupied on the shore of the Black Sea. By this time, too, the awakening had begun in Nicomedia, where Mr. Goodell, passing through the city a few years before, had left some tracts, among them a copy of *The Dairyman's Daughter*.

As the evangelical influence began to be felt in the land, the spirit of persecution was roused in the Gregorian Church. Sporadic cases of opposition culminated in 1839 in an outbreak of vigorous persecution. The higher clergy had become frightened. As priests they dreaded to lose any of their power over the people; as politicians they were suspicious of a movement which might disintegrate the ancient Church, now the only bond of the Armenian race. The tolerant patriarch was replaced; a list of those suspected of heresy was said to contain the names of 500 prominent persons, bishops, priests, and bankers. Arrests were made and terror spread. Repeated pronouncements by both Greek and Armenian ecclesiastics denounced the missionaries as "Satanic heresiarchs from the caverns of hell and the abyss of the northern ocean." Schools were broken up; the press was silenced; books were burned in bonfires upon city squares. A systematic effort to expel the missionaries was likely to have succeeded had not war broken out between the pasha of Egypt and the sultan, which terminated in the defeat and death of the latter, and stayed the persecution.[1]

Persecution Begins, 1839

The tour of Smith and Dwight had brought to light another people, the Nestorians of Persia and the highlands of Kurdistan. Deriving its name from a patriarch of Constantinople deposed as a heretic in the fifth century, this ancient sect of the Christian Church was at first full of missionary

[1] The narrative of this mission is resumed on page 102.

spirit; it carried the gospel not only to Persia and Assyria, but even into India and China. Conquered at length by the sword of Tamerlane, the Nestorians had been reduced in numbers and broken in spirit; still Christian in name, rejecting all images and the confessional, regarding with superstitious reverence the word of Scripture, liberal toward other sects, they had yet become formal in their religious observance and so ignorant and degraded mentally and morally that they were practically a dead church in the midst of an oppressive Mohammedanism.

The Nestorian Mission, 1834

But when the first missionaries to be sent them, Rev. and Mrs. Justin Perkins, arrived in 1833, after nearly a year's journey so arduous that they reached Tabriz more dead than alive, they received an inspiring welcome among this people. The first Nestorian with whom Mr. Perkins shook hands was the bishop, Mar Yohannan, evermore a fast friend of the mission. When the patriarch in the mountains was visited he greeted the missionaries with the words: "Thanks be to God. This is what I have been praying for." Tours of the villages were like triumphs, the Nestorians flocking out in welcome, sometimes with drums and trumpets. Nowhere else in all these lands of the Bible were the missionaries received with such simple-hearted and eager trust.

The city of Urumia, in the province and by the lake of the same name, was chosen as the first station for the Perkinses and Dr. and Mrs. Asahel Grant, who joined them the first year. Here, with the help of Nestorian priests who were ready to be associated with them, Mar Yohannan himself acting as their language teacher, they set themselves to form a written language, translate parts of the Scriptures and make the customary beginnings.

The Outlook

Dr. Grant's skill as a physician was of utmost importance in winning the favor of the people, and he was at once beset by patients of all races and religions. Many came from long distances to carry back tidings of the new arrivals. Kurdish

chiefs, princes and governors of provinces, and Persian nobles came with the humblest to kiss his feet and to seek his help.

The first attempt to bring in a printing establishment in 1837 failed because of the insurmountable difficulties of the overland route. But two years later a press so made that it could be taken to pieces and carried in parts was secured, and with the arrival of a printer, the mission was prepared to scatter its message widely and to meet the increasing attacks of the Jesuits.

The missionaries to the Nestorians had received the same instructions as did those sent to the Armenians: there was to be no attempt to proselyte, only an effort to help this enfeebled church to take once more a commanding place in the regeneration of Asia. At once native helpers became available and opportunities for reaching the people were practically unlimited. In a few years the mission was in full operation.

As the missionaries went among the villages they were appalled at the degradation of this ancient people. Their poverty made their homes little better than the abodes of beasts; indeed, their animals shared these quarters. The devotion of the missionaries was sorely tested in the necessary contact with filth and corruption. It was under the appeal of this poverty that at first all costs of the work were met by the mission, allowances even being made to scholars for support, while the native teachers were paid from the mission treasury.

The early death of Mrs. Grant, just as a good beginning had been made in her work for girls, was bitterly lamented of all. Thereafter Dr. Grant gave himself particularly to missionary exploration among the Nestorians on the west side of the Kurdish mountains, a task for which his fearlessness, tact, energy, and resourcefulness specially qualified him. So from 1839 to 1845 he was chiefly occupied near the headwaters of the Euphrates and Tigris rivers, visiting cities where afterward stations were estab-

The Mountain Nestorians

lished. With his far vision he desired to have the undertaking called by no racial name, but rather to be known as a mission to Assyria and Mesopotamia.

The stories of his tours are full of adventure and romance. Whether facing winter storms on the mountains, avoiding brigands, meeting warlike chiefs, or visiting disturbed cities across the border, this dauntless man was in almost constant danger. When he and Mr. Homes went to Mardin for refuge in the tumultuous days following the Egyptian war, they barely escaped alive, as a mob closed the city gates, only to find that they had barred out the very men they had meant to shut in for slaughter. Mr. Homes thereupon withdrew to Constantinople, but Dr. Grant declared that the voice that called his friend back seemed to cry to him, "On to the mountains!" And he went on to new experiences in those frowning fastnesses, to be welcomed by mountaineers, and received by the patriarch, Mar Shimon, and even summoned by the emir of the Hakary Kurds to attend him in illness. Conducted through dark passageways guarded by iron doors and glistening with guns, spears, and daggers, he was entirely at the mercy of this high-handed chieftain by whose orders a German missionary had lately been put to death. Undismayed, he went on; the emir recovered and ever after showed his gratitude to the fearless doctor.

Yet to the end his task was a hard and lonely one. When reenforcements were sent, either political or ecclesiastical interference barred them out. But for a long while, amid the tumult of the time, he was able to go his way, meeting all classes and races in the mountains, Nestorians, Armenians, Yezedees, and Jacobites, and trusted and welcomed of all. Single-handed he tried to hold his ground in the advancing tempest of war. At last, when the slaughter of Nestorians by the Kurds devastated the whole mountain district, Dr. Grant was compelled to flee, until, in the midst of the catastrophe, he was released from his troubles. Dr. Azariah Smith

and Mr. Laurie, prevented from joining him before, reached Mosul in time to witness his departure from this life.

The western branch of the Nestorian mission was then of necessity discontinued. If the work of Grant seemed to have little immediate accomplishment, his figure stands like that of Livingstone in Africa, a great pioneer and pathfinder, opening up to knowledge and interest, and at length to influence, an important region of human need.

Progress in Urumia

While the effort in the mountains was thus checked, the work on the plains was advancing rapidly. On a furlough which Mr. and Mrs. Perkins enjoyed in the homeland, they were accompanied, through his own determination, by Mar Yohannan, whose presence in the United States made great impression upon the friends of missions and awoke new interest in his people. The return to the field was marked by a more evident progress. So far, results had seemed few and slow in coming. In the first eight years not more than four converts had been won. Sickness, suffering, and death had sadly depleted the mission forces. The situation now, however, was ready for advance; all the machinery of mission work was in operation and a warmer type of evangelical teaching marked the life of the Nestorian churches.

The influence of Miss Fidelia Fiske, who had come from her post in Mount Holyoke to take charge of the seminary for girls at Urumia, soon to be called the Mount Holyoke of Persia, and of Mr. Stoddard, whom Mr. Perkins had seized upon as the desired helper for the boys' boarding-school, and whose presence in the churches in America has been likened to that of a flaming seraph, brought to the melting point the slowly yielding formalism of Nestorian religious life. Despite disturbance and interference from priests and politicians, and the efforts of the patriarch, who now set himself openly against the mission and its schools, soon there were seen the glad signs of religious interest. They appeared first in 1846 in the little village of Geog Tapa, which became suddenly bright

with spiritual light; then the new power was manifest in the school, whence it reached out to parents and friends of the students. The father of one of the girls, coming to visit his daughter, ridiculed the signs of religious interest, but soon himself became a Christian, and later an evangelist, traveling through the mountains, "in his huge turban, striped jacket, and Turkish trousers, with his Bible and knapsack, telling of Christ."

The effect of this revival and of another which came two years afterward was measured not only by the number of converts that could be counted, but by the changed aspect of villages on the plains and even in the mountains. From these revivals devoted and efficient Nestorian Christians arose to become remarkable preachers and witnesses for Christ. Persecution continued and even strengthened under the lead of the patriarch. At length the government interfered and, despite bitter opposition, in 1851 issued an edict of toleration, which, like that of the Turkish sultan, a year previous, gave protection alike to all Christian subjects.

The Return to Syria, 1830 (See p. 85)

After two years' sojourn in Malta the missionaries were able to return to Syria. Scarcely had they begun again at Beirut, gathering up the broken threads and finding a welcome from some faithful converts and renewed opposition from the Maronites, when an outbreak of plague and cholera, followed by the disturbance of the Egyptian war, once more interrupted the work of the mission. How bitter was the Maronite opposition appears in the formal curse which the patriarch uttered against the missionaries at this time, as he warned the people against them: "They are therefore accursed, cut off from all Christian communion; and let the curse envelop them as a robe and spread through all their members like oil, break them in pieces like a potter's vessel and wither them like the fig tree cursed by the mouth of the Lord himself; let the evil angel rule over them by day and by night, asleep and awake, and in whatever circumstances they may be found. We permit no one to visit them, or employ

them, or do them a favor, or give them a salutation, or converse with them in any form or manner, but let them be avoided as a putrid member and as hellish dragons." When the blockade of Beirut by the Anglo-French fleet began, the missionaries were again forced to flee, this time to Cyprus. The Turkish government soon being restored by the western powers, missionary work was resumed under quieter conditions.

Progress was at first very slow; it seemed that little impression had been made on the masses. Persecution from ecclesiastical leaders and political disorder in the mountains were a constant hindrance. Yet advance was made, particularly in the matter of schools. By 1835 ten schools were counted, with 300 pupils. Besides those of elementary character, there was the beginning of a boys' seminary, which later removed to Abeih. At the same time a girls' school had been opened at Beirut, the first of its kind in all Syria, where at that time it was said there was not one girl who could read.

Among the missionary reenforcements of the period were such men as Eli Smith, C. V. A. Van Dyck, William M. Thomson, and Simeon Calhoun. The securing of a new printing press, and, by the skill of Dr. Smith, the preparation of elegant fonts of type which caught the eye of Arabic scholars, marked a new stage in the publication department of this mission. And the life-long service of Drs. Smith and Van Dyck was begun in the translating and preparing of those books which were to make the Beirut mission press famous and influential through all its territory. Tours of investigation were now made in the Hauran, east of the Jordan, the message of the gospel thus being carried to new peoples, notably to the Bedouin Arabs.

The Druzes of the Lebanon

It looked for a time as if that small but powerful people of the mountains, the Druzes, Mohammedan in name, but scarcely more than pagan in fact, would come over to Christianity *en masse*. Overtures were made by them about 1835, during the disturbance of the Egyptian

war. The missionaries feeling somewhat doubtful about such wholesale proposals applied their usual cautious tests of converts. At length it appeared that the real desire of the Druzes was to escape military service on the ground of being Christians; when the sincerity of their motive was tested, their zeal for changing their religion slackened, until only one Druze could be found who, with wife and family, stood the test and was baptized into the Christian faith. While the Druzes, whom the Maronites forever prejudiced against their form of Christianity, still were inclined to ally themselves with the Protestants, the Turkish sultan marched an army into the Lebanon, with Moslem teachers and sheiks in its train, and compelled the Druzes to declare themselves unflinchingly Moslem. So all attempts to Christianize this people came for a time to an abrupt close.

Seeing Results at Last

A visit from Secretary Anderson and Dr. Hawes in 1844, in the course of their deputation tour of the Levant, brought fresh inspiration to the missionaries and set them to greater efforts for the harassed people of Syria. Increased emphasis was now put upon the organizing of groups of converts into churches, and the laying of responsibility upon them. It was resolved also that the absorbing work of school and press must not crowd out those tours which increased the acquaintance and influence of the missionaries among the outlying peoples not yet enough interested to come to them.

What brought special cheer at this time was the appearance at last of a general religious awakening. It came in the village of Hasbeiya, at the foot of Mount Hermon, a place of about 5000 inhabitants, a mixture of Druzes, Greeks, Moslems, and Jews. A company seceding from the Greek Church because of discontent with its unworthy ministry applied to the missionaries at Beirut for instruction. When the missionaries visited Hasbeiya they were amazed to find how genuine and deep was the reformation. At length, after

careful examination and training, on a Sabbath in July, 1844, sixty-eight of these people entered into solemn covenant, binding themselves with hand on the Bible to live and worship in accord with the evangelical faith. The missionaries were almost overcome with the spectacle and with all it seemed to promise. In other places, families, singly or in groups, and sometimes whole villages showed a disposition to break with the formalism of their ancient Church. Persecution, which had been sharp before, now was redoubled. At Hasbeiya some were obliged to flee for their lives; some yielded to the demands of the patriarch. But many held fast and the reformation was established.

A new war breaking out between Druzes and Maronites in 1845, the mountains were filled with bloodshed and terror. Once more the Druzes, far fewer in number, defeated their hereditary foe. The sky was cleared for the Protestants at Hasbeiya, whose persecutors were driven out. The missionaries used the opportunity of this war to render service to the combatants impartially, and won the respect and good-will of both factions. At the close of the war, work was resumed and schools strengthened at the principal stations. New stations were projected, new missionaries eagerly called for. Protestants were now better protected, and in spite of the bull of excommunication from the Greek patriarch, persecution largely subsided. In 1848 it was possible to organize the first purely native church at Beirut. Two years later, one was formed at Hasbeiya. The missionaries had begun to see the results of their labors.

Dr. King in Greece (See p. 88)

The Board's mission in Greece, after 1842, for the rest of this period, and, indeed, for the remainder of his life was limited to Dr. King's ministry in Athens. His figure, as with his devoted wife he stood alone for the evangelical faith in the proud capital of Greece, is peculiarly appealing. So able of mind that he could outstrip the Greek ecclesiastics in argument and silence them by the apt-

ness of his quotations from the Fathers, he was at the same time calm of temper to meet every threat, tactful in method to avoid trouble so far as possible, unflinching in the maintenance of his rights and patient in waiting for his opportunity. He was almost continuously assailed with charges and threats, led before the courts on one pretext or another, his case being carried from court to court, while plots of crafty ecclesiastics and the anger of sudden mobs endangered his life. Through all he was absolutely fearless, yet cautious, seeming to know just when to venture forth and when to abide in his house, when to open it for a service and when to withdraw from it into temporary hiding. After an escape from legal attack or personal violence, he would go again into the city, talking freely of religion to all whom he met, exchanging greetings even with priests on the street. With this combination of courageous defiance and conciliatory submission, he would at one time claim his rights against the governor of Attica to the same religious privileges as were enjoyed by the Roman Catholics, and at another withdraw from the country, upon a hint from the king of Greece that he could relieve the situation by "taking a journey." From such a temporary absence he had just returned (1848) as this period ends to meet new dangers and trials in the years afterward.

The Armenian Reformation, 1840–50
(See p. 93)

Upon the close of the Egyptian war, with a new sultan upon the throne and the more tolerant patriarch, Stephan, returned to office, there was for a time some respite of persecution for the Armenians. And now it became apparent how the evangelical revival had grown even through the efforts to suppress it. It was soon found that the evangelical message had been carried far into the interior, the fire of it not having been beaten out, but only scattered to ignite new places. A station was opened in 1840 at Erzroom to the east; others nearer to Constantinople were begun at Nicomedia and Adabazar. A native mission was started in the interior of

Asia Minor. Prayer meetings and preaching services for women, first held at Pera, were maintained, and lay brethren as well as missionaries were traveling here and there, preaching the gospel. It was clear to all that there was a powerful and wide evangelical awakening among the Armenian people.

Yet, through all, the work was associated with the ancient Church; the Evangelicals were still a part of it. The reform was being wrought from within. The change in the attitude of the Armenian community and the development of its spiritual life were apparent; even the *vartabeds*, the celibate preaching clergy of the Gregorian Church, were declaring the gospel message with earnestness and power. The work of the missionaries was still largely the training and encouragement of new leaders in the old Church. To this end the press was busy. Mr. Goodell's translation of the Old Testament into Armeno-Turkish and his revision of the New Testament now appeared. Armenian and Greek magazines and papers as well as books were helping to spread evangelical teaching. Theological training was begun by Mr. Dwight, and the seminary at Bebek was enlarged and broadened as to its courses.

This famous school at Bebek, above Constantinople on the European side of the Bosphorus, had been opened in 1840 by Cyrus Hamlin, who had just come to the mission, and who sought to make of it a boarding-school for boys and young men. The marvelous ability of this new missionary was shown in the energy and skill with which he built, almost out of nothing, in the face of determined opposition and under the very eyes of the Porte, this training-school of leaders for the new era. The story of how he planned the school, overcame difficulties, readjusted it to changed circumstances, and through it brought a host of things to pass, reads like a romance. His most famous activities fall in the next period, but in the years of beginning Hamlin showed those qualities which made him the terror of the evasive Turk, the idol of the people whom

he served, and the admiration even of his more conservative colleagues.

The mission to the Armenians was now thoroughly organized and at work. A long conference was had with Secretary Anderson and Dr. Hawes on their deputation visit, in which it was determined that the Greek department should be discontinued, and that henceforth the work for Greeks should be separated from that for Armenians, the latter to be strengthened and developed in all possible ways.

Tested by Fire, 1844

A fresh campaign of persecution for the Armenians began in the autumn of 1844 with the appointment of a new patriarch, Matteos. The surprise and distress of this onslaught were the greater in that, following upon some outrageous executions by Turkish officials in 1843, the European powers, under the lead of the British ambassador, Sir Stratford Canning, whose service to the cause of religious liberty and of Turkish missions through all these dark years makes his name forever honored, extorted a written pledge from the sultan that henceforth no person should be executed in Turkey because of his religious opinions. Hailed at the time as a real charter of religious liberty, and with its issuance regarded almost as a miracle, this pledge was found to have but little immediate effect, being followed at first by increased persecution.

The new patriarch had once himself leaned toward the Evangelicals. Now his office turned him the other way, and in the reaction he used all his ingenuity to destroy them. Armenians in business found their shops boycotted; teachers and priests were banished; men and women were stoned on the streets, hung up by the thumbs, spat upon and smitten in the face, tortured with the bastinado, thrown into prison without open charge or trial. Spies were everywhere. Even at the interior stations the strong arm of the oppressor was felt. Many recanted or fell back into secret discipleship. Others grew the bolder and developed in Christian character.

A noble witness was borne by many; in some quarters the gospel never made so much progress as during the period of these outrages. The touring missionaries met inquirers everywhere.

Finding that all his efforts to suppress the reformation were futile, and that it was even spreading under his eyes, the patriarch resorted at last to the ban of excommunication. Twice during 1846, in the patriarchal church in Constantinople, with the house darkened and veil drawn in front of the altar, a bull of excommunication was read against the Evangelicals, and every vile and cruel epithet heaped upon them. This edict, it was ordered, should be read annually in all the Armenian churches throughout the empire.

Excommunication at Last

Cast out from their ecclesiastical organization and thus also deprived of their political rights, the wretched people were without any protection, until, upon the protest of the great powers, the grand vizier himself came to their relief. The officer appointed to safeguard them, when they appeared before him, refused to receive them simply as Armenians; they could no longer claim either the religious or political rights of that community. It was "Protestants" whose shops he was to protect. So the name which they never had taken was given to them and became henceforth their official designation. The Church which drove them out made them a separate people and styled them Protestants.

There was no recourse now but to organize a new church, and these excommunicated Christians at once applied to the missionaries for help. After careful consultation a plan was drawn up for the organization of the First Evangelical Armenian Church in Constantinople, and on the first day of July, 1846, that church was publicly recognized. Its Armenian members, thirty-seven men and three women, rising to declare their assent to the plan, confession, covenant, and rules, the missionaries and

First Protestant Church Organized, 1846

other friends then rose, as representatives of Protestant evangelical churches, and publicly acknowledged them as a true church of Jesus Christ. Churches on the same broad basis of evangelical Christianity, without denominational bonds, were soon formed at Nicomedia, Adabazar, and Trebizond. These churches then organized themselves into evangelical associations or unions, which directed the affairs of the churches, even ordaining ministers and preachers, and in which the missionaries themselves had no vote.

Spread of Evangelicalism

Now that the movement was open and recognized, it advanced yet faster. The seminary at Bebek developed into a theological school; a boarding-school for young women, opened at Pera in 1845, began to send out its trained graduates for various forms of service. By 1848 a thousand Armenians had separated from the old Church; thousands more were friendly to the new movement. Work had been begun in such far places as Aintab, Aleppo, and Arabkir. In many centers the most alert and enlightened of the community were waiting to hear more of the gospel and its message of spiritual freedom.

Persecution did not cease at once upon the separation of the Evangelicals. Indeed, conditions were almost insupportable when, in 1847, the grand vizier, by renewed pressure, issued a *firman* acknowledging the new Protestant community, and according to it all the rights of other communities in the empire. These rights were strengthened and given authority in 1850, when the sultan himself granted a new charter to the Protestants, recognizing and confirming all that had been done before. They were now able to choose their own political head to represent them at the Porte, to manage their affairs, and to conduct their rites of worship under imperial protection.

Looking Backward

To the founders of the Turkish Mission it must often have seemed that progress was pitifully slow. Yet those who looked back after one generation had reason to marvel and to give praise at what had

MIRON WINSLOW
Ceylon, 1820
Madras, 1836–1864

ELIAS RIGGS
Greece, 1833–1838
Turkey, 1838–1901

WILLIAM GOODELL
Turkey, 1823–1865

FIDELIA FISKE
Persia, 1843–1858

ALDIN GROUT
South Africa,
1835–1870

JUSTIN PERKINS
Persia, 1834–1869

PETER PARKER
China, 1834–1857

REPRESENTATIVE MISSIONARIES (Earlier)

been already accomplished. For by this time there were five missions established, two of them reaching far into the interior and dealing with races almost unknown at the beginning. Eleven stations were occupied, with sixty-four missionaries, counting both men and women, and with more than thirty native helpers. There were churches of native disciples in all these missions; schools of higher and lower grade, whose graduates were going forth all through the land; busy presses were sending forth a varied literature, and nearly every race and religion in this composite empire had come in contact with the new teaching. Turkey was fairly astir with the influence of the missionaries.

And what men they were! Of the Turkish Mission, as of the founders of all the early missions of the Board, it is to be said that there were giants in those days. It was with the missionaries to Turkey and, in particular, the group at Constantinople in mind, that the Earl of Shaftesbury later said: "I do not believe in the history of diplomacy, or in the history of any negotiations carried on between man and man, we can find anything equal to the wisdom, the soundness, and the pure evangelical truth of the body of men who constitute this mission."

Chapter VI

EDGING INTO CHINA

Robert Morrison summoned the American Board to China in 1828. His appeal was backed by Americans engaged in the Canton trade, who laid special emphasis upon the number of English-speaking merchants and seamen that might be reached in the ports. The open preaching of the gospel was forbidden, but it was thought that much could be done through private conversation and the distribution of books.

The Call, 1828

This call came to the Board at a favorable time. The missions already undertaken were now fairly under way and encouraged new ventures. And China was an appealing land. Her huge size, the uncounted multitudes of her people, the antiquity of her civilization, her need of an uplifting religion, all challenged the eager spirit of Christian conquest. The very failure of earlier missionary efforts, of the Nestorian Church in the sixth century, and of the Jesuits following Xavier in the sixteenth, prompted a new attempt, as China was beginning to open a little to western influences, to sow the seeds of divine truth in this stubborn soil.

When, in 1829, a Canton merchant offered to provide passage for a missionary and to support him for a year, the Board determined to start its enterprise in China. The two pioneers were Rev. Elijah C. Bridgman and Rev. David Abeel, the latter appointed by the American Seaman's Friend Society, but soon after his arrival in China becoming a missionary of the Board, in whose service the rest of his years were spent. The newcomers joined Dr. Morrison at Canton in February, 1830. Abeel at once took

Mission Begun, 1830

up his task for the sailors and Bridgman set himself to acquire the language.

The Opening of Work

It was recognized that the Chinese were a reading people and much influenced by books. One of the first efforts of the missionaries, therefore, was to prepare books in Chinese and to distribute them among the people. In this mission the school was the slowest to develop and the last agency to come to importance. The Chinese were too well satisfied with their own classics to have any respect for the learning of other lands. And as official place and honors were secured through their national system of examinations, they were slow to send their children to mission schools. But everywhere the missionaries went on their tours they found a ready call for books and tracts. The gift of a printing outfit, called the Bruin Press, in memory of the pastor of the Bleeker Street Church, New York, equipped the mission to meet this need, while the arrival of S. Wells Williams, two years later, furnished an exceptionally qualified printer and author.

The avidity of the Chinese to get missionary publications did not necessarily indicate deep interest in their contents. Mr. Williams, at the close of the first decade, found no proof that the thousands of books scattered among the Chinese people had interested one mind to inquire carefully concerning their contents. A publication that did prove effective was the *Chinese Repository*, a monthly begun with the start of the mission, under Dr. Bridgman's editorship, and designed to spread information about China among present and prospective supporters of the mission.

The Medical Arm, 1834

Another feature of the Board's opening work in China was its quick use of the medical agency. Dr. Peter Parker, coming out in 1834, was the first distinctively medical missionary ever sent to the field by any American or English-speaking society. The influence of his hospital in winning attention and good-will was of large importance. Within the first five years it was estimated that from

20,000 to 30,000 people entered its doors, 6000 of them patients. Often patients came from places distant 400 or 500 miles, many of them being persons of rank and influence, so that the good name of the hospital and its missionary was spread over a wide region. By keeping a few Chinese pupils always under his care, Dr. Parker made the hospital practically a medical training-school, from which men went forth to imitate his methods and to repeat his teaching wherever they located. So far did his influence go toward breaking down prejudice and gaining attention that there was as much truth as wit in the current epigram that he "opened China to the missionaries at the point of a lancet."

Among the helpful influences in the day of beginnings was the support of such organizations as the British and Foreign Bible Society, the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge, and locally, the Morrison Education Society, formed at Canton by merchants friendly to the spread of Christianity.

A Dark Prospect

Despite all this activity, it was hard to see that any progress was being made. After three years, Bridgman wrote home: "Were it not for the exceeding great and precious promises, my heart would fail me — the work is so great, so vast, and the laborers so few and feeble. We are as nothing. I am not discouraged, my brother; I am not disheartened; but I am often, as now, sad. To see so much to be done and so little doing makes my heart ache. The prospect all around is very dark."

The truth is that in the '30s China was not really open to foreign influence, even in her port cities. Nothing could be done publicly or as recognized missionary work. Though the common people were interested, or at least curious, the government was very jealous of foreigners, and ready often to issue imperial edicts against them. They could not reside on Chinese territory, or establish Christian schools, or, in the interior, even distribute tracts. The Hong merchants, or guild of native magnates at Canton, who held the right to deal with foreign

traders, were the willing tool of the East India Company when it opposed missionaries in China as it had done in India.

In the summer of 1834 political disturbances growing out of the opium controversy drove Mr. Bridgman from Canton, scattered his class of seven promising boys, stopped the work of the press through the imprisonment of the native printers, and compelled a temporary change of base to Macao, the printing establishment at the same time being transferred to Singapore, then a promising center for several missionary societies. Macao furnished a safe retreat where Christian work could be done quietly, especially by visiting the Chinese boats. It was also a convenient depot from which publications could be poured into China as fast as they could be printed.

During this time of partial interruption and waiting several voyages of missionary exploration were undertaken. Under the lead of Mr. Gutzlaff, an intrepid pioneer of a German society, Mr. Stevens and others made a voyage up the Min River in 1836 to visit the tea plantations of Fuhkien. After proceeding for some time without molestation they were fired upon by soldiers and obliged to retreat.

Tours of Exploration, 1836

Another important voyage took Mr. Stevens and a representative of the London Missionary Society as far as Shantung. A cargo of about 20,000 volumes of religious books and tracts was distributed by these missionaries, who, spending their nights on the boat, by day ventured far ashore, with no guides and entirely unarmed. This was the first missionary excursion ever made along the Chinese coast in a vessel which did not carry opium, and the expense of the uncommercial venture was shared by a business house in Canton, the London Missionary Society, and the British and Foreign Bible Society.

A third voyage of inquiry was undertaken to Yedo, as the capital of Japan was then called. Its ostensible purpose was to

return some shipwrecked Japanese sailors; its real object was to discover whether it would be possible to undertake missionary work in that empire. In this party were Dr. Parker and Mr. Williams as well as the explorer Gutzlaff. Being neither warship nor trading vessel, this craft was no sooner seen in the bay of Yedo than she was cannonaded and forced to put to sea. At a more southern port, where no European vessel had ever been seen, there was a friendly welcome at first, but after a few days here also the visitor was fired upon. It is not to be forgotten, however, that one of the earliest visits of a foreign vessel to the ports of Japan was made through the bounty of Christian merchants and the courage of Christian missionaries seeking an entrance for the gospel of Christ.

The Missionaries' Patience

Notwithstanding the barriers in their way, the missionaries kept bravely to their task, and rejoiced over such encouragements as they could find: a few Chinese were clearing their houses of idols; street chapels, ever one of the distinguishing features of evangelistic work in China, were now being used with effect; Dr. Parker's medical ministry was winning increasing favor.

Instead of berating the people who treated them so coldly and remained so immovable to their appeals, the missionaries were inclined rather to extenuate their hostile attitude. The friends at home should realize how the Chinese had been trained to look upon all foreigners as barbarians and upon themselves as infinitely superior to other peoples in knowledge and ability. How would an American Christian feel if a despised native of the South Seas should confront him with the assertion that his religion was vain, his prophets impostors, and his hopes without foundation? The Chinaman's immemorial scorn of the foreigner must be overcome before his heart could be won to the foreigner's faith.

So these patient men set themselves to go about quietly in shops and market-places, along the roadways and in the fields,

to enter into conversation with whoever would listen, take advantage of such curiosity about western manners as might form an introduction, turn the talk if possible to the modes and objects of worship, and then declare the principles and precepts of Christianity, going over and over them as opportunity served. "We must know the people," again they say, "and they us. There must be mutual respect, esteem, regard, and even love. Notwithstanding all their vices, we must love them — yes, even love them, while we abhor their evil practises."

The Opium War, 1840

In 1840 a war broke out in China which for a time practically stopped missionary operations there. It had been long impending. The damage which opium was doing to China was too evident and too serious to be allowed without a struggle. The ravage of the drug was to be seen in the countless sallow faces and emaciated forms, in the increasing poverty of multitudes of families, and in the dulled mind and deadened heart of this nation of opium smokers.

The Chinese government, realizing the danger, was striving in its clumsy and ineffective way to stop the importation of the drug, while the profits of the shameful traffic which the East India Company had promoted led England to enforce its continuance. The missionaries held their ground during the war as best they could, Dr. Parker taking the opportunity to visit England and America in the interests of the Medical Missionary Society which had been formed at Macao. When at length the English had penetrated into the very heart of the empire and invested the ancient capital at Nanking, a new treaty was signed there in August, 1842, which forced China to allow the further debauching of her people.

The one bright feature for the missionaries in the new adjustments was that five principal ports were now opened to the world, Canton, Amoy, Foochow, Ningpo, and Shanghai. Hong Kong was ceded to Great Britain. China's exclusive-

ness and self-confidence received a jolt; both commerce and missions were now to have a freer hand. At once the matter of enlargement was taken up and the missionaries who had been working at long range in the outposts and islands of the far East found that at last the hour had come when they might press into China.[1]

The American Board had made several efforts to secure a foothold on the outskirts of China. In 1831 Mr. Abeel visited Java, stopping at Batavia for the study of the Fuhkien dialect of the Chinese language, the form most used in the Indian Archipelago and Siam. The indefatigable Gutzlaff had crossed to Bangkok from Singapore in 1828, and had sent an earnest appeal to America to occupy that field. Abeel went over to join him with a view to starting a mission, but his stay was short. A little later the American Board sent four more missionaries to Siam, including Dr. D. E. Bradley and Rev. Jesse Caswell. Dr. Bradley brought a press and type from Singapore and work was now pushed. It seemed at first that a great impression was being made; the missionaries were visited by all races and classes, and the demand for books by Siamese, Chinese, Burmans, and Malays constantly increased. The Prudential Committee was so much encouraged that they determined to send reenforcements to this field. The claim of the whole far East was now deeply felt.

Siam, 1831

The situation in Siam was a new one for the Board's missionaries. The lands so far entered had been either without any strongly organized religion or they had been so restrained by foreign powers as not to feel free in persecuting missionaries. But in Siam they dealt with an independent government whose rule was bound up with a state religion, and that one of the most complex in the non-Christian world. Buddhism confronted Christianity here with a priesthood, proud, intolerant, and crafty.

[1] The narrative of this mission is resumed on page 119.

The government located the missionaries in Bangkok; they must not go outside it among the country people. Thus they were shut off from the Laos country on the north, which has since proved a most responsive and encouraging field. At the time the missionaries did not greatly mind the restriction. For the Siamese came to visit Bangkok much as the Jews used to go up to Jerusalem for worship. So if the gospel could not be carried to them, they came within the hearing of it. The islanders showed themselves a mild people, not stupid, but slow to accept new ways. A large proportion of the population was Chinese, and missionary work was divided between the two races.

Located and at Work

Here, as in China, efforts to found schools met with small success; the Siamese especially cared little for them, for the reason that the Siamese government gave its young men free instruction in connection with the *wats* or temples. As boats came to the harbor of Bangkok from every quarter of the kingdom, a way was found through them to scatter the gospel message widely.

Dr. Bradley's medical skill soon gave him access to the royal circle. What made him famous was his fight against smallpox. Though recognizing the hazard of it, Dr. Bradley undertook to stay the disease by inoculation. The attempt was successful and saved thousands of lives. When practised upon the royal family the king approved the treatment and sent the royal physicians to be trained by Dr. Bradley. So marked was the favor of the court toward the missionaries that it seemed almost as if the king would recognize their religion as better than his own.

Winning Royal Favor

At the same time Mr. Caswell was making a friend of the heir apparent, who was being trained as a Buddhist priest. Becoming his tutor, Mr. Caswell so influenced him that when he came to the throne he showed still greater friendliness toward missionaries and toward western civilization. It was due to the influence of these missionary pioneers upon the

royal house of Siam that its rule has been notably just and public-spirited for an oriental court.

Transfer of the Mission, 1850

The direct results of mission work were nevertheless few and not encouraging. The number of converts was very small; schools did not grow; the demand for books and tracts slackened. After a dozen years there was only one Siamese member of the church, and he was suspended for a time; of the three Chinese members, one had gone to China, one had been made an assistant to the mission, and of the third it had to be said "he does not run well." The royal favor was lost for a while to the mission, apparently under the influence of Buddhist priests.

When the close of the Opium War gave freer access to China, it seemed better to transfer the work for the Chinese to their own country, and after the missionaries who were laboring for them had withdrawn, it became more and more evident how little grip had been secured on the Siamese. At this time, too, there came disagreement among the members of the mission over theological questions, Messrs. Bradley and Caswell adopting extreme "holiness" or "sinless perfection" views.

In view of all these adversities and the appeal for enlarging work in China, the Board in 1850 transferred its Siam Mission to the American Missionary Association, then undertaking some foreign fields of missionary work, and disposed to take up this enterprise, at the same time accepting the two missionaries whose views had led to their withdrawal from the Board.

Exploring the East Indies, 1833–34

Following up Abeel's favorable impression of Java as a mission field, the Board projected another of its extensive and systematic tours of exploration. Messrs. Munson and Lyman, sent out in 1832 to Java, were instructed to inquire and report concerning any advantageous points for beginning work, not only in Java, but in other islands of the Indian Archipelago. It was understood that throughout this group the shores were occupied by the Malay

race; the interior of the islands was said to be peopled by men radically different from the Malays, and whose languages, characters, and conditions had yet to be learned. Concerning these unknown peoples and the missionary opportunity among them these explorers were in particular to make report.

Upon arrival at Batavia, in the fall of 1833, the missionaries settled down to prepare for their tour, Munson taking up the study of Chinese and Lyman that of the Malay language. Early in the next year permission was granted them by the Netherlands India government to visit parts of Sumatra and Borneo for missionary purposes. Landing on the western coast of Sumatra, they spent several weeks in visiting the principal towns and outlying islands, feeling their way along with due regard for safety and opportunity.

The Tour of Sumatra, 1834

At last they felt themselves ready for their journey into the interior, to the wild Batak country. Pushing along through the tropical jungle, they advanced without incident for several days, until, unsuspecting any trouble, as they came to the small village of Lobu Pining, they were set upon by some of its warriors and struck down. One of the missionaries was not instantly killed, and the people marked how he knelt in prayer until the second stroke silenced his lips forever. The exceeding pity of the event was that it came through a misunderstanding, the ignorant islanders associating these white men with some who had visited them before, and who, they thought, were responsible for a subsequent invasion of their land.

When they had once struck, the Bataks carried the deed through to the horrible end, though the women, who had begged that the visitors' lives be spared, refused to cook the cannibal feast. The bones were at last consigned to a hole where refuse was thrown, and which was marked with three sticks. One of these sticks happened to be a green twig, which took root and grew until it now covers the memorial stone which marks

the martyrs' grave. Although these two white men were never able to utter a word of the gospel to the Bataks in that savage day, they are regarded by the tens of thousands of Christian Bataks now as the real founders of Christianity in their land.

A Try at Borneo

In 1836 another group of missionaries arrived in Java, hoping to carry out the judgment of Abeel by founding a mission there. The government delayed answering their request so that they could not even explore the island. The financial panic of 1837, which hurt so many mission fields, withheld their reenforcements. A second attempt to enter Sumatra, while awaiting permission to locate in Java, was foiled by a war in the Batak country.

At last the Netherlands India government announced that the missionaries might settle in Borneo, but nowhere else within its jurisdiction. The delay and opposition were very disquieting both to the missionaries and to the Board. It had not been in their thought to locate in Borneo, as other lands were believed to be more promising, but since this was the only door open the missionaries entered in without faltering.

Borneo Mission under Way, 1838

A hurried tour across Borneo from north to south revealed the task ahead. Clearly it was to be a difficult field. No less than four languages would have to be acquired before this people could be reached and only one had been reduced to writing; the population was scattered; the blight of Mohammedanism was over a part of the field; the Dyaks of the interior, though a better race than the Malays, were nothing more than savages, friendly when in peace, but bloodthirsty and barbarous when at war. Six men seemed an insignificant force to meet such obstacles.

With fine courage the missionaries settled to their task on as hard a field as was anywhere to be found. By their persistence some results were accomplished, but very slowly and

with utmost difficulty. When the government restrictions became severer, to the point of endangering the life of the mission, and protests were unavailing, the missionaries were inclined to leave the coast and go to the Dyaks in the interior. Those who had been laboring especially for the Chinese in the island took advantage of the opening of the Chinese ports after the Opium War to transfer their work to that empire.

Despite all that could be done, the Borneo Mission seemed to lose ground. The opposition of the Malays increased; the Dyaks were indifferent; the field was felt to be a valley of dry bones. Yet the loyal missionaries were not disposed to withdraw. They appealed to their brethren of the Dutch Reformed Church, which portion of the Board's constituency was especially providing for this field, to send reenforcements. But no helpers came. Efforts were made to get men from Switzerland and The Netherlands, but in vain. At last the mission fairly died out for lack of missionaries.

This was a disappointing and humbling experience; but as it had not been originally intended to enter Borneo, and as every effort had been made to develop the mission there, the Board felt justified in turning to more promising fields, leaving the evangelization of this island to whoever might take it up or to the opportunity of a later time.

Enlargement in China (See p. 114)

At once, upon the opening of Chinese ports to foreign residents, the Board reached out to get a stronger hold upon the empire. The very year of the new treaty (1842) Dr. Abeel, accompanied by missionaries of the American Episcopal Church, made a trip up the coast to Amoy, to see if there was an opening there. A like visit was made by Mr. Williams to Hong Kong, the latter place, which as a result of the war had leaped from a barren island to a substantial city under British rule, being occupied for a time as a station. But experience proving that it was better to be on the mainland and nearer the native life, the

missionaries returned to Canton in the summer of 1845. Dr. Abeel's visit to Amoy resulted in his settlement there, where Messrs. Doty and Pohlman, coming over from Borneo, were in time to relieve him, when by failing health he was obliged to return to the United States.

The work of a busy and effective mission now developed. The daily round of the missionaries included an hour of study with a teacher, an hour of meeting with other missionaries and native teachers for translation in the revising of the Chinese New Testament, an afternoon largely devoted to study, closing with public worship, and followed by a little rest and outdoor exercise, often taking the form of a walk through the crowded streets where there were always hundreds ready to listen, the day ending with a long evening of writing or reading, or perhaps with a service of prayer.

Meetings for women soon began to be possible, and the opportunity for women missionaries was evident. Street chapels increased in number and attractiveness to the people. By 1848 a church building was erected, and in 1850 a church was organized, a mother and two sons being baptized and admitted to membership. Their cases had been carefully watched for more than two years, and the day of their ingathering was a red-letter day for the mission. The brethren of the London Missionary Society omitted their service to join in the celebration. Other members were soon added to this infant church.

The mission was eager to extend its work to other ports now open, and, while expecting to continue at Canton and Hong Kong, was looking eagerly to the north. On New Year's Day, 1847, Stephen Johnson arrived at Foochow, whither he had been deputed with Lyman D. Peet to open a new station. Temporary homes were secured in the suburbs, from which the city could be reached and worked. By 1850 there were six missionaries in residence here, and the school, publication, and preaching departments were all under way.

The patient labor of the missionaries was beginning to tell in the winning of respect and influence, not only among the common people, but with officials. The five high mandarins of Amoy invited the missionaries to a feast; the viceroy of the district, on his triennial visit to the city, took occasion to show them public tokens of regard; when the Americans went abroad they were uniformly treated with deference.

Growing Prestige

Mr. Bridgman's labors as interpreter for Commodore Kerney at Canton in negotiating the treaty of 1842, and Dr. Parker's distinguished service as secretary of the United States Legation, after resigning from the Board to accept that post in 1847, are but more conspicuous examples of the important aid which early missionaries in China rendered in bringing the empire into touch with the western world. The appearance in 1848 of S. Wells Williams' *The Middle Kingdom* not only increased knowledge and interest in China, but incidentally added to the reputation of the Board's workers there.

By this time (1846) the standing and privileges of missionaries in the empire had been greatly increased. Three successive treaties had each been of advantage: one with England had secured the opening of the five ports; one with America had added rights and privileges, not only for all its merchants, but for all its citizens in these ports, so extending those rights as to include the founding of institutions for larger missionary work; a third treaty with France added the rights to all nations to establish schools and colleges, to buy and sell foreign as well as Chinese books, and to teach foreign as well as Chinese languages. The way seemed now to be opened legally for the free declaring of the Word of God.

Yet Slow Progress

Notwithstanding this enlargement of missionary work and the freer chance, the results were still meager and slow. It was hard to get the people to comprehend new ideas even when they seemed to understand the words. The upper and even the middle classes were incased in their

national pride; at first, only the very poorest could be reached.

And hostility was rife. In 1846, as Dr. Bridgman was distributing books in the doorway of a street chapel in Canton, a tract was set on fire and hurled in his face; a second attempt was made to burn a quantity of books by the door, but the coolness and courage of the missionary prevailed and the crowd retreated at length, leaving him master of the situation. There was a good deal of turbulence in those days when treaties were being forced. Foreigners were often assaulted, but no real injury was sustained.

At best the missionaries were not able to make such impression as they wished. It was difficult for them to appreciate the native mind; their crude and inelegant speech, from the standpoint of Chinese oratory, impeded their message. There was desperate need of a native agency, which so far was not available. People were little inclined to put their children in schools conducted by foreign teachers. Dr. Ball had gathered a few scholars into a school in Canton, but it seemed impossible to start a seminary for training native workers, and even in 1850 there was no material for forming a church there. The moral condition of the people was appallingly low; robbers, pirates, and murderers were plentiful, even in Canton, and jails were glutted. The inhumanity of the people was most discouraging; they seemed almost insensible to the wrongs and sufferings that prevailed.

As we look back to-day, the situation at the close of that first period seems dark and discouraging. China was still practically closed to the gospel. It was a period of drilling the rock. Yet to those on the ground, whose memory traversed the period, it seemed that much had been gained. Bridgman's words in 1850 express what was in the minds of all: "When the beloved Abeel and myself arrived here, there was, in all this wide field, only one Protestant missionary, and only limited access to the people at one port. To propagate Chris-

tianity, on the part of the foreigner, and to embrace and practise it, on the part of the native, was then alike, in either case, a capital crime. In these twenty years what changes have we seen! Morrison and Abeel have gone to their rest, and many others who came subsequently to China are also gone; yet nearly a hundred laborers, men and women, preachers and teachers of Jehovah's blessed gospel, are now in the field; and we have free access to millions of the people. The first fruits of a great and glorious harvest begin to appear."

Chapter VII

ATTEMPTING AFRICA

Africa is yet called the dark continent; a century ago it was black as midnight. Save on a narrow fringe of coast there was no pretense of civilization. Inland stalked wild beasts and naked savages. Its shores were fever-laden; its ports cities of shame, where traders debauched the native to yet lower depths of brutality. To the traveler, Africa was an unknown land; for missionary residence it had a dismal and dangerous look. Yet work for Africa was projected in America long before the days of the American Board. So early as 1773 Rev. Samuel Hopkins, minister of an influential church in Newport, then a center of the slave-trade, with his neighbor, Rev. Ezra Stiles, afterward president of Yale College, secured funds and organized a society to educate negroes for missionary work in the homeland of their race. The outbreak of the Revolutionary War put a stop to this undertaking. But Africa was upon the heart of the men of the Haystack, and it was on returning from a tour of missionary exploration of that continent that Samuel Mills met his death.

A Forbidding Land

At its annual meeting of 1825 the American Board voted to establish a mission in Africa as soon as the Prudential Committee could find a way. Inquiries were thereupon made as to the possibilities on the northern, western, and eastern coasts; but it was not until 1833 that a decisive step was taken toward entering the continent. Then John Leighton Wilson and a college classmate, Stephen R. Wyncoop, joining a company of emigrants going out under

The First Move

the Colonization Society of Maryland, undertook a tour of investigation.

Touching at Monrovia, the explorers proceeded along the coast for 300 miles to Cape Palmas, a headland on the Guinea coast, which they fixed upon as most favorable for the establishment of a mission, the cape marking the dividing point between the windward and leeward coasts, both of which might easily be reached from this base. It was also considered that such proximity to the new colony would be of advantage.

The natives here were found at the lowest grade of superstition, and those in the interior beyond the thick forests were said to be of the same character; their religion was so vague and undeveloped it seemed as if it could not be hard to displace. Mohammedanism, in the persons of the schoolmaster and the warrior, was advancing rapidly from the north. It was time for Christianity to preempt the ground. There appeared to be a general desire for schools, and a good location was generously offered by the agent of the colony. The spies brought back a favorable report.

When Mr. Wilson returned to Cape Palmas with his wife, near the close of 1834, they were met with a hearty welcome.

Staking out the Field

The framed house brought out the year before had been put up and made ready, and the colonists were friendly and helpful. The natives, too, were gleeful over their arrival, though it was recognized that they had so little conception of what the mission was for that their enthusiasm did not count for much.

The missionaries settled resolutely to their task. Their purpose was not to develop one large station at Cape Palmas; rather to make it a base from which to extend a line of stations inland. From the first, the Board's thought had turned toward the vast interior of the continent, the plan being to advance from the Gold Coast to the country of the Ashantees, believed to be the greatest of the West African peoples, and, when the

Niger should be opened, to press on toward those unknown but rumored highlands of Central Africa. The vision before the eyes of the founders was as magnificent as the language in which they phrased it: a chain of missions, planted by both American and European societies, with such wise cooperation that at length from the east and the west, from the north and the south, their representatives should meet "upon some central mountain to celebrate in lofty praise Africa's redemption."

In carrying out this ambitious plan it was expected that much dependence must be put upon pious natives and colonists, so that a training-school seemed of immediate importance to prepare teachers and catechists for the advance. A boarding-school, therefore, was begun at once at Cape Palmas, with fifteen boys and four girls as pupils, and more applying than could be received. An elementary school was also begun by Mr. Wilson, in anticipation of the time when it could be turned over to native teachers. As soon as knowledge of the language permitted, a schoolbook was prepared and preaching started. Soon a mission church was organized, to which new members were gradually added, eight being received during the third year of the mission.

At length reenforcements made possible a second station, ten miles away, and provided a printer. Day and evening schools were now in operation, and the boarding-school had fifty pupils. Prejudice against the training of girls was subsiding. A few Christian homes appeared with the marriage of those who had been associated in the schools. Encouraging inroads were made on the gross superstition of the people, and the influence of fetish men was plainly diminishing. It being the general belief that if they fell or were thrown into sea water, they would lose their satanic power, the people at one of the outstations, with shouting and general rejoicing, cast eight of them into the surf, threatening others with similar treatment if their actions did not suit the crowd. Unhappily, it could

not be said that "pure religion and undefiled" was taking the place of these abandoned superstitions.

Careful tours were now undertaken along both the Gold and the Ivory Coasts and into the interior, inviting fields being discovered in all directions, if only there were laborers to occupy them. The appeal for reenforcements grew intenser, and the temper of the Board toward this mission became so enthusiastic that while call was made only for seven or eight workers, it was declared there were locations for a hundred and that Central Africa, if vigorously approached, would be found open to Christianity.

A Disappointed Hope

But no such number of new missionaries could be secured, and of those that did come, almost all were stricken with sickness, several unto death. The menace of the malarial climate depressed even these devoted men and women, and as it fell out, if there had been more volunteers, they would hardly have been sent. For that commercial panic of 1837 which wrought havoc on all the Board's fields was particularly disastrous in the Cape Palmas Mission. It became necessary to close schools and dismiss teachers, one-half of the boarding scholars in the seminary being sent away.

Here, as in Ceylon, the effect of this action upon the natives was altogether harmful. In their ignorance they could not understand the reason for the mission's financial embarrassment and misinterpreted it. It was rumored that the missionaries had been discredited at home and that they were to be recalled. To avoid being caught in the impending disgrace, parents withdrew their children from those schools that were still open. This retrenchment came, too, at a time when the first interest in the mission was waning and the natives were showing signs of reaction against its serious purpose. Thus the attendance fell off at preaching services, the activity of press and school lessened, and the entire work of the mission seriously lagged. To make matters worse, troubles arose

with the adjacent colony; there were frequent collisions between natives and colonists, and the latter began to show some jealousy of the missionaries.

In view of all these hindrances, and because it had never been intended to make Cape Palmas the chief location of the mission or to remain permanently at the coast, it was decided to seek a better position from which to start that line of missions with which the continent was to be girdled. After a voyage of discovery, the new station was planted on the nearer side of the Gaboon River, twenty miles north of the equator. Two of the Cape Palmas stations were now transferred to American Episcopal missionaries, and the Board's force, including several native members of the Cape Palmas church, removed to the new location.

Opening the Gaboon Mission, 1843

Work was here begun under more favorable auspices. Two stations were located, with the approval of King Glass, the main one at his town eight miles from the mouth of the river. Though this region seemed not so densely populated as that of Cape Palmas, the Mpongwe people, who dwelt here, appeared more advanced in civilization than any others so far found on the western coast of Africa. Their language was surprisingly perfect, far pleasanter to the ear and more facile for use than the rougher tongue of the people to the north. With slight differences in dialect, it was found usable along two hundred miles of seacoast.

Schools were opened at once with a good number of pupils, the king himself offering one of his own houses for a building. Soon there were boarding-schools both for girls and boys, and five other schools by day and night were teaching the scholars who came eagerly to them. A church was organized within a year by Christian natives who had come from Cape Palmas, and by the next year there were nineteen native members and there had been one Christian marriage. The printing press was at work preparing text-books, hymn books, and cate-

chisms, and such volumes for religious culture as are indicated by the titles, *Joseph and his Brethren* and *The Broad and Narrow Way.*

The Gaboon River was open for navigation for thirty miles from its mouth. The banks were high, the water excellent, and trade considerable. The missionaries were eager to press on to the regions beyond. A tour by Mr. Wilson for more than seventy miles from the coast brought valuable information as to the character of the inland people, in particular of the Pangwes, who were now pushing toward the coast, to the alarm of the maritime tribes. Mr. Wilson was much impressed with the appearance of these people, the noblest race of savages he had seen in Africa. The impression grew that in the unexplored central regions of the continent would be found peoples much superior to those who had been crowded out to the coasts.

Pressing on

While the change of the mission to the Gaboon thus brought fresh courage and determination to the missionaries, their task in the new location was by no means easy. The climate, though an improvement on Cape Palmas, still was that of equatorial Africa and of the coast. Here, too, the health of the missionaries was very precarious, and the ravage of sickness and death continually depleted the ranks. And while the native people, from the king down, were friendly and tractable, the missionaries did not now escape the adverse influence of foreigners. One of the first discoveries on arrival at the Gaboon was the appalling fact that a Spanish factory on the opposite side of the river was maintaining human slavery.

Soon more direct troubles came from a gross outrage by representatives of France. In 1844 the French government gained permission from an independent chief to erect a factory on the Gaboon River, close to the mission station. At first it was feared that the factory would prove to be a fort to dominate the river. A large company of French Catholic missionaries were known to

French Aggression

be in training at Cape Palmas, and it was surmised that a group of them would be sent to the Gaboon. At length, with the aid of a jug of brandy and other false promises, King Glass was induced to sign what proved to be a treaty ceding the sovereignty of his dominions to Louis Philippe, thus compelling the missionaries henceforth to look for protection to the king of France. When the king sobered off and the trick was discovered, there was loud outcry. But the deed was done.

Two years later, dissatisfied with so shady a title, the French government sent a brig of war to bombard the town, and, when the people had fled to the bush, to take possession. During the fighting the mission quarters barely escaped destruction, the display of the American flag seeming only the more to incense the French. When the ship's officers had restored order, they apologized for the affront to the mission station, and thereafter courteous relations were maintained between the missionaries and the new masters of the land. Perhaps the favorable attention shown to the Americans by the naval officers of their own government who visited the Gaboon, as the southern point of their cruising ground, may have stimulated the politeness of the Frenchmen.

The anticipated incursion of Roman Catholics came to pass when they also transferred their station from Cape Palmas to the Gaboon. The missionaries, fearing that trouble might arise, were now minded to start a new station beyond the jurisdiction of the French, where the Board's mission could rally if expelled from the Gaboon.

The Outlook

In spite of these new burdens and perplexities, the missionaries never lost heart. They felt that they had a good field for labor, and that they were getting hold. The mass of the people already showed some impress of the gospel, and the schools, if irregular in their conduct, were furnishing a measure of instruction to large numbers of pupils, adults as well as children. The climate

here was at least no worse than in other parts of Africa where white men had gone in the interests of commerce. So the missionaries appealed for reenforcements and continually looked for new openings, keeping still to the fore the primary purpose of pressing into the heart of the continent.

The difficulties in attempting to advance into the interior were very great. Nowhere were there roads; once the rivers were left, the traveler found only a narrow path through dense forests. And there were no caravans or traders; the people were timid guides. Without one great chieftain or established government, there was only warfare, treachery, and savage jealousy between all the inland tribes.

The account of a second visit of the missionaries to the Pangwe people indicates how exciting were some of these tours among the unknown races of the interior: "When we approached the shore, the brow of the hill was covered with a dark tumultuous throng, shouting and gesticulating in the wildest manner imaginable. When we landed, all the women disappeared, but the men remained, and their appearance did not belie their reputation. It is said that they never fear the face of man; and more perfect specimens of masculine vigor I have never seen. The competitors at the Olympic games might have envied such bones and muscles so perfectly developed. The Pangwe people are just emerging from the unknown wilds of Central Africa, and are still free from many of the effects, both good and bad, of intercourse with civilized men. No white man had ever before been seen in their place; and few, if any of them, had ever before beheld a white face. They took it for granted that I came as their friend, and brought me presents of spears and such other implements as they possessed."

As a result of these tours it was found that there was a remarkable unity of language among the races of Central Africa, so that the early hope was reenforced that this mission on the west coast might be the point of approach to

the vast interior of the continent. In this good hope the missionaries were content to labor and to wait. The words they sent back at the close of this period of the mission's history not only reflect the situation, but show the quality of the missionaries: "Before a mission can be established in the interior, the acquaintance of the intermediate people must be made, their confidence gained, and their language learned. We must establish a line of communication, and be able to preserve it, or it will be madness to attempt the conquest of those wild and barbarous regions. This line of communication must be in the hearts of the people. We are ready to attempt this to the extent of our ability, and beyond our ability. The providence of God beckons us onward; and trusting in the great Captain of our salvation, we hope to gain the victory."

Almost at the same time that the Board was landing its first missionaries on the west coast of Africa, it was preparing to begin operations among the Zulus on the eastern side of the continent. In the choice of this location the Board was guided by Dr. Philip, superintendent of the London Missionary Society's work in South Africa, who pointed out that the Zulus were the leading race in that region. A branch of the Bantus, they were distinct from the Hottentots, their appearance and characteristics marking them as of a higher order. The prowess of their great chieftain, Chaka, had made them lords of the land northward to the Limpopo.

Zulu Mission Begun, 1835

The event has abundantly justified the Board's choice of this people, since it has appeared that their language is the *lingua franca* of the land, in one or another dialect being understood also among the Barotse and the Matabele, through the Transvaal, and even in Gazaland. And the race is as widely diffused as its speech; it is found everywhere through southeastern Africa.

Though stalwart and aggressive as a race, the Zulus were

savages and heathen when the missionaries found them. They lived in *kraals*, or villages, consisting of a circle of huts looking like huge beehives, a single hole in the side of each answering for door, window, and chimney. Around the one room the occupants of the hut squatted or stretched themselves for sleep. They wore little clothing, but a profuse amount of beads and other barbarous ornaments. The men were warriors, hunters, and herdsmen; the women did the menial work in the fields or in the kraals. They were a polygamous people, a man's wealth consisting largely in the number of his wives, who were virtually his slaves. The other item of wealth was cattle, either being negotiable in terms of the other; the usual quotation was ten to twenty cows for a wife. Daughters were prized because of their monetary value in cattle. The religion of the Zulu, if such it could be called, was a gross superstition, including belief in witches, dependence upon witch doctors and rain doctors, and the worship of ancestral spirits.

Characteristics of the Zulus

The missionaries at first thought the Zulus a moral people for one so uncivilized, but on closer acquaintance declared that they broke every commandment, being especially destructive of the seventh and ninth, and much given to strong drink. With no development in the arts or industries of even half-civilized life, ignorant, superstitious, warlike, they were an essentially lawless people, living easily when they could, fighting hard when their passions were roused, gorging themselves when food was plenty, making little provision for the future, content to live in squalor and vice.

Shortly before the arrival of the missionaries a war for supremacy between Dingaan, a brother of the mighty Chaka, and one of the late king's generals, had split the nation in two, and the defeated chief had retreated to the interior with his portion of the tribe. So there were now two kingdoms, with a mountain between their territories and a mountain of fear and hate between their

The Plan of the Mission

peoples. The missionaries, therefore, deemed it necessary to divide their forces, one part to establish itself, if it might, in Dingaan's kingdom, and the other in the kingdom of the defeated Umzilikazi (Moselekatse).

Upon arrival in Cape Town, one company, consisting of the Venables, Lindleys, and Wilsons, set forth in three large wagons upon their long trek to Umzilikazi's country, 1000 miles to the northward and 500 miles west from Natal. The other group, consisting of Aldin Grout, Newton Adams, M.D., and George Champion, with their wives, who were to start the maritime mission, were prevented from going at once to their field as their route lay through a part of the country where the Kaffirs and Dutch Boers were fighting. The delay gave them time to study the Zulu language and to win the good opinion of foreign residents in Cape Town, from whom they were afterward to receive substantial aid.

At length the men of the party succeeded in reaching Dingaan's kraal, about 160 miles from Port Natal, and were encouraged by the kindly welcome of the natives, the beauty and fertility of the land, and the qualified consent of the chief, to open a mission.

While the other two returned to Cape Town to bring the ladies of the party and the mission goods, Mr. Champion set himself to build the mission houses, and actually began mission work by opening a school under the shade of a tree, where, using the sand for a blackboard, he welcomed those of all ages and conditions who were ready to become his scholars.

The coast party had hardly reached Umlazi, the first location for their mission, when they were surprised by the arrival of the members of the mission to the interior, who had found it impossible to locate in Umzilikazi's territory, it was so full of savagery and fighting. They had, therefore, taken to the wagons again for the still longer roundabout journey across the Drackenberg Mountains to join their brethren.

With so enlarged a force and with room enough for all, in a

few months four stations were occupied and two schools under way; the printing press was in operation and regular preaching services arranged, which drew large congregations. But when war broke out between Dingaan and the Boers, the country became again a battle-field and the missionaries were obliged to retreat.

So serious and prolonged was the interruption of this war that inquiries began to be made as to a more fortunate point of approach to the eastern side of the continent. Zanzibar was considered as a possible location, and had been approved by the Board, when at last the overthrow of Dingaan and the succession of a chief of different temper brightened the outlook for work among the Zulus. By this time the mission had become almost disorganized. Messrs. Grout and Champion were in the United States; Mr. Lindley had reluctantly turned aside to work for the Dutch emigrants, in whose welfare he had become interested. At length a new start was made at Umlazi, where Dr. and Mrs. Adams were already located, and where the usual departments of station work were at once developed.

The Second Step

But Mr. Grout was eagerly watching for a chance to reenter the real Zulu country, and upon invitation from Umpandi, the new chief, a station was opened at Impanyezi, just four years after the missionaries had been obliged to retire.

This new location was the center of a district with thirty-seven villages, where the Grouts found "nothing to fear except wild beasts." Their first dwelling was a mere native hut, but lines of mission work were soon taken up, and with such interest on the part of the natives as to prompt high hopes. Suddenly the chief, jealous of the missionaries' success and prestige, began a ferocious slaughter of his people, exterminating some villages as a warning to the rest. No violence was attempted upon the missionaries, but under such conditions it was impossible to maintain the mission and its members were again compelled to fall back. Afterward trouble also

broke out between the British forces and Dutch settlers, making even Natal unsuitable for residence. The entire region seemed impossible for missionary work; the Board therefore decided in 1843 to discontinue the mission and sent out instructions to that effect.

A Third Attempt

Before these instructions could be carried out, another change reversed the situation. The British got control of Natal and established a better order of things. A new commissioner arrived, fair toward native interests and friendly to the missionaries. Justice was now to be even-handed, without distinction of color and with laws protecting the rights of all. The commissioner was disposed to rely upon the mission stations and missionaries to assist in developing the native life. Here was a new face upon affairs. The prestige of the missionaries was at once raised. Multitudes of natives flocked into Natal for the protection of its juster laws. Moreover, chief Umpandi now showed a different temper, requesting that a colonial agent and a missionary might be assigned to reside near him.

With some doubt as to the wisdom of such alliance between political and missionary interests, the Board felt encouraged to make another trial of its enterprise. To this decision they were urged by the Christian settlers of the region who sent an appeal to the Board not to abandon the mission, and at a public meeting in Cape Town, under the lead of Dr. Philip and the American consul, raised $800 to defray Mr. Grout's expenses until word could come from the Board reversing its action.

Settling Down to Work

New locations were now made, the first at Umvote, some forty miles north from Durban and about twenty miles from Umpandi's kingdom. Reenforcements began to arrive; three stations were soon in operation, including Inanda, to which Daniel Lindley removed in 1847, returning thus to the distinctively foreign missionary work for which he had come to Africa. The opening of these

pioneer stations was primitive toil. At first the missionary's wagon, with its "span," or six pairs of oxen, was not only his carriage, but his house as well, until he could get one built. And that first house, made largely with his own hands and sufficing for several years, cost about $75. The work of the mission was equally primitive and simple. It was evident at once that it was to be a long and hard task to overcome this unmitigated heathen life.

Winning their Way

Yet by patience, steadfastness, and genuine love for the people, the missionaries slowly won their way. Reviewing his early labors Aldin Grout once said: "I worked there as God gave me opportunity for ten years with various interruptions, and at the end of that time I could not point to a single convert or to a single one of my hearers of whom I could confidently say that he had been benefited by my message." Then he added, "It never entered my head to doubt that I and my fellow laborers were where God called us to labor."

And in time results did appear. In 1846 a Zulu woman was admitted to the church at Umlazi; four others were propounded at the close of the same year. A religious quickening was apparent in all the stations. By the subtle tests of spiritual feeling the missionaries recognized a change for the better. An account of a communion service held by this mission at the very hour when the Board, at its annual meeting in Brooklyn in 1845, was also celebrating the Lord's Supper, reveals the temper of the missionaries. They contrasted the spacious church in the homeland, with its elect fellowship, and the room in which they sat, surrounded by a little company of people scarcely out of heathenism. Outside was the dark land where Chaka had left his bones, and where the bleached bones of some of his people were yet lying in sight, but a short distance from the door. Surrounded by these dry bones, dead and alive, hearing the command of the Master, "Do this in remembrance of me," the answer of the missionaries was, "Yes, dear

Saviour, we will remember thee, not only in thine ordinances, but we will preach, we will prophesy upon these bones, and say to them, 'O ye dry bones, hear the word of the Lord,' and by thy grace may we soon see 'bone coming to his bone,' and spiritual life breathed into them."

More Rapid Growth

The arrival of fresh recruits in 1849, including such familiar names as those of the Lewis Grouts, the Irelands, the Wilders, and Tylers, made it possible to multiply and broaden the lines of work. Day and evening schools, as well as boarding-schools, were now maintained in all the stations with the help of native teachers. There was no difficulty in getting congregations; from 600 to 800 would flock to the services. The monthly missionary prayer meeting was judged to be the most spirited exercise of all, the native Christians bringing to it their contributions not only of word and prayer, but of money as well. Soon they had raised the sum, large for them, of $15, given to support one of their own number who might go forth to labor for those yet sitting in darkness.

The Outlook in 1850

By 1850 the mission could report twelve stations and six outstations, twenty-six missionaries, counting both men and women, and six native helpers. Six churches had by this time been formed, of whose seventy-eight members more than half had been admitted during the preceding year. A half-million pages had been printed in the Zulu tongue, and scattered through the land, and a monthly paper had been started. The preparatory work, such as clearing ground and erecting buildings, which had imposed so heavy a task upon the missionaries' time and strength at first, was now accomplished, and more attention could be given to developing the actual work of the mission.

The chief obstacle to the progress of the people was their moral degradation, of which the missionaries became increasingly aware. Their coarse vices, dragging them lower than the brutes, tended to make them indifferent if not opposed

to a religion which summoned them to cleanness of heart and righteousness of conduct. When they found that the gospel was opposed to polygamy, parents were loath to put their children under the influence of the missionaries, lest they should become converted.

Yet Christian marriages were increasing, twelve being reported in one year. The visible effects of the missionaries' work were further to be seen in better homes and apparel, in improved behavior during public worship, and in a growing desire for fairer conditions of life. The native helpers, both as teachers and preachers, though not all that could be desired in piety, scholarship, or maturity of character, yet showed genuine fruits of Christian experience and training, and stood relatively to their people, it was believed, as well as the ministers in New England towns. As the period closes, stress was being put upon the need of increasing the efficiency of these native agencies, and it was planned to open a seminary to prepare native preachers.

The founders of the mission, comparing the early days when they "wandered in the wilderness in a solitary way and found no place to dwell in," and when the Board was on the point of abandoning what seemed to be a futile mission, with this time, when to every eye it was apparent that the mission was firmly planted and bearing an increasing harvest, gave glory to God for the manifestations of His signal favor.

Chapter VIII

THE PERIOD OF ADOLESCENCE

A small and feeble plant was this American Board in 1810, and set in uncongenial soil and at an unpromising time. The General Association of Massachusetts had created it, but with no general enthusiasm or approval. It never would have been organized then but for the importunity of the young men waiting to be sent forth. The missionaries preceded the missionary board and compelled it.

The Day of Small Things

And the organization at first was slight and incomplete. When the commissioners appointed at Bradford held their first meeting at Farmington, Connecticut, September 5, 1810, but five members were present. The only other attendant was Governor Treadwell's pastor, Rev. Noah Porter, in whose house they met. The next five annual meetings were also held in private parlors, the chambers of the house usually sufficing to lodge the party. After that, for several years a church vestry provided room enough for the meeting; in 1823 it was held in the Court House, Boston; in 1825 in the Town Hall, Northampton.

The transacting of the Board's business in those days was also a modest and simple undertaking. At the outset it was done in a single small room in the basement of Jeremiah Evarts' home, on Pinckney Street, Boston, Mr. Evarts serving first as editor, from the second year as treasurer, and always as a valued helper to the corresponding secretary. At the beginning the Prudential Committee consisted of three members, and their meetings were held, as need was, from two to four times a year, and as convenience served, at Newburyport,

Salem, Charlestown, Boston, Andover, Worcester, or Hartford. By 1819 Boston was the usual place of meeting; by 1822 a suite of rooms had been secured on Cornhill for the use of the officers and for the Committee's sessions; by 1832 weekly meetings of the Committee were the order.

When the first missionaries sailed the Board had no legal existence, and the prospect of getting a charter was far from bright. The leaders of the Massachusetts Legislature were political foes of the main supporters of the Board, and it was not till after a conflict lasting through two sessions that the act of incorporation was secured in June, 1812. In the course of the heated discussion over the granting of this charter the historic objection was made that it was designed to afford means of exporting religion, whereas the country had none to spare, to which Judge White, of Newburyport, made reply, as profound as clever, that "religion was a commodity of which the more we exported the more we had remaining."

Neither at home nor abroad did the time seem ripe for this venture. The world was still remote, a closed and unfriendly world. Travel was slow and difficult. There were no railways; a few steamboats were experimenting in quiet waters amid much ridicule. The East was largely unexplored; the southern continents all but unknown. It was not certain that missionaries would be tolerated in any of these strange lands; the record of those who had tried to find an opening was not encouraging.

The homeland was yet scarcely sure of its own life; facing another costly war with England; weak on the ocean; with its resources undeveloped and its future a dizzy uncertainty. Moreover, there was no sure support for the Board. Only individuals here and there could be depended upon as having even a qualified confidence in its proposals.

In such a situation, denied legal standing and hearty church support, in spite of scornful objections, with little organization and no accumulated funds, without a single door of oppor-

tunity opening before it, but inspired by the devotion of its first appointees, clutching at such tidings of success as came to it from English brethren working among the Hottentots and the South Sea Islanders, and sustained by the mighty faith of its founders, the American Board went at its task.

Feeling its Way

In such circumstances it was necessary that procedure should be cautious; that much should be left for decision upon fuller knowledge and experience. The main purpose was never vague or doubtful. "The object of this Board," it was declared, "is to devise, adopt, and prosecute ways and means for propagating the gospel among those who are destitute of knowledge of Christianity." Wisely the first instructions to those going to the field were of general character and put on them large responsibility. They were to cultivate their personal life; to have charity among themselves; to regard all missionaries of other denominations as brethren; to abstain from interference with political affairs; as far as possible to live peaceably with all men; to decide on arrival where to locate; to organize their mission decently and in order; to form a church and observe the Sabbath, first agreeing as to when the Sabbath should begin; to learn the language and approach the Gentiles graciously; to admit to the church only believers; to strike for the youth; to do their best to secure their own support.

The organizing and developing of the home base show the same spirit of caution. The number of commissioners, originally nine, five of them residents of Massachusetts and four of Connecticut, was quickly increased; thirteen were added in 1812, most of them being Congregationalists. Apparently at the outset there was no thought that the Board was to be other than a Congregational society, though in name, charter, purpose, and policy it was amply conceived to include other bodies of Christians, as it soon came to do. In 1819 corresponding members were added from distinguished friends of missions in America and Europe, and in 1821 the class of

honorary members was instituted, composed of those in whose name considerable gifts were made to the Board, and to whom were open all the rights of corporate members save the power of voting. The actual administration of the Board's affairs was entrusted to the customary officers, certain corresponding secretaries, and a prudential committee whose votes, as attested by the signatures of its officers and by the corporation seal, constituted the legal basis of its operations.

The Missionary Motive

It was wonderful how quickly recruits came in those early days, not in the light spirit of adventure or romance, but under the sobering sense of a tremendous responsibility. Then as now the missionary motive was complex. The Board's first addresses to the Christian public sound many notes of appeal: Christ's last command; his claim to the uttermost parts of the earth; the cruelty and misery of heathendom; the vision of a renovated world. But the supreme incentive to missionary devotion then was an aroused sense of vast multitudes of souls dead in trespasses and sins. The call that counted was the summons to rescue the perishing; the obligation that enforced the call was a knowledge of Christ.

A challenge to missionary service, typical of the times and signed by Hall and Newell, clinched its argument with a portrayal of the final judgment and the awful condemnation then to be brought home to careless disciples of Christ in beholding a stream of unsaved heathen borne on to eternal doom. It was to seek and to save the lost that the early missionaries left home and native land, to fulfil their obligation as redeemed men and women in making known their Saviour to those who had not yet heard of him. Under this constraint they were ready to dare any danger and to undertake any labor.

Judson's letter asking for the hand of Ann Haseltine shows the anticipations with which the first missionaries set forth: "I have now to ask," he wrote her father, "whether you can consent to part with your daughter early next spring, to see her no more in this world? whether you can consent to her

departure to a heathen land, and her subjection to the hardships and sufferings of a missionary life? whether you can consent to her exposure to the dangers of the ocean; to the fatal influence of the southern climate of India; to every kind of want and distress; to degradation, insults, persecution, and perhaps a violent death? Can you consent to all this for the sake of Him who left His heavenly home and died for her and for you; for the sake of perishing immortal souls; for the sake of Zion and the glory of God?"

The appalling list of deaths and enforced withdrawals, which, largely through ignorance and inexperience, marked the foreign missionary work in this period, did not cause the stream of volunteers to slacken. The thinning of the ranks stimulated the missionary purpose of many lives. During the first quarter of a century the growth in number of missionaries was more marked than in receipts; in its closing year forty-seven missionaries and assistants were sent out and thirty-three others were under appointment.

The Cornwall School

Among the plans which, in those experimental days, the Board devised for equipping its mission fields with workers, was one to train promising youths who should come to America from various parts of the pagan world that they might go back to evangelize their own people. The discovery of Obookiah and his Sandwich Islands mates and their stirring plea for an education gave impetus to this plan. In 1817 a school was established at Cornwall, Connecticut, with Rev. Herman Daggett as principal. The first year there were twelve students, including five from the Sandwich Islands, two from India, and one North American Indian. The expenses of the school were necessarily large, but it was maintained generously by popular favor. The second year there were twenty scholars, with seven nationalities represented; the tone of the school was fine; the young men lived together happily; their discipline and studiousness were satisfactory. The following year the number had grown

to thirty-two and the outlook was still encouraging. But by 1823 the enthusiasm had begun to lag, and serious difficulties appeared in managing a company so mixed as to race, so unlike in training and capacity. The reports from some of those who had been trained in the school and sent back to their native lands raised doubts as to the wisdom of this method of preparing a native agency. In 1827 the school was closed.

Agencies and Auxiliaries

But how should funds be secured to maintain the growing enterprise? The Prudential Committee, studying ways and means, could think of no better plan than to organize, in the principal towns of New England and beyond, societies auxiliary to the Board, whose special business it should be to gather funds. Neither churches nor pastors were then so generally committed to the enterprise that reliance could be put on ecclesiastical machinery for producing the revenue. Agents were therefore appointed by the Board to form and stimulate these associations and through them to secure the treasury's constant supply. By 1817 the Board had eight such agents.

These auxiliary societies were of various sorts and names, but were simply the organizing of men, women, and children, usually with division of the sexes, into some association for missionary giving. No better proof of the reality and vigor of this missionary awakening can be found than the rapidity with which these associations multiplied and spread over the land. By 1818 there were 300 of them, eighty-one for men, 173 for women, and twenty for both sexes. By the end of the first decade they numbered 500; by 1839, 1600; more than 680 women's organizations were then collecting funds for the American Board. Local associations so early as 1823 began to be united by districts into "auxiliaries," through which they were kept in communication with the Board.

At first there was much spontaneity and enterprise in these small bodies of givers; as time went on, it became more difficult to keep up the organization. Other societies, seeing

the efficiency of the system, adopted it to such an extent that at last it broke by its own weight.

The published acknowledgments of receipts afford interesting glimpses of the early givers and their gifts: "From an obscure female, $100"; "by ten little girls, earned by committing Scripture to memory and abstaining from sugar, $1.29"; "saved from the trimmings of wearing apparel, $3"; "the box in the vestry of the Old South Church, Boston, $20"; "an unknown person in the district of Maine, $10." All sorts of names were taken by these groups of givers: Female Cent Societies were numerous; also Gentlemen's Societies; Heathen School Societies; Juvenile Societies. In the larger cities and towns there was usually a Foreign Missionary Society of the place or district.

The Financial Problem

Despite all this organization and systematic canvass the needs were not met. Other missionary societies had an opposite experience, but during the first fifteen years the American Board always had more suitable men ready to go to the field than could be sent. The Home Department had the heavy end of the load; it was even harder to find officers and agents for it than to secure missionaries.

At the end of the first decade the Board was spending $40,000 a year and with a small deficit. During this period it had expended a little over $200,000; about one-half of the sum in India and Ceylon, one-quarter on the North American Indians, $10,000 in the Sandwich Islands, and $17,000 on the Cornwall school. In 1833 there were reported expenditures of $150,000 and a balance in the treasury of over $2,000.

The year 1837 brought the Board to its severest financial test, and also to its most remarkable deliverance. Receipts had been falling off during August and September, 1836, so that at the annual meeting of that year the Board was reported nearly $40,000 in debt. Forty-four appointed missionaries were being held back. The meeting said, "Send

the missionaries by all means; necessary funds will be provided." So they were sent, and for a while money came in rapidly. But in February an extraordinary financial panic began to press; receipts fell below $10,000 a month the preceding year. Reductions were made; missionaries withheld; letters of appeal were issued. Toward the end of the year the tide turned. At its close the receipts footed up $75,000 more than ever before; the debt had been held down to but $3000 more than the preceding year. While the situation was still anxious, the relief was great. Yet it had been bought at heavy cost. The injury wrought by the retrenchments of this year on the mission fields has been indicated in preceding chapters. Moreover the detaining of appointed missionaries ready to go to their fields discouraged new candidates; years might pass before the missionary spirit in colleges and seminaries would recover from this check.

When, the following year, the debt was but little reduced, the strain of the situation became more intense. At length, in 1841, the annual meeting at Philadelphia was prolonged a day that the great question of financing the missions might be satisfactorily settled. The climax to an earnest discussion came when, after prayer and in a stillness that was eloquent of the deep feeling, there was put to every corporate and honorary member present these three questions: Will you raise your subscription for the coming year twenty-five per cent? Will you attempt to induce as many as you feel you can properly approach to do the same? Will you report to the meeting next year what the Lord hath enabled you to do in this matter? One after another came the replies, all of them affirmative in spirit, some promising fifty per cent increase, others one hundred per cent, some even greater increase. A following vote, urging pastors to rouse their people to larger giving, reflects the fact that by this time less emphasis was being placed upon the system of auxiliaries and that churches and Sunday-schools were being directly solicited.

Before adjournment it was further voted to hold a special meeting in the city of New York on January 18, 1842, to learn the result of these measures and to consider what more might need to be done. But when the day arrived the Committee were able to report so large an increase in receipts that the meeting was turned into an hour of thanksgiving and praise. At the close of the year it appeared that all expenses had been met and the dragging debt reduced to the nominal sum of $600.

But the problem of finance was not solved with even so loyal an uprising. Some reaction followed; the unsteady character of missionary giving kept the Board swinging between hope and anxiety. The question of expenditure was carefully gone over. A policy of concentration was avowed, which should relinquish all but the more promising stations. When by heavy relinquishments a surplus was reported in 1845 for the first time since 1833, the next year showed a falling off in receipts; the direct result, it was felt, of this surplus. During the first period of its life, though the Board struggled hard over questions of finance, it did not succeed in settling them.

The Missionary Herald

It was not till the Board was eleven years old that it took into its own hands the issuance and control of a magazine. Journals containing some foreign missionary intelligence did indeed precede the Board. But neither the *Massachusetts Missionary Magazine*, whose first number appeared in 1803, nor the *Panoplist*, which started in 1805, gave much space to what was really missions, either home or foreign, although a part of the profits of both publications was devoted to missionary purposes. After these magazines were combined in 1808, under the name of *The Panoplist and Missionary Magazine*, increasingly more attention was given to missionary news, and in particular to the work of the American Board. In 1818 the name of the magazine was changed to *The Panoplist and Missionary Herald*, and it became the medium for the Board's publication of its news. Three

years later it was taken over and became the property and responsible organ of the Board, under its present name.

In 1822 the net profits of the magazine, after paying all costs of publication, the editor's modest salary of $1000, and the charge for free copies, amounted to over $1200. For many years the annual reports acknowledged the profits of the *Missionary Herald*, which were variously applied. Inasmuch as the magazine consisted at first of but thirty-two pages, without illustrations, and sold for $1.50 to a community that had few publications, and no other that traversed its field, this financial success is not so surprising. Even when somewhat enlarged and embellished, in 1833, it was capable of more than earning its way, attaining a circulation of over 20,000 copies. To this, its main dependence for circulating the news of the missions, the Board added, in 1841, a smaller and cheaper monthly called *The Dayspring*. In 1849 this *Dayspring* was changed to a pamphlet for "juveniles," and called the *Youth's Dayspring*, and was so continued for six years; another magazine about twice as large, called *The Journal of Missions*, was begun for adults in 1850.

Public Meetings

The first public session of the American Board was in connection with the annual meeting in Middletown, Connecticut, in 1826, when a service was held in the Congregational Church, with an address by a missionary from the Sandwich Islands. The first business meeting in a church edifice was in 1833; not till 1842 was there any large attendance. But by 1858 the Board's annual meetings had become significant, with such attendance and interest as marked it as a national society, the agent of a multitude of churches and of several great denominations of Christians.

It is to be recognized that in the earlier years the meetings, annual and other, of the host of auxiliaries, local, state, and district, kept the missionary fires burning. In another way a widened and deeper hold on Christian hearts was won for

the cause of foreign missions by the setting apart of the first Monday in January as a Day of Prayer for the world. The appeal for this Day of Prayer was first issued by the Board for 1845; a Week of Prayer at New Year's "that all flesh might see the salvation of God" was later to be asked for from the mission field, and was first observed in 1854.

A Stimulus to Others

The creation of this first foreign mission board in America impressed the whole Christian world. In Switzerland, central Germany, and some parts of France, as well as in the mother country, the report of its operations proved a fresh stimulus to missionary zeal. At home the example was even more directly influential. When Luther Rice, on arriving at Calcutta, withdrew from the Board, he returned to America to promote the forming of the Baptist Missionary Union in 1814. In 1819 the Methodists also organized a foreign missionary society.

The Presbyterians provided otherwise. In 1811 the American Board had ventured to suggest to the General Assembly the expediency of a Presbyterian society similar to itself and with which it might cooperate. But the Assembly thought that one society was enough and urged its body of churches to adopt the American Board as their foreign missionary agency. The following year the Board elected representatives of the Presbyterian communion to its corporation and to office, and faced its work with enlarged purpose. In 1826 the United Foreign Missionary Society, in which the Presbyterian and Dutch Reformed churches had been cooperating, was merged with the Board, which now affirmed its purpose to be what its name declared it, a truly national and comprehensive foreign missionary society. Thereupon the names of eminent leaders of the Reformed Church in America (Dutch Reformed) also appeared in the lists of the Board's members and officers. Important district or sectional auxiliaries were later drawn to the Board; notably in 1834, the Foreign Missionary Society of the Western Reserve, and that of the Valley of the Mississippi;

in the same year other associations, like the Central and the Southern Boards of Foreign Missions, were formed by various synods to cooperate with the Board, though not directly auxiliary to it.

This union of forces worked out admirably, and for the most part happily. But it could not be permanently maintained. Theological and political differences were somewhat accountable for the dissolving of the partnership; but the growth of the several denominations in numbers and resources led many to believe that more could be accomplished if each should assume full responsibility for its missionary service. One by one these withdrawals came, always with cordial respect, affection, and good-will on both sides. The sorrow at parting was real and deep; the ties of comradeship had become almost too strong to break.

A Mother of Five

The "Old School" Presbyterians left the Board in 1837, the Central and Southern Boards in 1839; in 1846, because of differences of opinion as to the Board's attitude toward slavery, some members withdrew to aid in organizing the American Missionary Association. The "New School" Presbyterians and the Dutch Reformed churches remained with the Board throughout this first period, but withdrew during the next. No less than five great missionary boards thus sprang from this parent society.

Within the fifteen years beginning in 1830, nine foreign missionary societies were formed in the United States; added to those already in existence on both sides of the Atlantic, they made thirty missionary organizations, whose paths were sure to meet at many points. How should they fare together? The record is in the main most gratifying. They met as comrades, fellow soldiers of one King, divisions of one great army. The early formation of Missionary Unions, like that at Bombay in 1825, composed of members of the London Missionary Society, Church Mis-

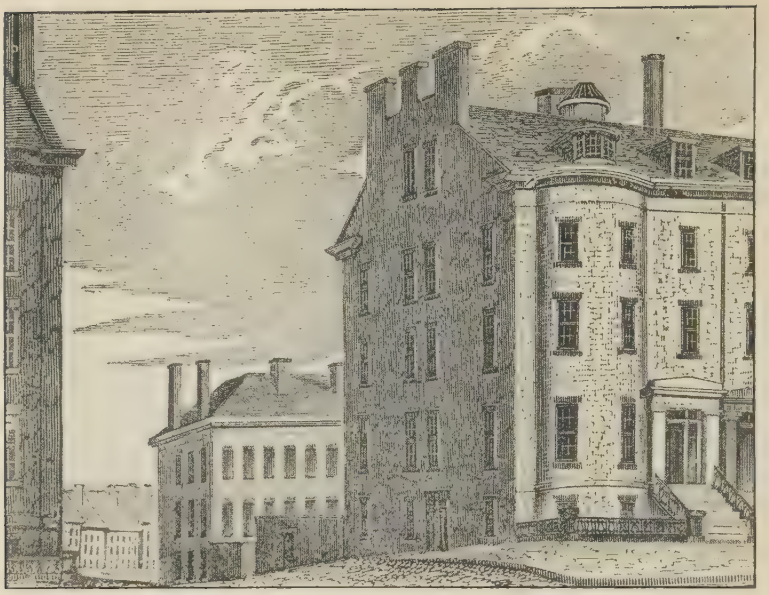
Comity in Missions

sionary Society, Scottish Missionary Society, and American Board, shows how the missionaries cooperated.

The help that the American Board derived in its first ventures from the counsel and kindness of the societies earlier in operation, both through their officers and missionaries, was beyond measure. The generous aid of Bishop Turner, of Calcutta, after the fire in Ceylon, in 1831; the prompt support of individual friends of other communions, and of missionary organizations in Europe and England in times of special distress, as in India and Turkey, brought joy beyond the financial relief. And from the beginning, as through all its history, the American Board gratefully recognized the indispensable aid of the great interdenominational auxiliaries, the British and American Bible Societies and Tract Societies, whose busy presses filled the hands of the missionaries with weapons for their warfare against ignorance and falsehood.

In the main, too, the occupation of fields was respected and the work of each society was left to proceed without interference. Yet not always. Occasionally the zeal of a missionary pathfinder would lead him to trespass, or the tenets of some church would prompt it to disregard the rights of a society whose policy was disapproved. The Roman Catholic Church was then everywhere intolerant of Protestant missions; wherever it found them, it fought them. The High Church party of the Church of England also pushed its way into some fields of the Board to discredit the work of its missionaries, though generally with little permanent effect.

The Board's principles in the matter of comity were early formulated (1838), and, so far as appears, with but one or two slips through inadvertence, were scrupulously maintained: to claim no more territory than it could reasonably hope to occupy; the great centers of life and commerce to be regarded as common ground; each society to respect the territorial limits of others; the society that contemplates entering into any large section already partially occupied to communicate first with those already on the field.



THE "ROOMS" IN 1860 AND 1910

THE BOARD'S BUILDING IN PEMBERTON SQUARE
THE GENERAL OFFICE IN THE CONGREGATIONAL HOUSE

Quietly but steadily the Board kept growing during this first period of but little more than a generation. From the basement of Mr. Evarts' house the "missionary room" was moved in 1822 to rooms in the second story of a tenement in Cornhill. In 1826 a shift was made to the basement of the Hanover Street Church, of which Dr. Lyman Beecher was pastor. When in 1830 this church was burned, the Board's property was saved and removed again to offices in Cornhill. In 1838 a three-story missionary house was built in Pemberton Square by the investment of some of the permanent funds, and the Board had a home of its own, which it occupied for thirty-five years.

Growth During the Period (1810–50)

The Board needed these larger quarters for it was now a larger institution. Instead of one corresponding secretary and a treasurer caring for both home and foreign administration and gathering gifts from a few auxiliaries, principally located in New England, as was the case in the early years, there were three secretaries of correspondence and a home field divided into thirteen broad districts, covering the whole northern part of the country so far as it was settled, and with field secretaries in each district. Instead of the nine men who constituted the Board in 1810 there were now 178 corporate members and between 6000 and 7000 honorary members. Instead of the $1000 receipts of that first year was the record of more than $250,000 received in 1849–50. Instead of an annual meeting held in a parlor, with five members present and one spectator, was the assembling in 1850 in the small but comparatively remote town of Oswego, N. Y., of a company of nearly 300 men and women from sixteen states, who with the people of the place crowded the churches for three days to hear the story of one more year of missionary history. Hon. Theodore Frelinghuysen was in the chair, fit successor in the line of Governor John Treadwell; Rev. Joseph Lyman, and John Cotton Smith; Chief Justice Thomas S. Williams was vice-president; the body as a whole, in learning, wealth,

character, and leadership, was representative of the best life of the country. The American Board had taken its place among the honored and commanding institutions of the land.

An Inclusive Organization

In 1810 one state organization of a single denomination had ventured to create the Board, though with grave doubts and even outspoken opposition. In 1850 no less than four denominations of Christian churches were making it their agent and loyally pleading its cause. From the first it interpreted its relation to the churches broadly, refusing to assume ecclesiastical responsibilities either at home or abroad, and accounting itself only the servant of the churches that wrought through it to carry forward their work in accordance with the terms on which they were united. While not a voluntary association, or a strictly representative or delegated body, but a corporation, qualified and set to administer its enterprise according to its own best judgment and will, it yet determined from the first to avoid becoming an ecclesiastical court or the tool of a party or sect; its sole business was to carry the gospel, as commonly held by the churches supporting it, to the unevangelized world; and to welcome, receive, and forward men and money offered for its use, so far as available for the purposes intended and in the circumstances of the case. This simple and comprehensive principle of administration, for the most part consistently applied, enabled the Board successfully to manage its complicated affairs; to deal with various denominations of churches, missionaries of many minds and labels, controversies in the homeland or in mission fields, and whatever perplexing and difficult situations emerged in this period.

While thus seeking to serve its broad constituency, the Board was alert to win new friends and supporters and to commend foreign missions yet more widely. During the '40s, when the lyceum was coming to be a notable force in popular education, a scheme was devised for adapting it to

missionary purpose, and in some cities, as in Boston at the Odeon, under the auspices of a "Young Men's Society for Diffusing Missionary Knowledge," distinguished literary men were invited to lecture. At the same time new efforts were made to interest young people. The plans do not seem to have been novel or exciting, but they availed, and a host of juvenile societies were formed to hear missionary stories and reports, to make contributions, prepare garments, and engage in other such chastened joys.

An Opening World

The lands that were far off and strange to the founders had come to seem nearer as the years went by. They were more accessible. "Verily the earth is helping the woman," says the annual report of 1836. Railroads and steamboats were multiplying, with their promise of increased facilities of transportation.

Not only nearer, as more accessible, but as better known, was the world of 1850. And herein the missionaries of the Board had largely contributed. What prodigious explorers were those early missionaries; never daunted by any hardship and never satisfied to leave a corner of God's world unvisited if only there dwelt in it any who had not heard the gospel of God's redeeming love! In the description of this period of beginnings it has already appeared with what painstaking the several fields were traversed to determine the best points for occupancy.

But beyond the lands chosen and tilled there was wide exploring of fields that for one reason or another could not be undertaken. As one instance of these prospected lands, Patagonia may be recalled. Earlier investigations had been made in Spanish America, and some preliminary work done in South America, particularly at Buenos Ayres. But that not eventuating, in 1833 attention was turned to Patagonia. Her shores were being visited every year by sealers; British explorers were charting the waters of her western coast in the interests of commerce; it was time to inquire concerning her

most valuable possession, man. Upon a generous offer of transportation, the Board despatched Titus Coan and William Arms on this errand. Landing on the southeastern coast, they spent more than two months in searching it over, only to find few Indians on the eastern shore, the way barred to the west and north, with the necessity of reporting it inexpedient then to attempt a mission to this country.

Even beyond where they could yet journey, the eyes of the missionaries peered wistfully; and the Board welcomed every word of news that could be reported as to the frontier lands and the people yet unreached. In 1836 the Committee was collecting information concerning Tibet and the prospect of entering it more safely from Russia than from India. Afghanistan, also, was in mind, and strong and devoted men were being watched for with a view to these fields. The pages of the *Missionary Herald* during this period became a storehouse of information gathered by keen-eyed and true-hearted explorers, searching out the lands of darkness and need.

The Missionary Force

In 1812 the Board sent forth eight missionaries, two of the men being unmarried. In 1850 there were 157 ordained missionaries, besides teachers, physicians, and wives, 395 in all; and there were 122 native helpers in various forms of mission work, a company that in size would have astonished the founders. At first there was little selection of candidates; the number who offered was not large; the work was new and its requirements not clear. But as experience was gained and candidates multiplied, and especially when funds became reduced after the panic of 1837, more care was taken in the appointment of missionaries. It began to be recognized, also, that the great work of the Board's missions was to prepare natives to be the preachers and teachers of their people. Deep and broad foundations of a Christian education and a Christian literature were therefore required, and to that end the really successful missionaries must have eminent gifts and graces. The best that Christian

culture could produce in America was none too good for the foreign missionary's task.

A closer examination of prospective missionaries was then called for; first of all, as to health, since the missions had suffered more from failure at that point than at any other. The conclusion to which the Committee was thus brought by the experience of its opening period of missionary work is worth quoting in full: "The whole history of our missions demonstrates that their ultimate success depends far more, humanly speaking, on the qualifications of those who form them than upon the number of laborers. A few men, eminently holy, and devoted to their work, with vigorous minds, well disciplined, and richly stored with useful knowledge, discreet and judicious in their plans and measures, full of esteem and affection for each other, and of compassionate kindness for the perishing heathen, accustomed to steady, patient toil and with physical constitutions capable of sustaining it, will, by the blessing of God, accomplish far more in training up native laborers, and guiding them in their work, exerting an extensive and commanding influence over the people among whom they dwell, and preparing the way for great and blessed changes in the manners, habits, and institutions of unevangelized men than a multitude who do not rise above mediocrity in these respects, or of whom some are very deficient in any of them."

Development of Mission Policy

In the operation of the missions, also, the experience of forty years developed certain general rules of policy and method. The main features of the work were found to be pretty much the same for all fields, despite their marked contrasts of condition. There were always languages to be learned and a Christian literature to be provided, hearers to be sought, disciples to be won, schools to be established; at length, churches to be organized, a native agency to be prepared and set at work, self-support to be encouraged, home and foreign missions to be stimu-

lated. In one way or another all these lines of effort were to be undertaken by all the missions. But in what way and order, with what special emphasis or variation to suit the particular case, was a matter to be determined on the ground. The wisdom of the founders was shown in that they sent forth their first missionaries with so general instructions, allowing them large freedom of action and requiring the responsibility of decision.

Mission Organization

As time went on, this policy involved a more definite organization of the missions. When there was but a handful of missionaries closely associated, and all busy at the same kind of tasks, there was little need of organization or formal action. They could talk the day's work over and go at it; they could spend the funds in hand as the need was greatest before their eyes; they could draw their own supplies from the common store. But as numbers increased, residences scattered, and lines of work multiplied, as the part of each worker became more specialized and the funds available less adequate to the demand, it became of increasing importance that the mission should be thoroughly organized and its action regular, businesslike, and decisive.

The Board early constituted its missions as communities, and was the only missionary society to adopt that system. As soon as there were three male members in a mission it was expected so to organize, with stated meetings and exact records kept by a secretary. Mission action was to be by majority vote, subject to revision by the Prudential Committee. The mission was then held accountable for the procedure of its several stations and its members. Experience tended to increase the power and responsibilities of the mission in some directions, as it was found they were best able to settle many questions of method and administration; in other lines it led to some restricting of their freedom.

The enterprise itself had by the close of this period grown

marvelously in size and scope. The single mission that in 1813 could scarcely get a foothold in India, the one land that then seemed at all hopeful for such an enterprise, had now increased to twenty-four, distributed in ten of the great countries of the world. In all these lands a legal standing and a good measure of protection had now been secured. The great object of these missions, the preaching of the gospel, had already been wrought into various forms of mission activity, as observation and experiment in the several fields had pointed the way. Besides the direct work of evangelism through preaching and the institution of the Church, the two outstanding agencies that were coming to be used were education and publication.

Mission Growth

In the field of publication the Board had already accomplished magnificent results. By 1850 it had twelve printing establishments in operation, issuing publications in thirty languages and with an output of 37,000,000 pages in that one year. Yet these figures give but a poor idea of what had been achieved. The fact is that the missionaries of the Board had already created a literature in all these missions, notably so in Ceylon and India, throughout the Turkish empire and in the Sandwich Islands. For the latter land, as for all the savage peoples for whom they toiled, they had even constructed a written language, with grammar and dictionary already issued or under way. The inconspicuous but monumental labors of gifted men in many of the early mission stations had thus brought unpurchasable help to the uplifting of needy peoples and permanent honor to the Board.

In the field of education, this same year 1850 showed 21,700 scholars in the free schools of the Board (one-half in the Sandwich Islands), 700 or 800 students in the higher boarding-schools of the several fields, and a half dozen training-schools preparing teachers and preachers. Here, also, the figures show the least part of the accomplishment. For what had been greatly done in this period was to awaken a thirst for

education and the beginnings of a higher standard of living where knowledge and intelligence were to rule.

At the same time, there were gathered into eighty-five churches on the several fields over 25,000 members, nearly 2000 of them added in the year 1850, which churches were then contributing nearly $10,000 toward the support of this mission work. But the numbers being reached and influenced in those lands were far beyond counting, and this circle of influence was ever widening.

So established had the Board's enterprise become, so manifest the results, so assured the main policies and methods, that those who watched over it were confident of its larger possibilities. In a paper read at the annual meeting of 1844 on "The Present Duty of the Church to the Heathen World," Secretary Treat argued that it was in the power of Christians to evangelize the whole world in less than fifty years. He estimated the Board's share of the non-Christian world at sixty million; he counted upon a rate of increase in missionaries and native workers in successive decades, so that within the appointed time there would be one preacher to every five thousand souls. To finance the plan there would be needed but one cent a day from each communicant in addition to other funds that could be depended upon. It is a significant and sobering fact that thus before the end of the first period into which the Board's history is here divided, it was felt by her leaders that the evangelization of the world might be accomplished two decades before her centennial year.

The Superb Leaders

To review the history of the Board's growth during this period is to feel the greatness of her founders. The generalship in the homeland was as marked as the leadership abroad. The names of Worcester, Evarts, and Anderson as secretaries, and of such laymen as Bartlet, Read, Hubbard, Stoddard, and Tappan upon the Prudential Committee recall some of the noblest and most serviceable men that Christian America has known.

SAMUEL WORCESTER
Secretary, 1810–1821

JEREMIAH EVARTS
Treasurer, 1811–1822
Secretary, 1821–1831

GOVERNOR JOHN TREADWELL
President, 1810–1820

HENRY HILL
Treasurer,
1822–1854

SAMUEL SPRING
Vice-President,
1810–1819

SOME FOUNDERS AND EARLY OFFICERS

Their worth to the American Board is beyond reckoning. Secretary Worcester fairly lifted it into action on the arms of his faith. When the question of commissioning the first missionaries was up and there was not more than $1200 in the treasury, the other two members of the Committee hesitated. Dr. Worcester declared, "The Lord has the key; and before the missionaries have reached their field of labor we shall have enough to pay their outfits and continue their support." Dr. Spring replied, "Well, brother Worcester, I don't know but it may be so, but it seems to me that you have all the faith there is in the world"; later he added, "I do not know what we should do without brother Worcester. His faith is equal to everything."

And to faith was added wisdom. It was all new work. There were no precedents, records, or rules. The example of a few European societies that were still experimenting was their sole earthly guide. Obstacles were enormous; perplexities constant and increasing; first attempts seemed destined to pitiful failure. In the midst of it the undismayed vision and ready tact of Worcester shine forth; with him and following him was Evarts, versatile, prudent, untiring; to his support, with others, came Anderson, the statesman, to meet the more intricate problems of the advancing years.

Mistakes were made. Judgment was not always unerring; methods and policies had sometimes to be revised. The marvel is with what prescience the leaders saw the great and abiding principles of missionary work. The Cornwall School was not a success, but the need of training a native agency was justly perceived. Tracts and books appearing from mission presses were not always well adapted for their use, but the primary importance of the printed word was settled once for all. The schooling offered at first in some fields was hardly that most needed by all the pupils, but the value of education as a means of Christianizing every nation was never to be gainsaid. Industrial education may have been unwisely reduced in some fields,

as among the Indians and in the Sandwich Islands, but the decision was right, the saintly John Eliot to the contrary notwithstanding, that it is not necessary to civilize a people before beginning to Christianize them.

Missionaries may have erred, and with approval from the homeland, in pressing upon their converts a provincial type of thought or standard of conduct, and in failing to make sufficient allowance for the traditions and customs of those whom they were training. It is the other side, however, that is most noteworthy: the breadth of view, the sympathy, tolerance, and tact that appear both in the instructions given those early missionaries and in the way they went about their task. And it is a sufficient answer to any doubt whether their course was on the whole wise, that it won the approval of the high-minded, both among foreign and native observers, and often overcame even the prejudices and opposition of those who had felt themselves rebuked by the new religion.

By patient persistence and self-denying devotion the missions won their way abroad. And by the skill, integrity, and zeal of its management the society won its way at home. So that by 1850 the American Board was honored the world around. Its place, its work, its efficiency, its prestige, and its claim were all established.

THE WATERING, 1850–1880

MISSIONS

The date of beginning wor
name of the mission, also the
ferring. If the mission was cl
1860, the date is in parenth

India

1) Marathi 1813-
2) Ceylon 1816-
3) Madura 1834-
4) Madras 1836-(1866)
5) Arcot 1851-1857

Turkey

6) Western Turkey 1819-, and Smyrna 1820-
7) Palestine 1821-1845
8) Malta 1822-1833
9) Syria 1823-(1870)
10) Nestorian 1834-1870
11) Cyprus 1834-1840
12) Central Turkey 1847-
13) European Turkey 1858-
14) Eastern Turkey 1855-
Assyria 1850-1860

...gion follows the ...closing or trans- ...ransferred after

...ce 1830-(1869)

...on 1830-
...y 1842-1858
...how 1847-
...ghai 1854-1860
...h China 1860-

... 1831-1850
...apore 1834-1843
...eo 1838-1852

... Palmas 1834-1843
...on 1843-(1870)
...h Africa 1835-
...lwich Is. 1820-1853
...onesia 1852-

Chapter IX

IN BRITISH INDIA AND CEYLON

About the year 1850 the situation in the Board's earliest mission field was being closely scrutinized. There was much to observe with joy and gratitude. In that India which had refused to let American missionaries enter in 1813, a score of missionary societies were now at work, occupying 300 stations and expending a million dollars a year. And this increased establishment was working under greatly improved conditions. Both government and native peoples were more kindly; the progress of civilization was removing some difficulties. *Sati* (widow-burning) had been stopped; human sacrifices occurred now only in isolated cases; hook-swinging was still practised; its occurrence was noted occasionally throughout this period and even so late as 1895, but with increasing opposition so that the government finally suppressed it. Native chiefs in the Punjab were counseling with officials to stop female infanticide. India was becoming disturbed over her misery; some of her spokesmen even said despairingly that Hinduism was dying. It was a good time to press the gospel of salvation.

The New Period

On its fields the American Board rejoiced in a full share of the general improvement. Yet it was not satisfied simply to go on in the same way. The missionaries were becoming absorbed in routine work; there was danger that they might be overwhelmed with the care of schools and publications, much of this care being over the teaching of secular knowledge and the preparing of secular

A New Method Required

text-books. It seemed that preaching was likely to be neglected and the disposition to reach out and evangelize new districts to be choked. Mr. Hume might declare that "the missionary in the printing-office can do more to make Christ known among the people than ten men could do faithfully preaching daily in the streets and bazaars of the city," but a list of publications, with the number of copies circulated, did not furnish a kindling report of a year's work to most of those who supplied the funds for it. The patient siege of a fortress appeals to those who understand the art of war; but battles out in the open and with quicker results are needed to hold the enthusiasm of most onlookers. Both as principle and policy it was felt to be desirable to spread out so that each missionary should be a preacher with a section or parish distinctively his own.

To this end some rearrangements in the mission at Ahmednagar were attempted so early as 1851. A second church was established there with a separate plant, including schools. Village work was developed, some of the larger places now being made stations, with resident missionaries and a more numerous native agency. The central boarding-schools were to be discontinued that village schools might be stimulated. There were to be as many stations as missionaries; each man was to cover his own district and all the forces of a station were to be concentrated upon evangelism.

Deputation of 1854–55

Before this radical change of policy could be effected the Board sent a deputation to India and Ceylon to study the case on the ground. Secretary Rufus Anderson and Dr. A. C. Thompson of the Prudential Committee landed in Bombay November 2, 1854, and spent almost seven months in careful and protracted conference with the several missions in India and Ceylon. Virtually the whole theory and practise of mission work was gone over. The volume in which were published the proceedings of the deputation became an authority in Europe as well as America and

caused Secretary Anderson to be recognized as a general of first rank in the missionary campaign.

Restricting the Schools

The first of the two principal recommendations which the deputation made to the Board on its return was that the educational work of the mission should be limited to providing for the Christian community and that teaching should be for the most part in the vernacular. As it was now, there were coming to the seminaries and higher schools an ever-increasing number who wished only the commercial benefits of education; they had no liking for Christianity; their presence lowered the *morale*, made it more difficult to impress Christian teaching upon the other scholars, and tended to secularize the instruction. It was not the missionaries' business to train Hindu boys to earn a better living; the general work of education for India belonged to the State; the Church should not mix in it. The mission schools should be for the children of the mission; the institutions of higher grade should be only for the training of native workers; to them only was there any need of teaching English.

So said the advocates of a narrower educational policy. The deputation accepted this view; from what had been already attempted in Ahmednagar it would seem that they went to India with a strong prejudice toward it. In the conferences some missionaries felt that small regard was shown for any other opinion. But, plausible as is the argument and high as is the endorsement of so astute an administrator as Secretary Anderson, the judgment of the deputation was wrong, as the event showed. It was a reversal to the principle which Alexander Duff had discredited twenty years before. The advantage of the broader policy for really influencing India and sowing Christian truth wide over the land is now all but unquestioned. To it, as will appear, the Board was at length compelled to return.

The second conclusion to which the deputation came was to press the organization of churches together with the accept-

ance of self-support and the creation of a native ministry. Here was the great advance in mission policy to which the deputation brought the Board at the beginning of this new period. Hitherto the missionaries had been slow to entrust any authority to the native Christians, who, for the most part, were disinclined to assume responsibility. The missionaries had been pastors of the native churches. And the churches were yet few, located at the mission stations and still composed largely of students in the schools and of mission helpers, most of whom were in one way or another dependent on mission aid.

Establishing the Native Church

Such a condition was unavoidable in the earlier years; but now, with foundations laid, communities formed, individuals educated, the Bible and other literature in the vernacular, and a second generation of Christian youth growing up to efficiency, it was time to constitute the native church as an organism having life in itself that should bring forth after its kind through all the land, or in Secretary Anderson's immortal phrase, "a self-supporting, self-governing, and self-propagating church."

The report of the deputation was clear on this point and convincing. Undisputed now, it was a new and bold policy to declare in the '50s; it arrested the attention of other mission boards and at length was accepted by those of the Congregational type as being the only justifiable principle by which to transplant vital Christianity from one land to another.

These two recommendations of its deputation were not accepted by the Board off-hand. Presented at the annual meeting at Utica, in 1855, they were referred to a committee of thirteen who entered into correspondence with all the missions visited, including those of Syria and Turkey, which Secretary Anderson had inspected on his return journey, and where also it was intended to make these changes of policy. This committee presented a very full and elaborate report at a special meeting held at

The Board's Approval

Albany the following March, when the much-discussed proposals were at length adopted after considerable questioning and demur.

The Effect in India

The readjustment of work to conform to the new policies was promptly undertaken. At Ahmednagar the plans already outlined were now more fully set in operation. A tour up the Godavari valley, on which the missionaries had been accompanied by the deputation during its visit to this station, had revealed the immense opportunity in these regions as yet little touched, and the need of pressing out from the centers to the districts beyond. A fresh impulse was thus given to the work of touring.

The situation in the Madura Mission was somewhat different. From the one station, opened in Madura city in 1834, before the deputation arrived there had come to be ten stations, whose missionaries had oversight of a hundred villages scattered over a territory larger than the state of Massachusetts. Here each man had his touring *bandy* or cart, with his portable cot and table, and it was a part of his regular monthly work to go into the outlying regions, not only to visit villages where there were Christian congregations, but those also where there were none, of which one missionary could report "probably five hundred." So that the need of this field at the time of the deputation's visit was not so much for expansion as for thorough cultivation.

The service which the visitors rendered to Madura, as elsewhere, was in urging a larger dependence on the native agency, with a more determined effort to put responsibility on the native Christians, and to provide them leaders from their own number. The missionaries were not strangers to these ideas; they had sounded them in many reports to the Board. But in view of all the difficulties in the way, little progress was making in that direction. It was of advantage that the Board through its representatives should restate and approve the principle and recommend steps to press its more rapid

operation. The mischief was that in closing the higher schools and reorganizing the system of education they weakened the very forces that were necessary to the end in view. Yet they did put a new emphasis on the evangelistic side of the work. These results followed their visit: churches increased, which, if small and feeble, "hardly knowing their right hand from their left" ecclesiastically, were yet alive and growing; the English mission school was discontinued, and the vernacular training of the native agency was pressed.

The Ceylon Mission got a quick start, and, under more favorable conditions than at Bombay, won earlier success. Yet when the deputation arrived at Jaffna they found that the missionaries there had many trials and discouragements. After thirty years of labor there was but one congregation in each station, and that composed almost entirely of beneficiaries and paid helpers. These station groups expected the ministry of a missionary; there were no flocks for the native pastors. All the pupils in the girls' schools had been secured by gifts or such inducements as virtually bought their attendance; and Batticotta Seminary, the crown and pride of the educational work of the mission, whose maintenance had cost $100,000, was turning out chiefly candidates for government service, young men without Christian sympathies, whose influence hindered the religious life of their fellow students.

The Bearing in Ceylon

There was another side to the story. It was the policy of this mission to allow the church members to live in the villages among their non-Christian kindred. The leaven of Christianity, if hidden, was working in the lump. And the influence of Batticotta graduates was in many ways working good for the national life; they were breaking down hurtful traditions and superstitions. Of late, too, a new interest was showing itself in the building of village chapels.

Here, as in other missions, the deputation's visit made for a new emphasis upon evangelism and the native church. A

native evangelical society had been vigorously at work so early as 1851, and was winning converts outside the stations. The service of this native agency was now given greater attention. Batticotta Seminary was reorganized as a training-school for preachers and teachers, and the Oodooville boarding-school for girls was correspondingly restricted. English schools were cut down and the effort to provide general education for those outside the Christian community was abandoned. After 1855 there were no more "gifts" to pupils in the girls' school. At the same time the mission press was turned over to the natives, and the mission went out of the printing business. The *Morning Star*, a bi-monthly paper which had gained wide attention for Christianity among educated natives, was continued under the new control of the press, as it is to this day.

So sudden and radical a change in the school system was inevitably depressing. Numbers were greatly reduced; Batticotta, which some years before had 160 pupils, began its new régime with sixteen; when English courses were stopped, those who sought only a business education dropped out. As one result, an English high school, entirely under native control, self-supporting and thoroughly Christian in its management, was started and became immediately successful. Apparently it was not necessary to furnish education free in order to secure pupils. On the whole, there was agreement, for a time at least, in standing by the new system. It was believed that Batticotta was to have its own constituency and field of service.

To add to the burden in this time of reconstruction came violent epidemics of cholera and smallpox and a prolonged drought. Thousands died in the close-packed villages over which the contagion raged; schools were broken up; relief work became pressing and missionaries were absorbed in it; the mission "looked like a wrecked vessel."

In 1851 the Board began a new mission in India and equipped

it with missionaries all from one family. An English society turned over to the American Board its work in the North Arcot district, a region containing more than a million souls, to which Dr. Henry Martyn Scudder was transferred from Madras, some seventy-five miles to the east. Dr. Scudder's medical skill won attention, and his ability to use the Tamil speech brought him a crowd of hearers whenever he preached in the streets of Arcot. Two years after, he was joined by his brother, William W. Scudder, and three years later by three other brothers and a sister. Three stations were soon occupied. Every member of the mission had been born in India, could speak the language fluently, knew the Indian life and temper, and was by nature a preacher, so that the mission was preeminently evangelistic in its method. Soon the brethren could say, "The gospel has been fully preached in almost every street of our stations."

The Arcot Mission, 1851

By 1856 five churches were organized, and a half dozen schools, using only the vernacular, were training the children of Christians. No attempt was made to teach others, though thousands of pupils could have been secured. In 1857, when the Reformed Church in America withdrew from union with the American Board to organize its own foreign missionary society, the Arcot Mission was transferred to it. Thereafter its story becomes a chapter in the noble history of that sister society.

The Sepoy Mutiny of 1857–58 did not touch the missions of the American Board which were outside the zone of violence. In Ahmednagar, which felt most the general shock to the country, the effect on the people was for a time unhappy, though the regular lines of work, including street preaching, were maintained. One benefit which accrued out of the general horror was the good witness borne by the native Christians. The arguments of many critics of missions in India were then disproved, as, frightened into silence, they watched the course of that incredible mutiny

Good Witnesses

and marked, over against the treachery, cruelty, and wild fanaticism of the raw Hindu, the loyalty of the despised native converts.

It was not only in that crisis that the testimony was borne. The new man in Christ Jesus was now to be recognized on all these fields. Such an one was Yesûba Powar. When returning from Benares to his home, 800 miles away, in the yellow garb of a pilgrim and devotee, he had won great esteem by bearing on his shoulder all the way a load of Ganges water, something no Mahar had ever done before. But when a few years afterward he visited Ahmednagar, where he had an elder brother who was a Christian, he soon cast aside his pilgrim dress, declared himself a disciple, and for the remaining years of his life was a loved and efficient preacher of the gospel and a companion to the missionaries on their long tours into new regions.

Another shining witness, also named Yesûba and also a Mahar, had been an ambitious and well-to-do cattle trader. When he became a Christian in 1850, his cattle and horses were poisoned until all were gone. But, like Job, he would not deny his Lord. At last his persecutors, finding they could not prevail, let him alone and he resumed his business. Hospitable and generous, openly breaking caste, eating and drinking with the lowest Mangs, devoted to his church, of which he became a deacon, he was acknowledged even by his enemies to be a genuine Christian.

While such good testimony was being borne within the Christian community, it was winning the approval of intelligent and influential observers. In 1859 Lord Elphinstone, governor of Bombay, on an official visit to Ahmednagar voluntarily came to the mission schools and emphasized his approval of them with a generous gift, as did also his successor, Sir Bartle Frere, in 1863. And when, during the Civil War in the United States, British friends in India joined the native churches in extra gifts that the Board's work might not suffer,

they expressed their practical endorsement of the work which they had seen with their own eyes.

Another Struggle with Caste

The plague of caste continued to disturb mission life and to hinder Christian progress. A fresh outbreak of this trial occurred in the Marathi Mission in the early '60s. In one of the villages, when a young man from the Mang caste came to his first communion, the neighbors of the Christians filled the rear seats in the chapel to see what would happen, and when all drank of the cup they rushed from the room. In another village a Mang convert made a feast, inviting a catechist and all the church, purposely to test whether they would receive him to fellowship. A bitter persecution ensued, but the Christians did not shrink. Their neighbors would give them neither fire, wood, nor water; they threatened to drive them from the village and their business. Some families were broken up by the test, but the Christians stood firm and other Mangs were won. Sometimes the caste-bound onlookers commended the consistency of the Christians' action. When they saw Mahars and Mangs sitting together at the Lord's table, they said, "This is as it should be; we are now convinced of your sincerity."

Substantial Growth

At this time there were clear signs of a quickening life in the Marathi Mission. Doors were opening throughout both the Konkan and the Deccan. In the Ahmednagar district there were now five stations, and it was proved that village stations could be sustained. The new policy of pushing the missionaries out from the few centers was spreading the work; Christians appeared wherever the missionaries turned. Churches were increasing and members multiplying. In the last four years five times as many members had been added as in any similar period before. At the annual meeting of the mission, in 1860, more than 400 native Christians sat down at the table of the Lord. Adherents were now coming from all castes, Brahmans, Mahars, Mangs, and Bhils, as well as from the Mohammedans.

The railroad was helping to extend the mission. In 1861 there was a line from Bombay into the Deccan, and the several stations, including one just established at Sholapur, were all connected by telegraph. The Marathi Mission was now formed out of the hitherto independent missions at Bombay, Ahmednagar, and Satara; Kolapur being discontinued as outside the pale of British authority.

Developing Native Leadership

To meet the responsibilities of this quickened life the mission force was quite inadequate. It had been depleted by deaths and other removals and but slightly reenforced. Only seven men were in the field in 1868. It was, therefore, doubly fortunate that the creation of a native pastorate, which the deputation had urged a decade earlier, now received the hearty approval of the churches. At first they had been reluctant to accept others than missionaries for their pastors; the change of feeling was so sudden and strong as to amount to an epoch in the mission's history. In a short time seven men were ordained in churches to which they were called; their work approved itself to all and the victory was won. This movement carried with it the development of self-support; the self-governing church should maintain itself. In 1874 the church at Sholapur started as a self-supporting body, the first of its kind in the Bombay Presidency.

In these and other ways there were unmistakable signs that Christianity was working into the native life and being adapted to its situation and needs. A striking instance of the mingling of the new faith with the old forms appeared in the adaptation by Marathi Christians of the *Kirttan*, a Hindu exercise in which a *gosavi*, or religious teacher, celebrates the praises of his god with both vocal and instrumental music. Such an adapted *Kirttan* was composed by a native Christian on the subject of the Man of Calvary and sung at the mission anniversary at Ahmednagar in 1862. Here was an avenue to men's hearts particularly adapted to the people of India. All the East loves poetry; the Tamil people, tiring of a plain

address, would listen willingly to the same thing in verse. In Madura and Ceylon as well as in the Marathi Mission Christian natives began to compose Christian songs.

The Revival in Madura, 1860–61

While such advances were being made in the Marathi field, the Madura Mission was rejoicing in a pervasive religious awakening. The need of it had been a weight on the missionaries' hearts, the burden of much prayer. Suddenly the presence of a new spirit was felt. Beginning in an adjoining field of the Church Missionary Society, it soon appeared in the American Board mission near Tirumangalam. Mr. Merrick found there in January, 1861, such scenes as he had never before witnessed in India, and such as recalled revivals in the homeland. There was great seriousness, a deep sense of sin, earnest inquiry, and the breaking down of barriers. Without warning, at Pasumalai Seminary students were found in tears bewailing their sins. The missionaries sought to quiet excitement, but feelings were too intense to be suppressed. For the remaining days of the school term but little study or work could be maintained. Day and night, teachers and pupils were absorbed in the concerns of religion. So deep and effective was this revival that its force was not broken by the school vacation; its influence was carried to the homes of the pupils, and returned with them at the new term. The girls' boarding-school at Madura was also stirred. Within two years 170 members were added to the churches.

Development of the Mission

The new educational policy recommended by the deputation was loyally attempted and followed for a while. Provision was made for various grades of students in the seminary, and most of the instruction was kept in the vernacular. In the effort to develop the village work, new emphasis was put upon their schools. But the situation soon became so unsatisfactory that it was necessary to make readjustments. Small boarding-schools, sometimes one for each sex, were organized in 1865 at stations

where there were resident missionaries. Through these station schools it was meant to discover boys and girls of promise who might be trained to be leaders of their people. By 1870 Pasumalai Seminary was made distinctively a theological training-school, and the girls' boarding-school at Madura was transferred thither, to become a female seminary preparing the future wives of native helpers. The native agency was developing fast. By 1868 five classes could be named: pastors, catechists, readers, teachers of boarding and station schools, and masters and mistresses of the common schools. The church life showed the quickening effect of the revival; membership was growing at a more rapid rate; self-support was being pressed. The generous giving of some churches and individuals impressed the missionaries. Many accepted the law of the tithe, which the native helper, Abraham, championed, quoting as authority his ancestor who gave tithes to Melchizedek.

The missionaries here, as in West India, had been encouraged by the deputation to more systematic touring. The work in the centers was absorbing; it seemed as though they could not attempt more; they called loudly for reenforcements, and for this type, touring missionaries. But not getting them, they went at it themselves. By 1864 they had formed a plan of systematic itineration which looked to the evangelizing of the entire field. So far as circumstances would permit, all the missionaries were expected to engage in it. From June to August they went forth by twos, taking native catechists with them. So they visited over 300 villages and preached to 20,000 persons, distributing books and papers as they had opportunity.

A new and rewarding field of labor was thus opened as new territory was explored and acquaintance widened. Encouraging signs appeared that idolatry was losing power in some sections. Few new temples were rising; it was increasingly difficult at the festivals to find those who would draw the

idol car. In one place a reduction in the size of the car was proposed that it might be drawn more easily, but this the Brahmans refused. The waning of idolatry did not mean in all cases an inclination toward Christianity. Missionaries found a temper which they regarded as a transitional infidelity, making the time favorable for pressing the gospel. Happy were the men and women called of God to spend their lives at this task; they marveled that others were not eager to join them.

Upbuilding in Ceylon, 1860

Mission work in Ceylon was now in its second stage. The novelty of Christianity had passed; the zeal of the early converts had cooled somewhat, as happens in older Christian lands. Among the people there was less opposition, but more indifference. Christianity had been given a place in the land with Hinduism and Mohammedanism; it was proper that it should be practised by those who had accepted it, but not pressed upon those of other faiths. The chill of this prevailing temper passed at length as fresh revivals came, not so intense as in earlier years, but more widely effective. The villages all over the field now felt the influence; little by little the churches grew stronger and more efficient. Their liberality was notable. In 1867 the Batticotta church became independent, two of its members agreeing each to pay a month's salary of the pastor, and a third as much annually as under his old religion he would pay for ceremonies for his deceased parents.

In the year 1867 ten churches were organized, and when another outbreak of cholera came and the station routine was broken up, the missionaries being absorbed in relief work, the care of churches and outlying districts was in good measure assumed by the church members. Native pastors and teachers took increasing direction of work in the villages, even conducting the moonlight preaching services which have been a feature of the work in Ceylon, and maintaining the house to house visitation, also a characteristic of this mission's method. Even in that preoccupied year, 1867, there were 11,000 calls thus

made by traveling colporters, and more than three times that number of personal conversations with adults in their local fields, while the daily calls of village teachers and catechists reached 13,000 in one station alone.

Meanwhile other forms of activity were developing. Dr. S. F. Green, with no such hospital or equipment as every medical missionary now deems essential, was doing important work, conducting a dispensary, preparing medical books, teaching a medical class, and treating over a thousand patients, besides preaching the gospel to all who came within his reach.

While, in conforming to the new policy of the Board, the higher schools of this mission had suffered loss both in numbers and influence, the village vernacular schools, sixty in number, were flourishing, with over 2000 pupils in them. The higher schools had found a new and fine career in preparing students for direct Christian work, and the desire for higher general education was again beginning to press its claim. In 1867 the native Christians of different Protestant missions proposed a Christian college; the American Board missionaries were asked to serve as trustees, and the sum of $25,000 was solicited as a fund to start Jaffna College.

As the Ceylon Mission moved into the '70s it was evident that it had won a people to the service of Christianity. A Christian Vernacular Education Society, cooperating with the three mission boards in the land, was one signal help to the missionaries; another was a native Evangelical Society, into which was poured the deepening religious zeal of the churches. This was their "board of foreign missions," conducting work in the islands south of Jaffna, and holding the hearts of its constituency as surely as does the American Board. The projected Jaffna College was begun in 1872, and its prosperity was immediate, both in students and support exceeding all expectations. By 1878 its certificates were recognized by the principal medical officer in Ceylon as of equal value with the

India University matriculation certificates. The care of mission schools was now given over to a Board of Education, composed of pastors and laymen, acting in cooperation with the government.

When Dr. Levi Spaulding died, in 1873, fifty-four years after he sailed from America, and after rendering longer active service than any other missionary of the Board, he had witnessed almost the entire process of a mission, from its planting on a foreign shore to its incorporation into the life of a people. Limited in area as it was, the Ceylon Mission could probably be said with truth to be "a field thoroughly worked beyond that of any other mission of the American Board." The missionaries began to think that it could soon be turned over entirely to the native church.

Madras Closed, 1866

The Madras Mission since its opening in 1836 had been particularly the headquarters for the publication work for Tamil-speaking peoples. For nearly thirty years Miron Winslow, its scholar, and Phineas Hunt, its printer, with occasional help from some colleagues, issued a remarkable stream of Christian literature. Winslow's life work, a Tamil-English dictionary, the most notable work of its kind at that time in any language of India, was completed in 1862. When, in 1864, after forty-five years of service, Mr. Winslow died at Cape Town, on furlough to the homeland, it was felt that the time had come to close this mission, whose special service was done. The printing establishment, developed until it was valued at $28,000, now passed into other hands, and Mr. Hunt, "without hesitation," as he wrote, "and with pure delight," pushed on to become the printer of the North China Mission.

Woman's Work for Woman

It was in the '70s that the reports from the fields in India and Ceylon began to tell of new efforts by the women of the missions for the women of the land. In the years preceding it had not been found easy to reach the women through the usual forms of mis-

sionary work. At length the advent of the Bible woman, a native Christian worker, giving part or all of her time to reading the Scriptures and teaching gospel truths in the homes of the people, pointed the way of success. With the organization of the Woman's Board of Missions and the appointment of unmarried missionary ladies, work for women became a distinct department of labor. The way was readily opened for the unmarried women of the mission to visit the homes even of the rich and high caste to instruct the women there. Soon they had created a hunger for knowledge; before long, more calls than could be met came from women of high-caste families to be taught to read. The lower castes were likewise fired with a zeal to learn. In a village in Jaffna every woman but one, who was prevented by poor eyesight, was learning to read. Under the direction of the missionary ladies, the number of Bible women rapidly increased. In some of the stations, notably in the Marathi Mission, where no women were employed at first, the wives of pastors and catechists undertook this work so far as home cares would allow.

With the touring of the American women into villages for tent meetings, a new interest appeared; in one village they met as many as 800 of their sex. There was special value in reaching the women of Ceylon; for they were the true property holders, real estate being largely the dowry of the women, handed down from mother to daughter, and not to be touched without their consent. To reach the women was to win immense aid in the furtherance of the gospel. That these favored daughters of the West should come to share their blessings with the burdened womanhood of the East made deep impression. In thus addressing more directly the women of India and Ceylon, the missionaries were touching one of the most vulnerable spots both in the religious and social life of these lands.

It is a happy and most Christian fact that from the first missionary work in India tended to draw together the different

bodies of native workers and of Christian churches. In the days of weakness and peril, when the missionaries were compelled "to hang together lest they should hang separately," there were fine examples of fellowship and comity. And so there were on a larger scale, now that the several missions were established and prospering. It was a red-letter day for the church of Christ in India when, in 1871, 150 representative men of the native churches of the region met in Bombay and formed a Christian Alliance to promote their common interests and duties. Again, the following year, the American Board was fully represented in the great missionary conference held at Allahabad, where came together missionaries from twenty different societies at work in various parts of the empire. Here all met without distinction; discussion was broad and generous; at the communion service brethren sat together whose denominations were in the homeland separated by fixed barriers. With the spirit of comity and cooperation thus prevailing, the Board could bear more patiently the occasional irruptions into its field by one or two societies, whose interpretation of their mission drove them to disregard the established work of their brethren of other bodies.

The Spirit of Union

The advance of the missions in this period was marked in one way by the opportunities to present Christianity to the educated classes. Opposition even of the fanatic sort was not bygone. So late as 1868, in the Marathi Mission, when two Brahmans, of Sholapur, became Christians, a mob stormed the chapel where they were, beat some native Christians until the blood ran, and carried off the converts as captives. But it was not uncommon to find educated men of the highest caste ready to show courtesies and to give attention to missionaries as they spoke on themes of Christianity. At the same time preaching to the masses of the people was continually developed, and street preaching was pushed with new earnestness, notably in Satara and

A Widening Influence

Bombay. The latter city had ever been a hard field to develop by direct missionary work, but even there the evangelistic work was now pushed, particularly by this street preaching. Audiences were made up chiefly of the middle classes; oftentimes villagers on visits to the city would stop to listen. No controversy or tumult was allowed; if interruptions came, a hymn was sung until quiet attention was restored.

In the Madura Mission the policy prevailed of village congregations as distinct from churches. In many places there had never yet been a baptism, and there were no clear and consistent Christian lives; only a group of weak and needy people, willing to receive instruction, who had left the temple worship and desired to be enrolled as adherents of the Christian religion. By 1870 the effect of this policy was apparent; all the villages of the Madura Collectorate were open to the gospel; during that year 1300 villages were visited, and 70,000 people listened to the Christian message. The value of such itineracies grew on the missionaries; some of them produced significant and encouraging results.

A Famine and a Harvest

So the period closed with Christianity displaying its power against the ancient faiths of the land. Notwithstanding the fact that few temples were building and some were falling into decay, their revenues declining and pilgrimages becoming few, Hinduism was by no means dead. But Christianity was tremendously alive, commanding increased attention and winning ever-widening respect. During the years 1876–77 a prolonged drought in South India brought on a desperate famine. At the same time a shortage of funds in the Board's treasury reduced appropriations and added to the embarrassment of the situation. Notwithstanding the increased burden, the unconquerable missionaries essayed the extra task of famine relief. The report for the year told of special evangelistic efforts, visits to heathen homes, and the pushing of itineracies by missionaries and native preachers, who sought to take advantage of the new approachableness of

the hunger-stricken masses. Their reward came the following year in such a religious awakening as the several missions of southern India had never before known. It was estimated that during the year not less than 60,000 idolaters cast away their idols and came under Christian instruction. While in the Madura Mission the impetus was not felt so much as in other fields farther north, yet the awakening here was notable, bringing not only numbers to the churches, but increasing gifts from a Christian community that had been plunged into still deeper poverty. Although there came some reaction, as often after such times of revival, the ingathering continued, and the period closes, for this mission as for the others allied with it, in gratitude and good hope.

A comparison of the situation in all these fields at the beginning and end of this period shows strikingly the change that had been wrought in the emphasis upon the development of the native agency. Putting side by side the figures of 1850 and 1880, it appears that during this generation there was practically no increase in mission stations, but a leap from eleven to 291 in the number of outstations; the Madura Mission advancing from two to 206, and the Marathi from three to seventy. During the same time churches increased more than three fold. Whereas at the beginning of the period there were but twenty-three churches and no ordained or settled pastors, and less than seventy native helpers of all descriptions, while practically nothing was being given by the churches and native Christians toward the support of their institutions, in 1880 there were seventy organized churches, thirty-eight pastors, 155 native preachers, 638 native helpers of all descriptions, and native contributions amounting to between $5000 and $6000. In all the missions some churches were assuming entire support of their pastors, while the schools, especially those of higher grade, were deriving fees and benefactions from the people they were founded to benefit. Books and papers were now sold rather than scattered freely; the

general condition of the Christian communities as to homes, clothing, and general prosperity was manifestly improved. Christianity had become established at the end of the period in a far different sense from what it was at the beginning.

Chapter X

IN THE LAND OF THE DAKOTAS

The number of the American Board's missions among the North American Indians was once as high as fifteen; in the period from 1850 to 1880 there was left but one vigorous mission, that to the Dakotas. The discontinuance or transfer of these missions, begun in 1835, went steadily on in the new period, and from the same causes. In 1858 the mission to the Abenaquis in Canada was suspended because of the dying out of the tribe; in 1859 work among the Choctaws, and the year after among the Cherokees and Tuscaroras, was relinquished on the ground that these tribes were so far civilized and Christianized as to be no longer foreign missionary fields; the mission to the Senecas and the difficult and dwindling effort for the Ojibwas, upon the withdrawal of the Presbyterians from the Board, in 1870, were transferred to their care.

Reduction of Indian Missions

An important factor in the decision to close both Cherokee and Choctaw Missions was undoubtedly the increasing disturbance of the slavery issue; the embarrassment occasioned by the attitude of the missionaries to the Indians in the earlier years was now increased by the action of the tribes themselves. The Choctaw Council in 1854 passed a law forbidding anyone to teach a slave or the children of a slave upon pain of removal from the nation, if he was not a citizen; similar restrictions were made by the Cherokees. If these drastic laws were to be enforced, all agreed that the Board could not continue its work. Efforts were made to proceed quietly in hope that the situation would improve. But the tension did not relax; the

slavery question was growing more divisive and urgent. The missionaries were subjected to an intolerable espionage. As there were now in proximity to these Indian communities other denominations with whom they could form more congenial associations, the Board felt that it could withdraw from its work without sacrificing the interests involved.

In closing these missions which it had maintained for over forty years, the Board had no sense of failure. The expenditure had been large; the Cherokee Mission alone had cost $350,000, and 113 missionaries, men and women, ministers, teachers and artisans, had put their lives into it. But the returns had been large; among the Choctaws alone 2700 had confessed Christ; the saving influence of Christianity upon the life of that tribe no statistics could express. Not all had been accomplished that had been hoped; undeniably some of the vices of civilization had been adopted along with its arts and refinements; there had been disappointing lapses and misbehaviors of Indian Christians. The progress of these tribes had been somewhat halting and inconstant; yet, on the whole, they had made real advance. It was not a mournful or humiliating duty, therefore, to close these missions. They were not abandoned; the Board's work was done; the era of evangelizing was past; it had been demonstrated that the red man, rightly handled, was amenable to the gospel, and, moreover, that the only effectual way of dealing with the Indian was to meet him with the gospel; and not in word only, but in deed and truth.

It was an impressive coincidence that the closing of these missions was marked by the passing from earth of that devoted friend and untiring servant of the Cherokee Mission, Samuel Worcester, who died in the mission in 1859. During thirty-five years of service, beginning at Brainerd, in the old Cherokee nation, he had endured, out of love for this people, such hardships, suffering, and reproach as no pen can describe. To the privations of a pioneer in the wilderness were added a cruel and unjust imprisonment, the harassment of the govern-

ment's shifty course with the Indians, and all those interruptions, delays, and obstacles which from the beginning had attended mission work among the aborigines. The service which he rendered to the Cherokees is representative of what was wrought among many of the tribes by the men and women who went to them as missionaries of this Board. The preaching of his voice and of his life, the Scriptures and the tracts he published in the Cherokee tongue, the long influence of his presence with them, his body laid to rest beside their own dead, all were to abide with them in the new times when mission and missionary had both departed. A token of the hold these missionaries had on their people appeared when, in 1873, fourteen years after the withdrawal, Dr. and Mrs. S. L. Hobbs, who had been medical missionaries to the Choctaws, upon repeated request were sent back to them by the Board to help repair the damage of war times.

The Dakota Field

The Board had left then, of its Indian missions, practically but the one to the Sioux or Dakota tribe. Though their territory was still on the very edge of the frontier, the white settler was already approaching with greedy eyes. In 1851, by a new treaty, all of what is now western Minnesota was ceded to the government, and the removal of the Indians was ordered to the Sioux Reservation in the territory of Dakota. The peril and burden of removal confronted the mission as well as the tribe. Five of its six stations were in the region to be abandoned. The opening of one of the new stations at Yellow Medicine in the autumn of 1853 affords a glimpse of the labor and heroism which these transfers entailed. The journey of Dr. Williamson and the three women and four children in his company took twelve days by boat and six days more overland. The house supposed to be ready for them had not even a roof on it; its interior was but a single room, without stove or fireplace. Yet this was their home during a winter of unusual severity, when a supply-train perished in the snow. For six weeks the house-

hold lived chiefly on potatoes and hominy. But the missionary was not daunted. "I have never for a moment regretted our coming here," he wrote; "I never felt more able to pray for the Dakotas, or greater willingness to labor and suffer for the sake of extending Christ's kingdom." When the spring opened and they could move about they found a quicker response than among the Indians left behind. Soon a congregation of twenty, including the chief, attended the preaching services; Miss Williamson had forty pupils in her school. The transplanted mission throve and grew. A chapel was built at Yellow Medicine without cost to the Board. The Lac-qui-parle station was transferred to Hazelwood, where in 1856 was formed the "Hazelwood Republic," a community governed in accordance with a written constitution, and adopting Christian civilization; a similar community developed at Redwood.

The work of reestablishment was thus being bravely undertaken when a sudden outbreak upset all plans and for a time seemed to have destroyed the mission. The storm had been slowly gathering. Many of the high-spirited Sioux cherished a deep and growing hatred of the whites. Cheated by traders, driven about by the government, they were ready to be played upon by the medicine men and the young braves who lusted for war. The spirit of revolt grew silently. A warning of what might happen appeared in the year 1857, in the tragedy of Spirit Lake, when a roving band of famished Indians raided a settlement and in the fight that ensued killed most of its people. The one relieving feature of the tragedy was the fact that two of the four women who were carried off were recaptured and returned to their friends by Christian Indians associated with the mission.

The Sioux War, 1862

Five years later, in 1862, came the terrible uprising that brought on the Sioux war. The situation at the time was very tense. The United States was absorbed in the Civil War; Indian affairs were of necessity neglected. Annuities

were not paid; rations were delayed; in the pinch of hunger thousands of Indians crowded into the agencies, only to be put off once more with rosy promises, and to be advised by scornful traders to "eat dirt." Meanwhile stories came of disaster to the Union cause. "The Great Father was whipped." One day a band of Sissitons broke into the storehouse and began to help themselves. The soldiers turned the howitzer upon them. It looked like war then and there. Only by the good offices of Mr. Riggs was a fight averted. But not for long. In the middle of August trouble broke out again, beginning in a grog-shop in a white settlement. The next morning the uprising was general. The signal was passed for a general massacre. The Christian Indians who had boldly opposed the outbreak in the council were now in danger of their lives; they could no longer protect the missionaries, whose only safety was instant flight. After a long, perilous, and exhausting journey, in which they passed burning stacks and houses in the very path of the destroying Sioux, and yet were marvelously delivered from the hands of their enemies, the refugee party of forty-four at last escaped to St. Paul.

The Church in Prison and in Camp

Once started on war the Sioux were fiends let loose. They swept the region with torch and tomahawk. It was proper that the action of the government in subduing them should be stern and decisive. Unhappily the leaders escaped, and in the trial of the hundreds of prisoners who were taken and of all those arrested on suspicion, action was so swift and violent as to amount to a travesty of justice. Even sentences of death were so sweeping that President Lincoln felt called upon to revise them. Four hundred manacled Sioux were taken to temporary imprisonment at Mankato, where thirty-eight were executed. The women and children, with the men relieved of suspicion, about 1500 in all, were sent down to Fort Snelling (St. Paul) to a winter camp. It was when the outlook for the mission seemed darkest that the mercy of God appeared in a great and

genuine religious awakening. It showed itself first among the prisoners at Mankato, but Dr. Riggs, upon going to his family at Fort Snelling, found signs of it there. Humbled, disheartened, in the day of tribulation the proud Sioux were ready to listen to the gospel of Christ. Both prison and camp became schools of Christian instruction. Those who could read taught the others. A Christian elder of the Yellow Medicine Church, imprisoned on suspicion, was able to serve as an evangelist to his fellow prisoners. Some of the missionaries added their help. In the spring, as a result of that memorable revival, over 200 Dakotas were baptized and added to the church in one day. A similar result came at Fort Snelling. The harvest of that winter was an amazement and joy to the worn missionaries.

As the prisoners were removed from Mankato to Davenport, Iowa, in the spring of 1863, they went in chains to be sure, but freemen in Christ Jesus. As their boat went down the river they could be heard singing the Fifty-first Psalm to the tune of Old Hundred. At this time the winter camp at Fort Snelling was broken and 1300 Dakotas, together with 1800 Winnebagoes, were transferred to a place called Crow Creek on the upper Missouri. The story of their life there, far from their old home, in sickness and fearful mortality, during three dry and pinched years, while waiting for the men to be released from the Davenport prison, and for permission to settle in northeastern Nebraska, somewhat nearer their old land, is one of the pitiful chapters in Indian history. Yet, during all this period of rather idle and unsettled life, neither company abandoned the religion which they had accepted. On the Sunday before they were released the prisoners celebrated the communion for the last time as a church in prison. And when the reunion came, this strange church of more than 500 members, ex-prisoners and their families, was set up in the new home as the "Pilgrim Church," so called from the vicissitudes of its history.

Normal conditions being resumed by the location of the Dakotas at their new home, it came to be seen what a change had been wrought, and that the seeming defeat had been really a rebirth of the mission. Native leaders and helpers now appeared. Lives sternly disciplined were able to bear responsibility. There were promising youth to be trained, and a Christian civilization to be developed. Soon new locations were occupied, more stations and outstations begun, churches formed with native pastors, and schools established. In 1867 a "select school" was opened by Messrs. Pond and Williamson at Santee Agency, which grew at length into the Normal Training School, under Rev. A. L. Riggs, and became the center of the Board's educational work for the Indians.

The Re-established Mission

The Santee and Sissiton agencies now grew to be established and measurably self-reliant Christian communities. Government schools reduced somewhat the field of mission schools. New stations were opened, in 1872, to the north at Fort Sully, among a branch of the tribe as yet unreached, and in 1876 at Fort Berthold, still farther north, among Mandans and other tribes much more degraded than the Sioux. In 1882 a committee of the Board, visiting this latter station with other Indian missions, saw here the primitive oval lodges of earth with grass growing on them, and with poles above bearing buffalo skulls and charms against evil. Over the medicine lodge a Sioux scalp dangled. Amid great discouragement Rev. Charles L. Hall undertook the work in this difficult but desperately needy field, as heathen as any community under the sun.

The lot of the Indians in those days was not fortunate for the growth of Christian character. Held as dependents of the government, existing in part on its bounty, tethered on reservations, subject to the orders of shifting agents, and often ill-used by unscrupulous white men, they were constantly tempted or discouraged into misbehavior. Many of the Indian agents

were helpful and sympathetic to the missionaries. In 1872 the missionary societies were even permitted to name certain agents. The government sincerely tried to correct the abuses of the agency system. Yet many things happened that were disheartening and injurious. At the same time clear gains were made. Secretary Treat, visiting Santee in 1872, was delighted with what he found; the Indians had just received certificates of title to their land, and it was good to see them occupying it like other settlers. The church, notwithstanding many removals, had 225 members, a worthy pastor, and well-appearing, intelligent officers. Ten years had certainly wrought a transformation among the Sioux.

Church Fellowship

At length these Indian churches came into fellowship with their white brethren of the home mission churches. The Congregational Association of Dakota territory met at the Santee agency in 1873. When the same year the American Board held its annual meeting for the first time in the Northwest, at Minneapolis, it was on foreign missionary ground of thirty years before. One of the impressive features of the occasion was the attendance of seventeen Dakotas and four Ojibwas with their missionaries; their presence gave point and power to the appeals of Governor Buckingham and Generals Whittlesey and Howard for more vigorous work for the Indians.

More Indian Experiments

Another conflict between the Dakotas and the United States authorities, in 1876, did not directly touch the missions or the communities they were reaching. But it stirred anew the question as to the final disposition of the Dakotas and raised new apprehensions concerning the mission work.

At this time the desire of the government and people of the United States to find a better way of dealing with the Indians, stimulated as it was by the activities of the Indian Rights Association and kindred organizations, led to the forming of certain colonies like the Flandreau, on the eastern border

of Dakota, made up from Santee in 1877, whose members left their tribal relations to settle on United States land. Receiving 160-acre homesteads and protected with all rights of citizenship, they began to farm and carry on other pursuits, to build their churches and schools, and to live precisely like white settlers. The immediate success of this advance movement gave courage to the missionaries in their task of preparing leaders for the new era and urging homestead rights for the Indian.

The Maturing Work

The organization of a native missionary society in 1877, with the commissioning of Rev. David Greycloud to break new ground at Standing Rock Agency, was a sign of a growth in the Dakota churches. Another mile-stone in the history was the appearance of the entire Bible in the Dakota language in 1879. A few days afterward the veteran Dr. Williamson, who had a large part in the translation of the Old Testament, having closed the crowning labor of his devoted and arduous career, fell on sleep. He had seen the transformation of savage hordes into Christian communities, and he had been privileged to have an eminent part in the accomplishment of this change.

After a careful investigation of the Indian fields, in 1882, by a deputation consisting of Dr. A. C. Thompson, C. C. Burr, Esq., and Secretary John O. Means, they presented an exceedingly full and informing report to the annual meeting of that year. Each of the fields was described at length as to its history, condition, and outlook, the conclusion being reached that the era of foreign missions in Santee and Sissiton was passed, while at Fort Berthold and Devil Lake and Standing Rock, where the Indians were still for the most part in pagan degradation, the work should be pressed with greater vigor. An especial opportunity appeared at the agencies along the Missouri River through the surrender of Sitting Bull and his hostiles; it seemed that once more the plowshare of war had broken the ground for the gospel's harvest. It was therefore

recommended by the deputation that if the work at the older stations could be transferred efforts should be concentrated on the others. While the Prudential Committee was thus considering the suggestion of transfer, it received a proposal from the American Missionary Association to take over the work of the entire Dakota Mission on terms that might be mutually agreeable, and with the thought that the Association should thenceforth limit itself to work in the homeland. After deliberation and conference the Board accepted this proposal, and on January 1, 1883, the transfer was made. From that time on the story of this mission to the Dakotas, of its maintenance, enlargement, and signal achievements, is part of the history of this honored sister society.

Chapter XI

IN TURKEY AND THE LEVANT

The *firman* of 1850, which put evangelical Christians on a footing with other Christian communities in the empire, was hailed as a charter of religious liberty. It soon appeared that not all was gained that had been hoped. The sultan held the execution of the decree in his own hand, and he was in no hurry to act. However, circumstances soon compelled him to enforce it and even to make larger admissions. Another imperial *firman* in 1853 required of all governors and other authorities that the charter of 1850 be straitly enforced. The outbreak of the Crimean War the next year occasioned especial alarm to the missionaries. But their fears were happily dispelled, for, aside from the distraction of thought and some disorder among the more lawless races, this war scarcely interfered with the Board's undertaking. No missionary was driven from his post; no mission establishment was injured. Indeed, the event was to their advantage, as there was forced from the sultan in 1856 the famous Hatti Humayoun, a *firman* granting full freedom of conscience and religious profession to all his subjects. Religious liberty was now secured, at least by decree; if it was not fully granted in fact for long years, the principle was admitted; patience and skilful persistence could secure its operation.

The Changed Situation

The changed attitude of the government toward the work of the missionaries was not so remarkable as was that of the people. In 1830 Smith and Dwight did not find one evan-

gelical Christian in all their travels over the empire; in 1850 there were known to be "Protestants" in at least fifty centers in Asiatic Turkey, and in such number that ten churches were already organized, some of them having native pastors. The Armenian reformation, like an irresistible tide, was carrying evangelical Christianity to every corner of the land. Mr. A. H. Layard declared in the British Parliament, in 1853, that there was no considerable place in all Turkey where the influence of this reformation was not felt. The President of the Armenian National Council said to Mr. Dwight: "Now is the time for you to work for the Armenian people. Such an opportunity as you now enjoy may soon pass away and never more return. You should greatly enlarge your operations. Where you have one missionary, you should have ten; and where you have one book, you should put ten books in circulation."

Armenia Wide Open

The missionaries, working at full speed, were unable to meet the calls. They dreaded the coming of the mail because of their inability to meet the importunities of waiting cities and districts. The Board felt the challenge of this urgent opportunity in a field peculiarly committed to its care and instructed the Prudential Committee to prosecute the Armenian Mission to the utmost. But with much help or with little, the reformation went on. The story of its progress in some of the new and influential centers almost staggers belief. Aintab, scarcely known by name in 1845, had ten years later a church of 141 members; there were more Protestants there than in Constantinople. The men who laid the foundations, like Dr. Azariah Smith and Rev. Benjamin Schneider, were master workmen. And Aintab had not only numbers but life. Native evangelists, driven from place to place, carried the gospel to the villages of the district with irrepressible zeal. Men of Aintab went forth to other towns to work at their trades and to preach Christ; they could not be treated as vagrants and everywhere they won a hearing. The first building for worship

erected by Protestant Christians in the Ottoman empire was the great structure of stone, accommodating more than 2000 people, now the First Church at Aintab.

The coming of the reformation to Marsovan and its course there were typical. One of its citizens in 1833 bought in Beirut a few tracts, and read them, not knowing what they were. Years afterward, meeting a missionary on tour, he recognized the similarity of teaching. Not daring to speak out before the *Vartabed,* he sought the missionary and they prayed together. When Mr. Powers visited Marsovan, in 1851, he met the man and found that the way had been opened for a general welcome. Soon this first inquirer was taken from his bed at midnight and sent to a vile prison; upon his release he stimulated further inquiry as to the new teaching. Another visit from a missionary was followed by a general awakening, which persecution only increased. A copy of the sultan's *firman* of 1850 at last reached the city and brought protection to the evangelical community.

Laborers for the Harvest

The missionaries did what they could to meet the immense demand of the situation, but were at their wits' end to provide for the waiting fields. Contrary to hope, the great revival of 1857 in the United States did not increase the supply of missionaries. The closing of an attempted mission to the Jews in European Turkey set free a few workers to reenforce the Armenian Mission.

This work for Jews, begun at Salonica, in 1849, by Revs. E. M. Dodd and Justin Parsons, had met with disappointing response. Impressions were gained concerning Bulgaria and Macedonia that were to bear fruit later in a rewarding work in those regions. But the missionaries found the Jews impervious to their message. Feeling that they were still the beloved of Heaven, and that their tithings constituted holiness, these people were punctilious in their forms of religion while really worshiping gold. The station at Salonica proved very unhealthy; English and Scotch societies seemed ready and better

able to work the field, and in 1856 it was decided to withdraw the missionaries to meet the importunate need of the Armenians.

In this emergency the demand for native workers and leaders increased. Native students were hurried into the ministry, and still opportunities were being lost for lack of men. New schools for training native helpers were urged. Bebek Seminary became of growing importance. The Crimean War brought new fame to it and to Dr. Hamlin, its principal. By making bread for the soldiers in the military hospital at Scutari, and setting up a laundry to wash their clothes, Dr. Hamlin won the regard and confidence not only of military officials, but of the people to whom his energy and ingenuity thus opened new means of livelihood. Over $25,000 was cleared from the industries brought into existence by the Crimean War and conducted by Dr. Hamlin, who made of this sum a building fund, with which thirteen churches were erected to aid in the Armenian reformation. By the close of the war the seminary was rendering notable help in the training of native leaders. Though located at Constantinople, many of its students came from the far interior, and graduates were scattered as widely. Its more than 100 students were addressed in three languages, Armenian, Greek, and English. Two young men who came in 1852 from Diarbekir in the face of tremendous difficulties to gain an education at Constantinople were a few years later to be found, one as pastor of the young church at Harpoot, the other filling the same office at Diarbekir. A sweeping revival in the seminary in 1859 won to Christ almost every student hitherto but nominally Christian.

The work of native agents thus pushed to the front was highly gratifying; it overcame the misgivings of missionaries as to trusting them with so large responsibilities, and oftentimes made a powerful impression upon the communities they served.

The evangelization of the Armenians was now progressing by leaps. Tocat and Cesarea were occupied in 1854; in 1857 Mr. Dunmore wrote that forty more men were needed as teachers and preachers in that region. By 1860, houses of worship were secured at Marash, Kessab, and Killis. The people of the last-named place bore all the expense, turning out at night to dig the foundations by torchlight.

The Enlarging Field

The rapid expansion soon required a division of the field. After separation into northern and southern Armenia in 1857, in 1860, at the annual meeting of the northern section in Harpoot, a further and threefold division into Eastern, Western, and Central Turkey was effected, which continues to this day. How rapid had been the growth in these years appears in the fact that at Harpoot where this meeting was held, and where there was then a church of thirty-six members, five years before there was not one acknowledged evangelical Christian.

Thus by 1861 the field of the Board's missions in Asiatic Turkey was extended practically to its present boundaries, and the gospel was being openly preached from one end of it to the other. Churches and schools were established and even higher education begun. Everything seemed ready for a quick advance; it looked as though the field could be carried by storm. It was not strange, perhaps, that the missionaries in 1860 began to anticipate the time when in that portion of Turkey no increase of missionaries would be needed; the native church would be able to maintain the growing work.

And it was not only among the Armenians that missionary effort was undertaken. After the Crimean War, it was possible to remove the mission's book depository from Pera across the Golden Horn into Stamboul, whereupon began a new era for publication. The *Avedaper*, a religious bi-monthly, was then started under the editorial care of Dr. Dwight, destined to become a permanent institution and in its different editions for various races to have wide influence all over the empire.

Publications were not only increased, but now were more and more circulated among the Mohammedans, toward whom the eyes of the mission turned with new expectancy. Direct work for them was quietly begun in 1856, Dr. Goodell having shrewdly concluded that the Turks were more anxious to prevent a demonstration than a conversion. Hundreds of copies of the Scriptures were sold yearly to Turks, and by 1860 results were appearing.[1]

Jonas King in Greece

While the Armenian Mission was full of enthusiasm and growing life, Rev. Jonas King was maintaining his lonely and, as it often seemed, unavailing mission in Greece. His career continued to the end one long conflict with the Greek hierarchy. Year after year told the same story, a succession of charges, arrests, trials, imprisonments, and releases. And always Dr. King was pushing his work just as far and as fast as he dared, pausing and even withdrawing temporarily when he must. It seemed in the hour of utmost need there was ever some relief. Officials would listen to his appeal, and suffer him when sick in prison to be removed to his own house under guard. Daniel Webster, as Secretary of State, Edward Everett, his successor, or Minister George P. Marsh, by direction of the President of the United States, would utter strong protests to the government of Greece when the missionary was subjected to unfair and oppressive trial. At length, after a particularly outrageous decision of the court against Mr. King, public sentiment turned strongly in his favor; congregations increased, and the reward of patience seemed to have come when the first theological class of six young Greeks and one Italian were preparing for the ministry under Dr. King's instruction. But in a few years there was another arrest and a dragging trial.

The eventful year, 1863, brought the election of a national assembly and the enthronement of the Protestant King George. One of the earliest acts of the new ruler was to send

[1] The narrative of this mission is resumed on page 215.

for Dr. King to administer the Lord's Supper to him in his palace chapel. It surely looked as though smoother times were in store for this mission. Though during that very year one of Dr. King's books was anathematized, he now felt that he was fighting his last missionary battle. Some promising evangelical leaders were appearing, like Messrs. Kalopathakes and Constantine, so that the missionary's energies during his closing years could be devoted to assisting them. At eventide it was light for this man whose day of toil had been storm-swept. At last Dr. King was able to call on the metropolitan bishop, who now received him with all courtesy and friendliness. In 1869 was summoned from earth this heroic, astute, and unconquerable pioneer of the American Board's missions in the Levant.

In Stormy Syria

The turbulent period in the history of the Syrian Mission was not over in 1850. The combination of Turkey's unstable politics and the racial and religious animosities of the peoples crowded together in this remote province did not favor orderly mission work. Lawless chiefs were continually provoking raids in the mountains, so that it was unsafe to venture outside the established centers. An outbreak of Turkish violence at Aleppo, in 1850, for a time broke up all intercourse between the missionaries and the jealous sects of oriental Christians. Evangelical communities were often left exposed to the malice of their enemies, and with disastrous effect. At Hasbeiya, when the villagers came in to a communion service, they were fully armed, and stacked their guns and hung up their swords in the court before entering the chapel.

And the difficulties were not all in fear of physical violence. There was a dogged unresponsiveness in the mass of the people hard to combat, one reason for which seemed to be the ingrained religiosity of the Syrians; the most evil-minded and vicious were satisfied with their own piety, so saturated were their customs and language with the forms of devotion.

In spite of such difficulties, the work went on through the faith and devotion of undaunted souls. Individuals were won; groups of disciples organized; boys and girls of promise were patiently taught. Simeon Calhoun, now in charge of the school at Abeih which Dr. Van Dyck had opened, was the "Saint of Mount Lebanon," on whose words Druze sheiks hung enthralled. From his teaching and mighty personal influence was beginning to come a stream of teachers and preachers to bless the region. And this modest seminary was the forerunner and inspirer of higher schools soon to follow. The word of the gospel was also being distributed far and wide. In 1860 appeared the Arabic version of the New Testament, wherein Dr. Van Dyck had completed the work of Dr. Eli Smith. At once it took precedence over all others, and went forth to win the admiring attention of all Arabic-speaking people throughout Syria, and even beyond, in Arabia itself, and in Egypt. In the same year Dr. William Thomson brought out his famous work, *The Land and the Book*, which quickened interest not only in the Bible, but in the peoples for whom its author had labored.

But Yet Gain

By such aids and methods Protestant communities were slowly built up. A glimpse which one missionary gives of a church service in a little village near Sidon shows in what small and simple habitations the living Church of Christ can abide and grow. "The room," he says, "was divided, by a slight difference in the height of the floor, into two parts; in one of which were quartered cattle of various sizes and descriptions, feeding and reclining, and in the other we worshiped. The audience was seated upon the floor, round a blazing fire; and as there was no place but the door for the entrance of the light, so there was no way for the exit of the smoke but through the same convenient opening. And yet I doubt if there assembled that day, in any courtly church at home, more eager listeners than gathered there, or those offering more acceptable prayer than their hearts presented."

It was when conditions of missionary work were thus slowly brightening that the sky suddenly turned black as night. Maronites and Druzes in the mountains were at each others' throats again; murders and massacres were daily occurrences. Fire and sword swept everything in their path. European nations soon became involved as they championed the cause of one or other of the combatants. Neighboring races were involved, as Kurds and Bedouins. The land was wrung with the madness and horror of the time. Christians of various sects were slaughtered by the thousand, even at such centers as Damascus and Baalbec. No missionary suffered any personal injury, and only a few Protestants at Hasbeiya, but now a stream of human want and misery began to flow into Beirut to overwhelm the sympathies of the mission workers. Over 50,000 souls hung upon charity for food and shelter. When the outburst of ancient feuds had spent its fury, all parties began again to persecute the Protestants; they were reviled, driven from business, stoned, imprisoned, threatened, tortured. Some yielded to their tormentors, but many endured.

Syria's Civil War, 1860

Slowly order was restored, and more peaceful times ensued. Syria at last began to feel the impress of European civilization, and to covet some of the prosperity and progress that were found in happier lands. By 1863 the missionaries could report a more peaceful year on the Lebanon. Even Hasbeiya ventured to rebuild its church, burned in the holocaust of 1860. But the scattered flock returned slowly. A widow in 1868 excused her absence from evening service because the houses about her were all in ruins and the hyenas prowled at night!

The Recovery

Better days, however, were dawning. Looking back over a decade it could be seen that much progress had been made. The mission had won a standing both with authorities and people; converts were stronger and the mission's equipment greatly improved. In particular, the Syrian Protestant College

at Beirut was opened in 1864, with Dr. Daniel Bliss as president, substantial friends in America, and a purpose to meet the call of the new times. Year by year henceforth it was to contribute its strain of strong, rich life, not only to the land of Syria, but far and wide, through Turkey, Egypt, and the entire Levant. Five years later a theological seminary was founded at Abeih, with Messrs. Calhoun, Eddy, and Jessup as its instructors. It was as the Syrian Mission was thus entering upon a new period in its life, with fairer prospects than ever before, and with the long, patient labor of years somewhat justified and rewarded, that in the transfers of 1870 this mission, with others, was taken over by the Presbyterians, with whom it had peculiarly close ties of relation. Its after-history thus belongs to the annals of the Board of Foreign Missions of the Presbyterian Church in the United States.

The Nestorian Mission

Like the Syrian Mission, the one to the Nestorians was destined to be transferred to the Presbyterians in the rearrangements of 1870. For it, also, the history of this time covers a stormy and burdened period. The announcement in 1851 of an edict of toleration, promising equal protection to all the Christian subjects of Persia, and the liberty to change their religion at will, was at once followed by new and disturbing interferences. The Roman Catholics became more hostile, Persian officials more arrogant and oppressive. Mr. Cochran was seized and robbed by a Kurdish chief, a new and alarming experience for a missionary when touring. The position of the missionaries was fast becoming intolerable when the assassination or deposition of Persian officials relieved the situation. Through this time of fiercer distress, the mission was aided in part by the powerful protection of foreign diplomats, and in yet larger part by the vitality of the gospel in the hearts of the Nestorians. Fresh revivals set forward the work, not only in the seminary, but all over the plain, in Urumia, and the mountain districts.

Responding to the call for education, seminaries for both sexes were filled. The Bible was now translated into the vernacular, and at least 2000 could read it intelligently. In Geog Tapa seventy adults set themselves to learn to read, offering prizes to those who should successfully teach them. Seventy-three free schools, with more than 1000 boys and 150 women and girls, were scattered over the plain.

Among the new, unmistakable signs was the liberal giving of the people. All the Nestorians were poor; on the bare mountains, when a man was asked how large was his field, he would say that he sowed a half-capful of grain, or perhaps only a third; if he could say that he sowed more than a capful he was called rich. Even on the plains there was probably not one person worth $2000. Yet here during the pinch of the War of the Rebellion in America the people gave unstintedly out of their utter poverty, in some cases bringing from their store of food or their few heirlooms and ornaments, offering them with outbursts of joy and gratitude.

The Native Preachers

A rapid increase in the number of native workers now saved this mission from collapse. For, despite some valuable reenforcements, from 1858 to 1860 there were heavy losses that sadly reduced the mission's strength. The poor people pleading for missionaries could not understand why it was so hard to get them. "Have you not a plenty of men in your great country, the new world?" they said; and mindful of the Crimean War, of which report came even to these lonely mountains, a chief added, "Are there not thousands of English now fighting for the sultan?"

It was a cause for rejoicing that in 1860 the mission could report a band of forty-three native leaders operating twenty-eight outstations. From that time the increase was even more rapid. In 1864 there were but seven missionaries in the field, but there were sixty Nestorian preachers. Some of these proved men of remarkable power, such as Deacon Tama, whose approach to a mountain village brought out the people,

literally spreading their garments in the way. Old and young would sit and listen by the hour in winter, at morning and evening, to hear him discourse on the love of Christ. To the aid and comfort of these faithful native helpers was added the good-will and support of some of the ecclesiastics, most of all of Mar Elias. When he died, in 1863, it was as though the mission had lost a loved member. Mr. Rhea wrote of him then: "All these traits of Christlike beauty combined to make a character which, in this weary land, was a constant rest to the toil-worn missionary, — an influence for good, continually streaming forth into the dárkness of spiritual death around him. God, who accurately weighs all men, only knows how much his kingdom in Persia has been advanced by Mar Elias, than whom the Nestorian Church never had a more spiritual and evangelical bishop."

A Wider Impression

The influence of this reawakened Christianity now began to be widely felt in the land, and even by others besides the Nestorians. Persian and Kurdish Mohammedans were not unaffected by this purer type of Christianity and, under the special care of Mr. Shedd, a quiet and effective work for Moslems was under way. Still the Persian government was not friendly or even tolerant, and, encouraged by the French Jesuits, issued another proscriptive edict against schools and publications. The hostility of the Papists was severe and unscrupulous; whole families even were poisoned by them in the effort to spread terror of the missionaries.

Growing Church Life

The purpose of this mission as of the others at work among the oriental Churches had been resolute not to withdraw congregations or to form separate organizations, but to strive to accomplish reform from within. So at first no evangelical churches had been established, or church rites instituted. By 1854 some converts had joined the missionaries in celebrating the Lord's Supper; at length a general invitation was given to such participation. As all

could not come to Urumia, little groups gathered in the villages over the plain for this service, which thus formed virtually new organizations. Some of these communion seasons were thrilling spectacles, the people gathering to spend the whole day in a sort of religious love-feast, and, at its close, assembling with quiet hearts about the table of their Lord.

After conference with Dr. Dwight and Mr. Wheeler, of Harpoot, in 1860–61, the policy of the mission was somewhat changed, as more responsibility was put upon native pastors, and their office was emphasized. It was still hoped to avoid a formal separation from the ancient church; yet it was difficult to prevent a break, and the situation was made more critical by the endeavors of the English High Church party to disrupt the evangelical movement by a reactionary campaign. Many of the evangelical communities were eager to withdraw from what seemed the hopeless formalism of their ancient church. Finally, at a general meeting of native helpers, in 1863, a plan was adopted that secured the essentials of a reformed church, and staved off the creating of a new organization. Now the outlook for continued union seemed more promising. The old missionary spirit of the Nestorians, which had stirred the heart of Stoddard to seek their reclamation, was revived, and in 1870 the first steps were taken toward the larger and outreaching life of the mission to the Nestorians. To mark this wider scope the name was now changed to the Mission to Persia.

The same year, 1870, marked the death of Justin Perkins, whose thirty-six years of service covered the entire period from the beginning of the mission to its transfer to the Presbyterians. Before his eyes a land vast and practically unknown had become familiar ground to the Christian world; its mountains and plains, cities, and villages had all been explored. Over a hundred workers had been trained and sent forth as heralds of the free gospel; seminaries had been equipped; 1000 pupils were gathered in the lower schools; a written language

and the Bible in the vernacular were a part of his own contribution to the higher life of the land. Woven in with this substantial record of accomplishment are abundant and moving stories of Christian heroism, in which conflicts and victories Dr. Perkins' name is written not only as sharer, but as leader. As Secretary Anderson said, he was both prophet and apostle to the Nestorians, warning them, like Elijah, of their besetting sins, and yearning over them with the gospel like Paul himself.

This mission, with such a heritage and outlook, the American Board transferred to the Presbyterians, retaining only that portion of the field in the mountains of Kurdistan which was most intimately connected with the Board's other missions in Turkey.

The Assyrian Mission

For the ten years from 1850 to 1860 that part of the Turkish empire lying between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers constituted a separate field of the Board, styled the Assyrian Mission. This territory had been approached by touring missionaries from the fields on both sides of it, and Mosul was temporarily occupied so early as 1841 as the base from which to reach the mountain Nestorians. It was now reopened as the first station of the new mission to reach the neglected races of that interior country. So unlike were these people in all but name to those of Syria that it was thought that work for them would be better organized as a separate mission. Rev. Dwight W. Marsh reached Mosul in 1850, to be joined the following year by Rev. William F. Williams, transferred from the Syrian Mission.

After Mosul, Diarbekir was occupied, far to the north, and long in mind as a strategic point to be gained. A wild and romantic country was now opened up to missionary work, where the people were like their land. The whole course of this mission, indeed, was the record of facing difficulties and dangers such as tested missionary fiber to the utmost. The first arrivals were set upon by Kurdish robbers, and all but

killed. When Dr. Lobdell in 1852 stopped at Diarbekir, as Mr. Dunmore was showing him about the city, a rabble rushed on them like tigers, beating one and seizing the other by the throat, and, when they broke away, following and stoning them until they escaped. Whereupon the Lobdells closed their visit, pitched their tent on a raft of 120 inflated goat skins, and floated in four days down the Tigris to Mosul. Dr. Lobdell's comment on this journey reveals the caliber of the man as well as the character of the trip: "The Arabs who swam out upon their skins and the Kurds armed to the teeth upon the shore were alike unable to touch us, as the river was unusually high and swift. We had just fear enough to make the trip interesting."

The Pioneers

There were a host of such daring adventures involved in the founding of this mission, like the journey of Mr. Marsh through the Jebal Tour, a stronghold of the Jacobites in the Kurdish mountains, or Dr. Lobdell's visit to Bagdad to confer with the English ambassador about the prevailing lawlessness. But the daily round was a succession of wearing and even alarming persecution. Missionaries were continually stoned and hooted in the streets of the city. The story of what Mr. Williams faced at Mosul, and later at Mardin, is one long record of heroic and uncomplaining service. The one protest is that reenforcements do not come. "As fast," writes Mr. Williams, in 1856, "as famine, hardship, sickness, cannon-balls thin the ranks of the allied armies before Sebastopol, others are sent to fill their places; for the nations are in earnest. Will the churches show as much zeal?"

The strain upon these pioneers wore them out. Dr. Lobdell, fearless, tireless, winning his way everywhere by his medical skill, endured but four years of service and died at twenty-eight; Dunmore, hero of Diarbekir, and afterward of Harpoot, a retiring but most dependable man, of whom Mr. Walker, his successor, said, "There is comparatively little accomplished

in Diarbekir, Arabkir, Harpoot, and Moosh, which is not, under God, due to this brother," was compelled because of his wife's failing health to return to the United States in 1856, the year that Lobdell died.

With the missionaries suffered all who were associated with them. They, too, endured as seeing Him who is invisible. When a young man of Diarbekir, talented and prosperous, announced himself a Protestant, his bishop tried to bribe him to recant. "Go tell the bishop," he said, "that I did not become a Protestant for money, and that I will not leave them for money, even should he give me my house full of gold." Here was a predestined leader soon to go to Bebek, and, on his return, to become the pastor of the new Diarbekir church. With such leaders the work was bound to grow. Persecution seemed only to refine and strengthen the churches. Deep impression was made even on the Turks. Diarbekir showed great increase during the later '50s; Mardin, also, seat of two patriarchates and a stronghold both of the Jacobite and Roman Churches, responded to the new message.

The missionaries were full of gratitude and rejoicing in 1860, when these stations were merged with the newly organized Eastern Turkey Mission, and the name of Assyria dropped from the Board's list.

Entering European Turkey

The Board began its work in European Turkey in 1858. For some time attention had been turned to this part of the empire as a strategic missionary field. Dr. Hamlin on a visit to England, in 1856, enlisted the substantial aid of friends there, notably the Earl of Shaftesbury and the Turkish Missions Aid Society in the needy and important lands which Turkey held in Europe. It was felt that in this middle ground between East and West, where four millions of Moslems were in close contact with western civilization, and where also the various Christian sects touched western Christianity, there was a field not to be passed over in any effort to carry the gospel into Asia. Moreover, the

Bulgarians, the leading race in the Balkans, ambitious, progressive, and liberty-loving, made a particular appeal to the sympathies of the civilized world. In 1857 Dr. Hamlin, with a representative of the Turkish Missions Aid Society, whose help to the Board in all its missions in this land is always to be gratefully recognized, made a tour of investigation and brought back a glowing report. They found a people poor and ignorant indeed, yet thrifty and eager for learning.

This would be an expensive mission, admitted the explorers, with different languages, races, and religions to reach, but the doors seemed open and the prospect full of promise. By an understanding with the Methodist Episcopal Church North, of America, the Board took for its share of the land to be cultivated the region south of the Balkans, placing its first missionaries, Rev. and Mrs. C. F. Morse, at Adrianople, a border city. Soon they were joined by Rev. and Mrs. T. L. Byington, the Meriams, Clarks, and Haskells, a considerable reenforcement in numbers and destined to shape the life of this new mission. Though Dr. Byington was not spared to a long term of service, his years in Bulgaria marked him as a leader and true founder. Philippopolis was made the second station. As the Moslem peoples were within the aim of the mission's undertaking, it was arranged that one missionary at each station should learn Turkish.

Slow Work

But the roseate hopes of rapid progress in the new field were hardly borne out. The eagerness for the Scriptures which had been noted proved not to be a desire to know them so much as to possess them as a charm. There was little interest in a spiritual religion, and great fear of loss of patriotism by any change of religion. Race jealousies kept the land in turmoil; fear and suspicion destroyed honesty and manly independence. Many vicissitudes, most shocking of all, the shooting of Mr. Meriam by robbers, as he was returning from the mission meeting in Constantinople, in 1862, and the death of his wife from the

suffering and exposure of the event, entailed a reduction of forces and rearrangement of locations.

It was the customary slow foundation work, preparing a literature to meet the situation and establishing schools to train youth. The necessities of these tasks kept the missionaries alert and the success of the schools, notably one for girls at Eski Zaghra, and another for young men at Philippopolis, put heart in them. These schools also had their trials. Influential parents at Eski Zaghra withdrew their girls when the Protestant character of the school was understood, and in 1867 a mob attacked it, and would have carried off the scholars but for the coolness and vigor of Mr. Morse in withstanding them. Here, too, an appeal to the new law of religious liberty, together with the help of friendly officials, brought good results even from persecution. The school for young men, called "The Collegiate and Theological Institute," was started in 1860 with the gift of £300 from a friend in England. Beginning with four pupils, in ten years it came to have about thirty students. Under the narrower educational policy, which now dominated the Board's Turkish missions as those in India, it was temporarily closed; then reopened with some shifts of location, until it was finally reestablished in 1871 at Samokov, to which city the Girls' Boarding School was also moved in that same year. Here both schools began a new era of life with larger purpose and accomplishment.

The Mission Organized, 1871

So far work in this part of the empire had been administered as a part of the Western Turkey Mission. With the occupation of Samokov in 1869 there were four stations; the field and the forces were ready now for independent life. On June 30, 1871, the initial annual meeting was held at Eski Zaghra. To this meeting Dr. Riggs brought the first bound volume of the Bulgarian Bible, thus offering to the fourth mission with which he had been connected the fruit of his last twelve years of labor. With this Bible on the table and the little company kneeling

around it, was formally organized the European Turkey Mission, which, as Secretary Clark, who was present as a visitor, remarked, was the first mission of the Board that from its beginning had the Bible in the language which the people could understand.

With the organizing in 1871 of the first evangelical church in Macedonia at Bansko and in 1875 of the Bulgarian Evangelical Society the native agency which from that day to this has been of prime importance in spreading the printed and preached Word over the land, it seemed that the mission had fairly won its way. But opposition and difficulty were not yet cleared from the path. In the fearful times of 1876–78, when Bulgaria became a separate principality through insurrection and war, the mission suffered a yet more fiery test. The horrible massacres of the revolution and the ravage of the Russo-Turkish war spread terror and tumult through the land. Regular mission work was for the most part suspended; people were hiding in the mountains; missionary families were compelled to retreat to Constantinople. Eski Zaghra was destroyed; Samokov threatened. School premises were patrolled by guards. Turkish officers and neighbors protected the missionaries, but at Eski Zaghra all their possessions were lost; in Samokov, however, their property was saved.

Here, as elsewhere in times of calamity, the missionaries became the first and most efficient ministers of relief. The period closes thus with the work of this mission hardly recovered from the excitement of the political revolution. Yet those who could look below the surface of events recognized even then the success of the hard years of laying foundations. The Marquis of Bath, in a volume on Bulgaria published at that time, paid this significant tribute to the missionaries: "They have aroused the jealousy and excited the suspicions of no political party. In the darkest times of Turkish rule they relieved the needy and succored the oppressed. No religious test has been imposed on admission into their schools; and there

is hardly a town in Bulgaria where persons are not to be found who owe to them the advantages of a superior education. The result of their teaching has permeated all Bulgarian society, and is not the least important of the causes that have rendered the people capable of wisely using the freedom so suddenly conferred upon them."

The charter of religious liberty, extorted from the sultan in 1856 and published and made the law of the land in 1860, did not put an end to religious persecution. Some of the most bitter outbreaks of fanaticism occurred in the years immediately following. In 1860 a yelling mob of Armenians prevented by violence a Protestant burial in Constantinople; in 1861 occurred the expulsion of the Coffings from Hadjin, followed by the shooting of Mr. Coffing and his Armenian companions near Alexandretta, as they were on their way to the annual meeting of the mission; at Mardin, Protestants were cruelly oppressed by Roman Catholic and Gregorian ecclesiastics; in 1865 two Christian Moslems were forced into the army and secretly despatched, on refusing to flee; the Porte itself violated its own edict in 1864, when it seized presses, closed book stores, and imprisoned its subjects, in fanatic fear of Christian advances.

The New Era for the Armenians, 1860 (See p. 201)

Notwithstanding such painful and hindering events, ground was gained for the missionary cause in Turkey. Little by little a foothold had been secured. The situation now was far different from that of the pioneers. The advance of the gospel among the Armenians was a continual amazement and joy. When, in 1860, Dr. Dwight made a second tour over Turkey, traversing almost the same ground as in the journey of 1830, he found the improved outward conditions, marked by the telegraph and post-road, not so great as the religious transformation. Whereas then he discovered no sympathy or interest anywhere for his message, he now found centers of light at every stage of his journey. Of these stations as a

whole he could have said, as he did of Marash, "This place is indeed a missionary wonder."

A Pivotal Period

It was not strange that with this rapid growth fresh dangers should appear. The young churches and slightly trained leaders were not unnaturally flushed with their own success and inclined to be headstrong. Some personal or factional quarrels broke out, as in the Pera church, which for a time was alienated from the mission; divisions were threatened, and the good name of the Protestants and their cause was in danger of being brought into reproach. It was a time requiring careful behavior and a wise policy of administration.

The mission faced the situation earnestly. The recent visit of Secretary Anderson had promulgated those ideas of policy that he had advocated in India and Ceylon. The Turkish missions accepted heartily the plan of putting much responsibility on native Christians and native churches. Not only for their own sakes, but for the sake of the Moslems yet to be reached, it was important that the evangelical Armenians should manifest a self-reliant and self-devoted spirit. If these responsibilities of the native church were to be worthily met, the training of a native ministry and the development of theological seminaries was a matter of prime concern.

Hitherto the seminary at Bebek had been the training school for the ministry, but by the expansion of the field it was now remote from the large and growing centers of mission work; if students were transported to it, after life in the capital, they were apt to return unfitted for the poorer conditions of the interior. Moreover, Bebek had stood for a broad idea of education. The influence of Secretary Anderson's revised policy, which sought to discourage English studies even for the native ministry, discredited somewhat the method at Bebek, that before had not been unanimously approved by Dr. Hamlin's colleagues. The proposal was now made to transfer the theological seminary to the interior and to confine

it strictly to a vernacular school. Dr. Hamlin at length decided to accept an invitation coming from Mr. Christopher R. Robert, of New York, to assist in founding at Constantinople a Christian college, planned to furnish higher education for all races in the empire. Thereupon the seminary at Bebek, after noble service for nearly a score of eventful years, was suspended in 1862. In 1865 a training seminary was opened in Marsovan, and the same year the Girls' Boarding School, which had been doing splendid work in preparing teachers and church workers for all parts of the empire, was also moved to Marsovan. In several cases station training-schools were organized, and before long there were beginnings of theological seminaries at such important centers as Harpoot, Marsovan, Marash, and Mardin, with theological classes at half a dozen other places. But for nearly a generation European languages were not taught in the mission schools; most of the instruction was given in the vernacular.

The Growing Stations

The increase in these training-schools indicates how many stations were becoming centers of influence and leadership for large districts. The growth of some of the missionary strongholds was phenomenal; one year's report in the Western Turkey Mission showed a fifty per cent gain in every line of effort but one. From the stations in the far interior came like stories of rewarded effort. Such good showing was due in part to the number of places newly opened, like Tarsus in Central Turkey, then an outstation of Adana, which reported 100 per cent increase in church and congregation in one year, and Hassan Beyli, a little village in the mountains of that same region, whose men had "stood in the front rank of theft, robbery, and murders," and were the terror of all travelers in the country until, subdued by the government, they began to desire books and the gospel, and, by 1868, had a regular Protestant community with a native pastor.

In many of the older stations the first enthusiasm of the

reformation was now past. There was some falling off of adherents. To meet the special need of the time there came a series of marked revivals in station after station, increasing the good-will and loyalty of many, deepening and spiritualizing the religious life of the churches, and preventing both missionary and native worker from becoming absorbed in the mechanical routine of this enlarging work. The revival of 1861 in Marash not only elevated the standard of piety, but quickened the evangelistic zeal of the church. New attempts to reach Mohammedans were made, with special promise in Central Turkey. The revivals of 1866 and 1869 were notable; many were connected with the week of prayer, as at Bitlis, in 1866, where the fire burned through all the deep snows and bitter cold of winter; and at Harpoot that same year, when three of the most prominent men of the community identified themselves with the Evangelicals. And the interest spread over the entire plain. In 1869 there were fresh awakenings at many stations of Eastern and Central Turkey; at Marash the week of prayer was described as a jubilee.

The Native Agency

All this enlargement and development of the fields multiplied the need of native leaders as well as the constituency from which they could be drawn. The greater emphasis now being put upon native responsibility reenforced the demands made upon the theological seminaries and the station training-schools to provide a larger force of workers. Under such pressure the Turkish missions became foremost in the development of a native agency. By 1866 the Western Turkey Mission had eighty-nine native helpers. Some of them became conspicuous witnesses for Christ, declaring his gospel as much by their renewed lives as by their words; a marvel and rebuke to their neighbors and an example to their weaker brethren, they were the joy and crown of the missionaries' labor. One such man, called "the prince of colporters," near Nicomedia, not only lost his vineyards and mulberry orchards, but endured violence for

Christ's sake. When the little church in his village was built, he brought a basket of stones and brickbats, that had been thrown through his windows, to be used in the foundation wall. Of his sufferings he said, "The truth in my heart was like a stake slightly driven into soft ground, easily swayed, and in danger of falling before the wind; but by the sledge-hammer of persecution God drove it in till it became immovable." Shouldering his basket of books, so long as his strength permitted he traversed a wide region by the Black Sea, until it was reckoned that not less than 100,000 persons had heard from his lips the message of the gospel.

In Eastern Turkey native preachers were now appearing rapidly. In Harpoot alone, in 1864, eighteen young men, the first class of theological students there trained, entered upon their work. The prominence of this mission herein was due preeminently to Rev. Crosby H. Wheeler who, at Harpoot, was using all the strength of his genius and commanding personality in developing self-supporting churches. The principles which Wheeler and his associates stoutly maintained were the immediate independence of the churches from missionary control, the establishment in all cases of a native pastorate, and the right and duty of each church to choose its own pastor and to assume the responsibility of his support. Familiar and generally accepted as these principles are on mission fields to-day, they were not so commonly approved in the '60s; even in Turkey some of the missionaries distrusted them and many of the churches did not wish any such independence. By 1857, within a decade of the beginning of missionary work at Aintab, the First Church there was maintaining its own pastor; but that was an exceptional case. It took seven years of patient pressure to bring the Harpoot Church to full self-support. But Wheeler never faltered; in season and out of season he preached the gospel of self-supporting churches to his theological students. And to the intense energy of this leader was added the statesmanship of

his quiet but masterly associate, Rev. Herman N. Barnum, the backbone of that Harpoot station. At last they won their case. By 1870 nearly one-half the churches in the Harpoot field maintained their pastors, and the principle of self-support was generally accepted, not for one mission, but for all.

This emphasis on native control and leadership required emphasis also upon the education of leaders. Wheeler at first accepted the policy of vernacular education; at Harpoot no English was to be taught to lure pupils into commercial vocations. Schools were kept simple, with the Bible the main text-book, that they might be the agency of a wide religious education. It was the rule always to charge tuition, to put a price on all books and portions of Scripture, to give away nothing, but to teach self-help from the start.

The coming of Rev. T. C. Trowbridge from Constantinople to Marash, in 1868, to aid the new theological training-school, brought to the Central Turkey Mission an effective leader in the cause of developing native responsibility. The broad policy of cooperation which then became characteristic of this mission has been an important and growing factor of its success.

Advance in Organization and Establishment

As the native churches increased in number and power, they began to group themselves in local or district unions for better cooperation. In 1865 the historic Bithynia Union was organized in the Western Turkey Mission; the following year a similar "Evangelical Union" was formed in Eastern Turkey. By 1870 the number had grown to four. These unions were really missionary agencies of the churches. The Harpoot Union in 1866 undertook a mission in the wild Kurdish country east of Diarbekir, a heroic undertaking, in which a dozen feeble churches sent forth seven of their choicest young men. At the same time fifty or more outstations were being occupied and worked in the Harpoot field alone.

At the capital, as in the provinces, the evangelical cause

had secured a more substantial hold and new lines of work were opening. The disaffections which had made church work drag for a time in Constantinople were lessening; the outlook was brighter. Reform movements were stirring in the old Armenian Church. A party called the "Enlightened," named after Gregory the Illuminator, was growing in numbers and force. The founding of a Reformed Armenian Church was projected, and a Reformed Prayer-book had been issued and promptly anathematized by the patriarch.

Two new establishments in Constantinople were now conspicuous witnesses to its occupation by evangelical Christianity. One was Robert College. This institution, founded in 1863, modestly pursued its task, while Hamlin waged his seven years' bloodless war for permission to build on the purchased site overlooking the Bosphorus. At last reluctant permission was given, and in 1871 its doors were opened to welcome such an influx of students that a new and larger building was at once undertaken. The other establishment was in the heart of the city, the commodious Bible House, thenceforth to be the headquarters of mission work in Turkey and the center of the huge publication enterprise, a force of first magnitude in the evangelizing of the empire.

Work for Women

When Smith and Dwight made their tour of the interior in 1830, they did not hear of one school anywhere for the education of girls. The women of Turkey of all races and religions were in hard and degrading positions; they were the beasts of burden in the fields, drudges in the house, or idle prisoners in the harem. It was not easy at first for the missionaries to do much for the women, who had little aspiration for themselves, and whose lords and masters rated them scarcely above their donkeys. In the cities, notably Constantinople and Smyrna, there were many educated women, some indeed among the Moslems, so that the offering of educational privileges to women was undertaken by the missionaries almost from the first. A school for girls was

opened at Smyrna in 1836, though it was not long under missionary control; in 1845 the Female Seminary at Pera in Constantinople was under way with eight pupils, and the numbers soon increased. The labors of Miss Lovell and Mrs. Everett in this school, and later of Miss West, stand out in those earlier years as the forerunner of that education of womankind by and by to become general through the land. Even at the time its influence spread somewhat beyond the capital. There is a telling picture so early as 1846 of a school for girls in Nicomedia, maintained by an Armenian, Der Haratoon, who worked at his tinner's trade while before his work-bench he ranged his classes of twenty young girls, who read to him their lessons. Early in 1866 Bible women began to be employed in Constantinople, with funds provided by the American Bible Society, and found immediate welcome in Armenian homes. By that time, also, in several stations efforts were being made to teach and train the women. Miss Myra A. Proctor in 1860 had opened at Aintab the Girls' Seminary, which, celebrating its semi-centennial this year, is the oldest institution of its kind in the interior.

But with the organization of the Woman's Boards of Missions this work for women became at once more systematized and developed, and the woman missionary was also touring the land on her particular errand. Mr. Parmelee's account of the experiences of one missionary woman brings out the heroism involved in this new department of effort: "She had a very small fraction of a room; at night she shared it with four or five members of the family, and during the day her room was the family kitchen, dining-room, and place of all work. To live in this way for weeks, without a moment's quiet, with no place of retirement, with no confidential companion, is a missionary trial which many of us would hesitate to incur."

In 1872 the Girls' Boarding School at Constantinople was successfully inaugurated by the Woman's Board of Missions. Great expectations were cherished for this school, which began

with only two pupils, but no one then dreamed that it would grow to be the important American College for Girls at Constantinople.

Missionary work in Turkey had not got beyond violent opposition even in the '70s. The Schneiders in Broosa, in 1872, had the windows of their house broken by brickbats; Mr. Baldwin at Manissa was also assaulted. The Turkish government itself sought to block the progress of the missionaries, especially in any approach to Mohammedans. Even the grand vizier openly declared, in spite of all *firmans* of religious liberty, that conversions from Mohammedanism must be an impossibility under a government which rests upon a Mohammedan basis.

Surmounting Obstacles

The year 1873 brought a long drought, with failure of crops and famine conditions, aggravated by an exceptionally cold and snowy winter. The resulting distress was such as the missionaries had never seen in Asia Minor, and all the resources of the Western Turkey Mission were heavily taxed to render some relief. Work at many of the stations was practically blocked. But nothing seemed to stop the evangelical advance. Protestant communities were growing fast in prestige, resources, and purpose. The stir of impending changes in the social and political life of the land gave zest to missionary endeavor. The long-desired station was opened at Van, "the Sebastopol of the Armenian Church," where, despite intense opposition, in five years (1877) a church was organized, also an evangelical society for home missionary work in the outlying district. The danger of a schism in the church at Diarbekir through the sudden launching of a ritualistic movement was avoided by the skill and patience of the Harpoot missionaries. In Western Turkey Dr. West's medical work was winning wide regard, as his former students, now in practise for themselves, extended his influence through the region about Sivas. In this field, too, the interest of the missionaries was being awakened in the Kuzzlebash Kurds, a pagan people, lightly

touched with one form of Mohammedanism. There were happy and cheering signs that racial animosities were breaking down as Greek and Armenian students lived and worked together in the seminary at Marsovan, while at Talas a congregation of 300 had been built up, about equally divided between the two races.

The Era of Higher Education

Near the end of this period, leading up to 1880, the movement for higher educational institutions was well under way. Robert College at Constantinople and the Syrian Protestant College at Beirut had conspicuously demonstrated to the Board as to all observers the call for such work. Dr. Wheeler at Harpoot had reversed his views concerning the need of a broad education, and was working night and day to get a college at Harpoot. By 1876 he had secured the basis of an endowment of $50,000, largely by his own and his wife's irresistible solicitings while they were in America. In 1878 this institution, first called Armenia College and afterward Euphrates College, was incorporated with a board of trustees in Massachusetts. Four years earlier another institution, known as the Central Turkey College and located at Aintab, had been chartered, also in Massachusetts, the Turkish government giving its permission in 1878, two years after the first class had been formed. To this new college came Protestants, Gregorians, Moslems, Roman Catholics, and Jews, and people of various nationalities and religious beliefs contributed toward its establishment; from the beginning and increasingly the people of the land have shared in its management and work. Dr. Trowbridge undertook to raise funds in America and England. The high schools, boarding-schools, and seminaries, which had been gradually increasing, now served as preparatory schools for the colleges while furnishing training for graduates of village and station schools. The reaction was thus complete from the limited educational policy, against which Dr. Hamlin had contended apparently in vain.

Once more, as the period closed, the Turkish empire was involved in war, in the conflict with Russia in 1877. As in the time of the Crimean War, so now the missionaries could only marvel and give thanks that their work was little interrupted. Touring was somewhat disturbed, but in the larger centers all kinds of mission activity were maintained. Not directly traceable to this war, though due in part perhaps to the disorders following it, came two significant events in the mission's history. One was the killing of Dr. J. W. Parsons and his faithful attendant as they were on tour among the villages of Nicomedea. The murderers belonged to a roving band of Turkomans, whose motive was simply robbery. The prompt action on the part of the authorities and the arrest and punishment of the robbers furnished a wholesome warning, and made more safe thereafter missionary journeys through the regions infested by Kurdish bands.

Russo-Turkish War

Another exciting event, though of different character, belonging to this time, was the saving of Zeitoon through the effort of missionaries of the Board. This city of Zeitoon, among the wild peaks of the upper Taurus mountains, had been so long oppressed by the Turks that at last a hundred of its men formed themselves into a band of highwaymen. Presently they returned and captured their own city, robbed the treasury, and drove out the officials. Troops at Marash were waiting for the order to destroy the town, when, upon the request of the English consul, Rev. Henry Marden ventured to go to Zeitoon to confer with the outlaws in possession of it. The record of that heroic embassage makes one of the most thrilling stories of adventure to be found anywhere in missionary annals. Its incidents include the hazard of the climb up to the town, when rifles often gleamed from behind projecting rocks; the days of conference over the outlaws' stories of wrongs, ending in the formulation of terms of surrender; the return to Marash, and the effort to get the officials to accept

a peaceful settlement; the swift ride of Mr. Christie to Aleppo over 130 miles of rough and dangerous road; the orders sent back, dismissing officials and appointing a new governor, accepting the terms and thanking the missionary for his service. And when the new governor set out for Zeitoon, it was to Mr. Marden that he came for a letter of introduction to the people there, while in the settlement of the troubles the missionaries served still further as intermediaries and as marshals to control the city. It was not strange that the rough men of Zeitoon were eager thereafter to sit at Mr. Marden's feet as he preached to them, or that at Marash the following year there was experienced a gracious revival that brought hundreds into the new life.

An Eventful Period

The years 1850–1880 marked a rich accomplishment for the Board in Turkey: the establishment of great missionary centers, of strong and aggressive churches, of a trained and efficient ministry; the renewal and development of an educational system abreast of the expanding needs; work for women elevated into a well-ordered and vigorous department; the Scriptures distributed over the empire in all the great languages of the people, and immensely increased influence of the American mission and missionary among all classes of people. When, by the treaty of Berlin, following the Russo-Turkish war, an edict was issued which assured absolute and unequivocal religious liberty to all in the empire, upon the "voluntary" assurance of the Sublime Porte, and when, at the same time, with the sanction of the great powers, a form of British oversight was provided for Asia Minor, it seemed that a brighter day had dawned for the missions in the Ottoman empire.

Chapter XII

IN MICRONESIA

The transformation of the Sandwich Islands from a land of savages to an ordered nation was now accomplished. In 1851 there assembled at Honolulu the first house of representatives, regularly chosen by ballot at the polls; in the same year substantial court-houses and prisons were begun; land titles were protected by a commission; the machinery of a civilized and free state was in operation.

The New Era in the Sandwich Islands

The school system was developed and adequate; 15,000 pupils were now enrolled in over 500 schools, four-fifths of them Protestant. The annual expenditure for schools was $43,000; three-quarters of the cost being met by the government through a labor tax.

One-fourth part of the nation was in the membership of the mission churches; 1600 persons were added during 1852 on confession of faith. The gifts of the people for their own religious institutions were steadily increasing; the native church was assuming responsibility under the lead of the growing native pastorate; the proposal of a missionary work beyond these islands that should stir a nobler motive even than self-help was being welcomed with enthusiasm. The missionaries were only exercising oversight, with but partial and decreasing reliance on the Board's aid.

The distinctly foreign missionary period in the Sandwich Islands had passed. Already at one-third of the stations the work was really on a home missionary basis; what remained to be done was only what is required in newer or less self-

reliant fields of Christian work in this country. Yet the difficulties in the way of the Board's withdrawal were more than at first anticipated. While a transformation had been wrought, which was in some respects little short of miraculous, so that in 1854 the missionaries could declare that in no part of the world were life and property safer than in the islands, and that murders, robberies, and the higher felonies were unknown, a characteristic indolence and softness of will inclined the Sandwich Islander to flinch before the demand of constant responsibilities and duties. It began to be felt that the education which had been given to him had been too strictly religious, or at least intellectual; that there had been too little training to fit him for the development of his life in a land where the pressure of home and social standards did not drive to work. An occasional recrudescence of heathenism also made the missionaries halt in their plans for withdrawal, as when there came on Oahu, in 1858, a revival of the *hula*, the old lascivious dance, which had been stamped out for a generation.

Efforts to Withdraw

The death of Kamehameha III, in 1854, was a blow to mission interests, as the reign of his successor proved reactionary and hurtful. Soon it looked as though the government was digging the grave of the nation. Other adversities came, in an epidemic of smallpox, in 1855, which took 500 members, one-fifth of the whole number, from the First Church in Honolulu, and 400, one-third of the membership, from the Second Church, and in the appearance in the islands of a new disease, Chinese leprosy, for which no cure could be found. Contact with the outside world, it seemed, was bound to kill off the Hawaiian race. The missionaries were comforted to think that they were in no wise responsible for these adversities; the depopulation of the islands had indeed been stayed by the coming of the gospel; the loss of sixty-five per cent in the forty-four years preceding 1823 had been reduced to about seven per cent in the seven years before 1860. Yet the dimin-

ishing of the native population was another check on the independence of native Christianity in the islands.

Withdrawal at Last, 1863

It was not until June, 1863, when Secretary Anderson visited the islands and met with the Hawaiian Evangelical Association, that the closing of the American Board's mission was accomplished. The time was fortunate for the action in that another revival of religion had brought into the churches 1500 new members, lifted the gifts of the people to $21,000, and quickened all the life of churches and schools. After three weeks of conference over plans, there was unanimous agreement in the result: the Board was to take full care of its surviving missionaries; the Association was to be responsible for home evangelization and for the main care of the new Micronesian Mission; some grants-in-aid as needed were for a time to be made to the Association by the Board.

The third mission organized by the American Board was thus judged to have completed its task in forty-three years. The year following there died one of the Hawaiian youths who had wandered with Obookiah to this country, and who had returned with the first missionaries. In his lifetime and before his eyes had been wrought such a revolution as no man would have believed possible who had seen those islands in the day when the youth fled from the horror of them. Wonder and gratitude over what had been accomplished were felt by every fair-minded observer. The *Hawaiian Gazette*, organ of the government, chance visitors to the islands like Richard H. Dana, Esq., who wrote of them in his famous *Two Years Before the Mast*, some commanders of United States ships that entered the ports, representatives of other missionary societies who came to study this field, all gave unsolicited testimony as to the marvel they found.

One very timely and valued utterance of this sort came in the early '60s, when representatives of the Church of England endeavored to establish in the islands what they

called the "Reformed Catholic Mission," and, in their zeal, assailed the work of the American Board with an attack so bitter and persistent as to be a serious embarrassment. Just then Rev. William Ellis of the Church Missionary Society, who, it will be remembered, happily associated himself with the pioneer missionaries on the islands, of his own accord, from love of truth and justice, published *The American Mission in the Sandwich Islands: a Vindication and an Appeal*, a defense which proved so complete and unanswerable as to cause the collapse of the projected mission. The testimony of another visitor had the weight of an impartial judgment. "Fifty years ago," said Dr. Andrew P. Peabody, voicing his impression of what he had seen, "the half-reasoning elephant or the troth-keeping dog might have seemed the peer, or more, of the unreasoning and conscienceless Hawaiian. From that very race, from that very generation, with which the nobler brutes might have scorned to claim kindred, have been developed the peers of saints and angels."

The Mission to the Marquesas Islands

The brightest evidence of the transformation wrought in the Hawaiians by the gospel was the zeal which they showed in undertaking to evangelize other people. The story of their mission to the Marquesas Islands is from beginning to end full of romance. The call to it came in the sudden appearance of a Marquesan chief, with his Hawaiian son-in-law, asking for missionaries. The islands for which they pleaded were a long way off and their people were notoriously fierce. Of fine physique, they were yet among the lowest savages, hideously tattooed, perpetually fighting, recognizing no law save their cruel *tabus*, gloating over their cannibal feasts. Yet more Christian Hawaiians than could be accepted offered themselves as missionaries to this forbidding people.

When the first curiosity over their arrival was satisfied, these devoted Hawaiian Christians had to face persecution and the long, slow pull of mission work in a savage land. They

were constantly forced to witness bloody scenes, and to dwell in the midst of horrid vices and crimes. Yet, with patience and persistence unnatural to their race, they held on until at length they won regard and influence. Slowly the system of *tabus* was broken down, thieving was checked, and their own lives and property were protected even in times of violence. The mate of an American ship, as he landed on one of the islands, was seized and about to be killed and eaten, when one of these Hawaiians, Kekela, at the risk of his own life, interfered and succeeded in persuading the chief to release him; for which act of life-saving President Lincoln, as he heard of it, wrote a letter of thanks to the brave missionary.

The record of this Marquesan Mission is not strictly a part of the American Board's history; but as parents count their children's affairs as their own, it is hard to separate it from the Board's own story. As representatives like Doctors Gulick and Coan visited the Marquesas Islands to see how the work was faring, they ever returned with enthusiastic reports of the skill, faithfulness, and loving devotion of the Hawaiian missionaries. When Secretary Clark visited the Sandwich Islands, in 1870, at the jubilee of the introduction of Christianity, he felt that the most impressive moment in all that celebration was when the work of this foreign mission was presented. "The grandest scene of all, that Jubilee day, was the veteran native missionary Kauwealoha, returned after seventeen years in the Marquesas Islands, where, after the failure of English missionaries and American missionaries, he, with two others, had driven down their stakes and stayed on, through trials and hardships, till he could report four churches of Christ established, and that 500 men and women had learned to read the story of the cross. And there, on that 15th of June, standing up in the presence of his king, foreign diplomats, old missionaries, and that great assembly, he held aloft the Hawaiian Bible, saying, 'Not with powder and ball, and swords and cannon, but with this loving word of God, and with His spirit, do we go forth to conquer the islands for Christ.'"

The Micronesian Mission, 1852

The Mission to Micronesia was begun in 1852, a year earlier than that to the Marquesas Islands. For the latter the Hawaiian Evangelical Association was alone responsible; in Micronesia the Association and the American Board cooperated. The 2000 "little islands" that go by the name of Micronesia lie about the equator and west of 180 degrees from Greenwich. They are divided into four principal groups, the Gilbert, Marshall, Caroline, and Mariana Islands, into all of which mission work was at length extended. As the nearest of them are 2500 miles southwest of the Sandwich Islands, and as they stretch 2500 miles from east to west, it was no small enterprise that was contemplated in the proposal to evangelize these neglected fragments of the world. But the first venture did not contemplate the entire task; it was but to make a beginning that might be followed up as God should open the way.

The First Missionaries Arrive

Three men with their wives were sent from the United States to plant the mission: Rev. and Mrs. B. G. Snow, and Dr. and Mrs. L. H. Gulick sailed from Boston in November, 1851; Rev. and Mrs. A. A. Sturges followed two months later. When the missionaries questioned why the new route by Panama might not be taken, to lessen time and hardship, the secretary's sufficient answer was, "The missionaries to Micronesia, my young brother, need the discipline of a voyage round the Horn."

Four wearisome months brought them to Honolulu, where they met a royal welcome. Thence, with two native missionaries selected from those who had offered to go, they sailed July 15 on the schooner *Caroline* for their unknown home. After sixteen days of close quarters, seasickness, and hard work, they touched at Butaritari in the Gilberts, and were kindly received, but decided to push on 600 miles to Kusaie, the easternmost of the Carolines. Most of the islands of Micronesia are mere coral reefs, rims of land round a central lagoon, with one or more passages to the sea. The soil is

thin and barren, though covered with trees; there are no springs or streams; no hills; few birds and flowers. Beasts cannot live on them, and their human inhabitants maintain a meager existence on fish, taro, and the fruits of some trees. A few of the Caroline Islands, notably Kusaie and Ponape, are of basaltic formation and richly fertile. Mountains from 2000 to 3000 feet in height are covered with forests, from which streams flow into lovely valleys; tropical fruits and vegetables abound; birds and flowers are everywhere.

At Kusaie, also, the missionary party was warmly welcomed, the high chief of the island cordially assenting to the proposal that some of the missionaries should locate there. He had picked up a little English from the traders whom he had met, and at once promised to be "all same father" to the missionaries. Clad only in a faded flannel shirt, his wife beside him in a short cotton gown, he seemed a humble specimen of royalty; yet he had the love and respect of his people, who approached him on hands and knees, and called him "good King George." In many ways and to the best of his power he fulfilled his promise of aid.

Leaving the Snows and one of the Hawaiians at Kusaie, the *Caroline* sailed 300 miles still farther west to Ponape, a high island and the finest in Micronesia, where the remainder of the party found the way unexpectedly open for their arrival. Three years later, in 1855, came reenforcements: the Doanes and the Piersons, with more Hawaiian preachers and their wives. The bark that brought the Piersons down touched both at the Gilbert and the Marshall Islands, and some acquaintances were gained that afterward led to extending work to them.

Getting to Work

These pioneer missionaries were face to face with heathenism in its lowest forms. Conditions were not the same on all islands. On the Carolines there were better houses; the Marshall Islanders were better clothed; the Gilbertese were great warriors. Each group had its own language; sometimes a single island like Kusaie had its particular speech, spoken nowhere else.

But the similarities were more marked than the differences, especially in character. The Micronesians were all liars and thieves. They were in the main approachable and friendly; markedly kind to strangers; at the same time cruel and revengeful by nature and sly in their petty thefts. Their religious ideas, though varying in different sections, were vague and superstitious; they had no formed idols, but set up stones in honor of spirits, with whom they sought to communicate. To them the air was swarming with these spirits, who returned to the earth in human form and wrought injury. Their gods were not loved or esteemed, only dreaded; all they asked of them was to be let alone.

To the missionaries, fresh from Christian America, the look of these raw heathen was appalling. "The people were nearly naked, sitting or lying around in their huts or in the sun, filthy as possible, appearing more like apes than human beings. I thought I was prepared for all the hardships I should meet, but the question came to me again and again, 'How can I endure life for months and years amid such surroundings as these?' And my heart went down, down, lower than my boots, I think! But I wisely kept my own counsel, and put on as bold a front as my companions."

Special Hindrances

Before the new mission was fairly planted there befell some unexpected and heavy disasters. In 1854 came a violent epidemic of smallpox. Brought to Ponape by a vessel whose sick were put on shore, it was spread by the ignorant natives, who stole the foreigners' clothes. The ravage was terrific; half of the tribe of 2000 perished. When some of Dr. Gulick's patients died, beach combers prejudiced the natives with slanders about the missionaries. A temporary loss of confidence followed, which added to the gloom of the time. At length inoculation triumphed; after four months the scourge was stayed and the missionaries regained favor.

Scarcely had the smallpox passed when a fire at Ponape

destroyed Mr. Sturges' house and all its contents, and compelled him and his family to take to the woods for shelter. Next, war broke out between tribes, and robberies, murders, and general recklessness prevailed. The enmity of evil-minded white men who were preying on the credulous natives was an increasing hindrance. Brothels kept by foreigners were an open affront and challenge. Sabbath services were once disturbed by a company of men with loaded muskets, who were trying to recapture some girls that had escaped from one of these establishments.

On Kusaie the untimely death of Mr. Snow's Hawaiian associate brought sorrow and added care. The strain of new and arduous labors under such oppressive conditions wore upon the poor missionaries, who at times were almost distracted with the conflicting calls and the burden of providing for their own families.

Still gains were made. Native superstitions were gradually broken; the evil influence of depraved foreigners was waning among the better disposed natives. As the fear of the island gods was cast off, there was some increase of recklessness and violence, but it was felt that this only marked a transition period. A thirst for education was awakened which gave impetus to the schools. Even the chief officer of the king of Ponape set out to learn to read; "the cooper should teach him how, or he would pound him." All the zeal for schools, however, was not from the purest motive. Some of the scholars would sit patiently for six hours to get a chance to steal. At Kusaie Mr. Snow had a home built for him by the king, who, with his chiefs, was a good listener at the services. The Sabbath was regularly observed and schools were opened that met with great success in teaching English.

Progress, Notwithstanding

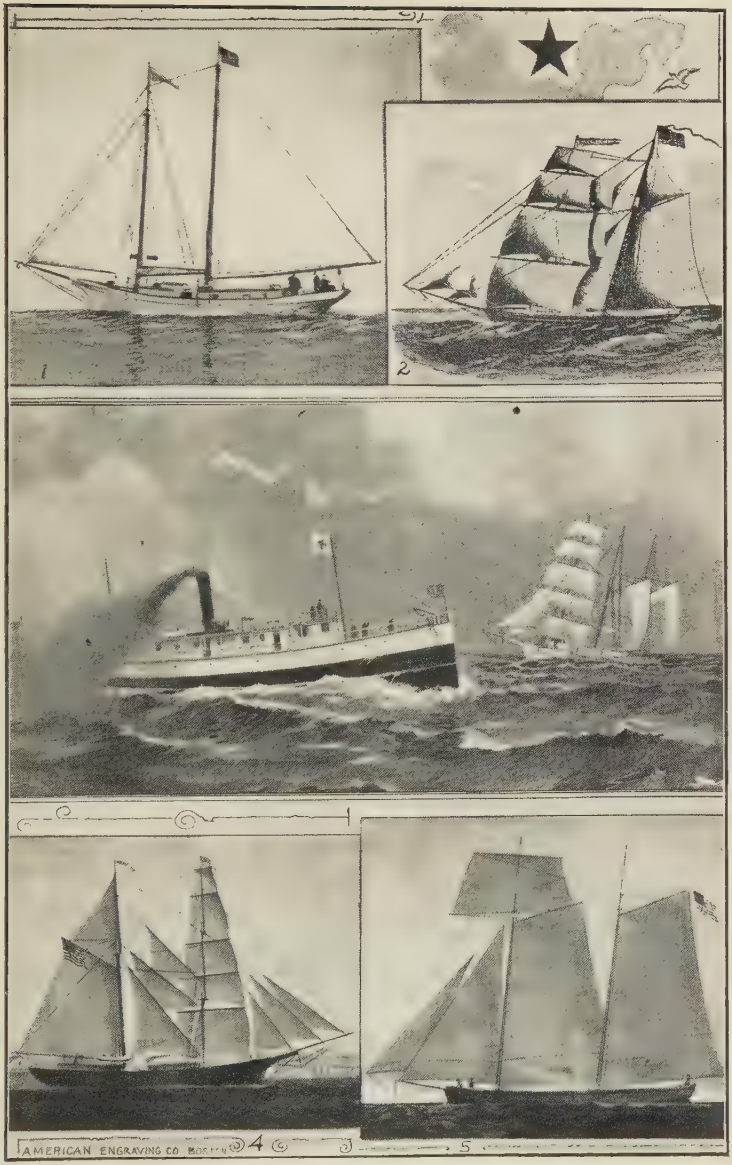
The isolation of the early missionaries to Micronesia was intense. For months together they would go without any news from abroad; then it would be only a whale ship that

would put in, and perhaps with all on board indifferent or hostile to the missionary. Mr. Snow waited two years for the home letters that told of his mother's death. As they scanned the sea in vain, weary men and women felt a depression of spirits such as castaways know. Without the upward look of faith and the hand busy at its loved task they could not have endured the loneliness of their lot.

The Morning Star

For the better protection of the missionaries as well as their comfort, and to make possible the extending of the mission into the other groups, there was need of a missionary ship. So the appeal went forth for the *Morning Star;* the children of the churches and Sunday-schools were asked to provide for her cost, about $12,000. The money was soon raised, the "children's ship" was quickly built, and she sailed from Boston December 2, 1856. A farewell meeting for Mr. and Mrs. Hiram Bingham, Jr., the new missionaries she was to take out, and attended also by her captain and crew, had filled Park Street Church, Boston, and many friends visited the packet on the cold first day of winter to bid Godspeed to the "Peacemaker," as the Kusaiean natives called the *Star.* After a prosperous voyage of twenty-one weeks the vessel arrived at Honolulu, and over her and the missionary whom she brought back to his boyhood home there was great rejoicing.

It was September 8 when the *Star* at last dropped anchor in the harbor of Kusaie, and never was the arrival of a ship more opportune. A rebellion had turned the island into a battle-field and put the missionaries in danger; moreover, they were short of provisions and in destitute case. "Our day began to dawn," they said, "when the *Morning Star* first gladdened our horizon." Taking the Snows on board, the vessel sailed on to Ponape for a mission meeting. Here, too, they found the missionaries reduced to a starvation diet, and the men compelled to look after all the outdoor work as well



SOME OF THE AMERICAN BOARD SHIPS

1 HIRAM BINGHAM II
2 MORNING STAR I
3 MORNING STARS IV (*sail and steam*) AND V (*steamer*)
4 MORNING STAR II
5 MISSIONARY PACKET (carried first missionaries to Sandwich Islands)

as to help in the kitchen and at the wash-tub; accounting it part of their ministry thus to set a good example to the lazy natives whom they could not yet persuade to work.

Plans for Enlargement

At this mission meeting it was determined to begin work at once in the Marshalls and Gilberts; the Piersons and Doanes being assigned to the former, the Binghams and Kanoa, the Hawaiian, to the latter. As the *Morning Star*, conveying these missionaries to their new homes, approached Ebon, in the Marshalls, and a fleet of seventeen boats shot out from the lagoon, boarding nets were put up as a precaution. But when Dr. Pierson called to them, a man in the first canoe cried out joyfully, "Doketur, Doketur!" He proved to be one of a party of Marshall Islanders whose boat had drifted to Kusaie a year before, where he had come to know the mission. Dr. Pierson's announcement that some of the party were soon coming to be missionaries at Ebon was hailed with delight. The head chief assured them protection, gave them a choice of location, native help in building their house, and warned all not to molest them. Despite the reputation of these islanders as treacherous and savage, so that white men for a long while dared not live among them, the missionaries settled down without fear and in joy to their task. They suffered many annoyances, but no injury save petty thefts.

At Apaiang in the Gilberts the missionaries met a similar welcome. This island, like Ebon, was low and barren; the reef at its highest part was only a few feet above the ocean and on the average less than quarter of a mile in width. But as it enclosed a lagoon fifty miles in circumference, there was something of a "field."

Breaking Ground

The missionaries left in these new groups must have felt a pang of homesickness as they watched the *Star* sail away. But they settled to their task at once, learning the language, getting hold of the people, exploring their islands, and, so soon as they could make themselves understood, beginning to declare the gospel. The Hawaiians made good

missionaries. The languages were not difficult for them, especially the Gilbertese. Within six months missionary work was under way.

There were plenty of hardships and difficulties in those early experiences. It was hard to get proper food on the low islands; sometimes even fish was scarce. Supplies sent out to them were occasionally ruined in transit; once, as the flour was spoiled, they were without bread for a year. Hardest of all it was when the Gilbert missionaries learned that their long awaited mail had been left by a passing schooner at one of the islands, only to be eaten by the natives, who supposed it was a new kind of white people's food.

It was not easy to conduct a service even if one knew the language and had secured a congregation. Mr. Bingham's account of experiences in his early touring suggests the patience and tact that were required. "As we close our eyes for prayer, one and another shout to those near them, 'Matu, matu!' (Go to sleep, go to sleep!) meaning, 'Shut your eyes.' After a general commotion, in which some bow their faces to the ground, the prayer is offered. At its close, as the missionary opens his eyes, a number begin to shout, 'Uti, uti!' (Wake up, wake up!) and, with a burst of laughter, these rude worshipers sit up again. I begin to preach. But the leading man of the village may break in upon me, by asking if I will not take a pipe. 'I never smoke,' is the answer. Next he may offer me some molasses and water to drink, or the milk of a green cocoanut. Sometimes we tell them that we have not come to eat and drink, but to teach them. It is often better, however, to stop preaching, and drink from the cocoanut, and then go on again. After service we often look up the blind and sick of the village, and teach them in their own houses."

So in these islands, also, as before in the Carolines, in the midst of barbarous customs, coarse vices, riotings, and even wars, in which sometimes women fought with men, the steadfast missionaries kept at their work, declaring a better way and

trying to win the people to it. And gains were made. Schools were soon going and a thirst for education developed. At Ebon, about 1860, Mr. Doane found an astonishing eagerness to learn. Out of school hours there was almost as much study as during the session, and the children's play even into the moonlit evenings was writing on the sand. The missionary's house was thronged with eager learners; the little printing office, also; and in the boats men were spelling words or repeating pages of what they had read. Signs of religious interest and the beginnings of an ingathering were recognized at Ebon.

The Seed Taking Root

At Apaiang, one June night of 1859, the people broke off from its foundation in the center of their village the great stone which symbolized the chief deity of the Gilberts, and rolled it into the lagoon, clearing away also the platform on which votive offerings were placed. This same year, with the consent of the king, a chapel was built and in March the first Christian sanctuary of the Gilberts opened its doors for worship. Here, too, the printing press was an important factor. Within five years of his arrival Mr. Bingham had ready for publication a Gilbertese version of the Gospel of Matthew and a small hymn book. Soon after, the *Star* brought down a printing press; the first printer was a castaway sailor who drifted to Apaiang.

Meanwhile, at the older stations in the Carolines there was corresponding progress. In 1860, after eight years of waiting, three converts were received at Ponape; soon there were eight more; a second church of six members started in another part of the island. Church buildings were now erected, one of considerable size at the station, and a chapel back in the mountains. Mr. Sturges, returning from a land tour over Ponape, was surprised to find how the light was spreading quite around the island. The most apt to teach among the church members had been sent out far and wide to spend a Sabbath, or a few days, in holding

In the Carolines

meetings and teaching from house to house. The return of these deputations with their reports encouraged the mother church to renewed prayer and effort.

At Kusaie it was a cheering day in 1861 when, as a ship was wrecked, Christian natives went with their missionary to her aid, one swimming off to her with a line, by means of which all on board were saved. In former times all who escaped the sea would have been murdered. A few years later, at Ponape, a yet more eloquent testimony was borne, when a pirate vessel destroyed four whale ships, first giving them over to the natives for plunder; even with so great a temptation, but few of the church members were induced to share in the spoils.

Enduring Heavy Trials

A heavy blow came to the missionaries in 1862 with the intimation that, under the pressure for retrenchment occasioned by the Civil War, the Board was considering the withdrawal of the *Morning Star*, and even the closing of the Ponape station. Their protests reveal their devotion to these poor islanders. How could they get along without the *Star*, their one link with the world? Yet, if the vessel must be given up, let it not be assumed that they must withdraw and if the Board could not provide their support longer, they would ask the privilege of seeking some way to maintain themselves rather than desert the islands. As to the suggestion that in the Marshalls and Carolines the native Christians might carry a larger part of the work, the Committee were expecting too much. "The prospect is more than fair," wrote Mr. Snow, "that we shall have a bow-legged mission, and one half-crippled through life, if you insist on throwing us too early on our own understandings." Happily the necessity for such a hazardous experiment was escaped.

Another trial for the Ponape missionaries came in the burning of the church in 1865. At the close of one of the happiest Sabbaths they had ever known at the island, when chiefs never seen before at a service had been in the large congregation,

suddenly the drunken chief officer of the king, with a crazed mob at his heels, rushed from the woods and set a torch to the thatch. In a few moments the labor of months was destroyed. But even this cloud had a silver lining. Eighteen large canoes from all parts of the island soon brought 100 loyal men to guard the missionary. "After two nights of suspense," he wrote, "surrounded by howling savages, it was good to grasp the hand of love, and see the sympathy and resolve beaming in so many faces, even if these were the faces of heathen."

Mr. Bingham writes, in 1863, from Apaiang of a sky full of clouds. "Our two converts have gone back to heathenism, others for whom we entertained great hope have grown cold, and there is not a native of Apaiang or Tarawa upon whom we may look as a friend of Jesus." The king remained friendly and regularly attended service; but on the whole, there seemed to be decline. It was still the time for patient seed-sowing. "We need most emphatically," said the lonely toiler in that hard field, "touring missionaries — men of much physical endurance; able and willing to live much on what the islands produce; to sleep night after night on the ground; to drink miserable water; to row or paddle many a weary mile to windward, with no native to help; to walk long distances on wide, glaring flats, beneath a torrid sun, after they have left their boat, before they can preach to the natives. Such must be much of the experience of missionaries to the Gilbert islands. But thanks be to God, our Hawaiian missionaries do engage to some extent in this work."

Still Advance

On the whole, there was advance; the missionaries recognized it; it was conspicuous to visitors. Rev. J. S. Emerson went down to Micronesia with the *Star* in 1865, as representative of the Hawaiian Evangelical Association, to inspect all the stations of the mission. The first stop was at Tarawa, one of the Gilberts, where the work of two Hawaiian missionaries, who had been there about five years, won the visitor's admiration. At Ebon, also, in the

Marshalls, he marveled at what had been wrought: the decent behavior of the people; the prosperous schools; the church gathered out of wild savages. Portions of the Scriptures, besides hymn books, primers, and other books, were now available in all the four languages of these groups. At Ponape in the Carolines more than 200 persons were now openly on the Lord's side; one native tribe had abandoned heathenism to become "missionary." In 1867, at one of the churches, built on the very spot where in 1853 Mr. Sturges just escaped being assaulted and robbed, 100 communicants partook of the Lord's Supper, while 600 Ponapeans looked on. The congregations were always most attentive; as one visitor said, "they gulped it down." At Kusaie there was a Sabbath-school of 118 pupils of all ages, and groups of eager Christians spent quiet evenings working at the Gospel of Matthew or the new hymn book which the *Star* had just brought them.

Other "Morning Stars"

After ten years' service in these tropic seas, the *Morning Star* was so worn that it seemed best to dispose of her and to get a new vessel. In 1866 a new "children's ship" was built, bearing the same loved name and commissioned to the same work. Two thousand Sunday-schools contributed; with individual gifts, $28,700 was raised for the new vessel. It was planned that Mr. Bingham, whose prolonged ill health forbade his continuing to dwell in the Gilberts, and who commanded the new vessel on her voyage out, should keep the command and so be able to bring the benefit of his cheer and wise counsel to all the stations of Micronesia. But in 1868 the state of his health compelled a change in the plan and a new captain was found for the *Star*. Dr. Bingham was thenceforth to reside at Honolulu, if possible making a yearly trip to the Gilberts, but devoting the rest of his time to his preeminent work of translating the Bible in Gilbertese and of providing all the language aids for its study. Two and a half years later, as the *Morning Star* was leaving Kusaie for Honolulu, a squall carried her broadside on a reef

and she was wrecked. Dismayed by this sudden and perplexing disaster, the Board delayed for some time the venture of another ship. But the situation of the island missionaries and their work compelled some provision for their need. A third *Morning Star*, paid for in part by insurance on *No. II* and in part by fresh contributions from the children, was built in 1871. How glad a sight she was as she came into Ponape harbor on September 13 may be imagined from the fact that Mr. Doane had been for a year the only American missionary in all Micronesia, and that the new vessel brought not only his wife, but other missionaries returning from furlough, with Mr. and Mrs. Whitney as reenforcements.

Progress in the '70s

The decade beginning with 1870 found some of the native Christians really prepared to do effective work in opening and maintaining new fields, and the missionary spirit was growing. Moreover, the Hawaiian missionaries were becoming more experienced and more devoted. Butaritari in the Gilberts, which, with Jaluit in the Marshalls, was occupied by Hawaiian missionaries in 1865, by 1871 showed a wonderful change. At first it had been very dark and discouraging; three Hawaiians had been killed by the king; the missionaries were forced to flee from the island; the people seemed completely demoralized. Now it was the brightest part of the Gilbert field. The king's brother, sister, and sister-in-law were members of the church, and the king no longer opposed. The church had doubled its membership within a year. Some of the more prominent members were in training to become teachers.

In 1871 effort was made to place Ponapean teachers on Mokil and Pingelap, two neighboring islands of the Carolines. At Mokil they were received, but the king of Pingelap, bribed by vicious white men, would not let them land. However, two Pingelap natives, who had strayed away to Ponape and there studied for some months with the missionaries, went back to their islands as Christians and took advantage of

their high rank and influence to set up a school and teach Christ. The effect was tremendous; the people cast away their idols, built the largest church in Micronesia, formed new villages round the church and schoolhouse, and when Mr. Sturges visited the island, in 1873, he received a veritable ovation.

After this visit to Pingelap the missionaries placed on the Mortlocks, a small group of the Caroline Islands, 300 miles southwest of Ponape, three couples of native Ponapeans who had offered themselves for this foreign mission. One of them was the princess Opatinia and her husband Opataia, whose high character and service had made their names glorious among the Micronesian churches. In thus leaving their homes and the privileges belonging to their rank, to dwell among strange and it might be hostile peoples, that they might preach Christ to those who knew him not, these dusky missionaries certainly stood the full test of Christian heroism.

Coming of Age

This same year, 1873, marked the coming of age of this mission; twenty-one years before the first missionaries had landed on Kusaie and Ponape. As Mr. Snow and Mr. Sturges recalled days of beginnings and the obstacles then in their way, higher and more solid, as they seemed, than the mountains above their heads, they looked about them now with joy and praise at the wonder of the accomplishment: three groups of islands occupied; 2,500,000 pages of Scriptures and text-books provided in four dialects, reduced to written languages; a training-school for pastors and teachers in each of the three groups, and common schools on every island touched; twenty churches, with 1000 members; home and foreign missions undertaken, with gifts at the monthly missionary concerts of $1000, and the sending forth of ten chosen representatives; native preachers and teachers setting some fine examples to their flocks; and beyond all figures or exact measurements, a new ideal of life set forth, before which the old pagan rites and superstitions

were yielding ground and a better civilization taking their place.

Native Leaders

The feature of special interest and encouragement in these days was the efficiency of the native leaders. The work in the Mortlocks was altogether in their hands and was being pushed with admirable zeal and wisdom. In one year the Ponapeans were found to have learned their new language, built meeting-houses, and won congregations. As Opataia, and Opatinia, "looking every bit a queen," entertained them in a well-ordered home, it seemed to the missionaries as if they must be dreaming. Three churches were organized in the Mortlocks in 1875, and four more in 1876, with nearly 300 members in all, of whom a good report could be given. Eight more churches were organized among the islands in the following year and over 500 members added.

The zeal of these young native evangelists in pressing on to new fields, and the spirit of self-denial and sacrifice with which those to whom they brought the light suffered them to move on to the peoples still sitting in darkness, were alike inspiring. At Oniop, one of the Mortlocks, the infant church that had had its teachers but one year, and then only as they had followed the *Star* day after day in their canoes, pleading that they be not passed by, let them go in 1877 to answer an urgent call from islands beyond. At first they were not willing, but, after long discussion and a night of prayer, they held a morning meeting by themselves, from which they sent this answer to the waiting missionary: "Are the teachers ours that we should hold on to them? They belong to Jesus; if he wants them we would not keep them." Similar scenes were enacted the following year, when the *Star*, then under command of Captain Isaiah Bray, visited twenty-five islands, to be welcomed with upstretched hands as a pledge of protection and support.

But even in these years of more rapid growth it was not all bright in the island work. While there were such shining examples of transformed character and a widespread dis-

position to follow the new and better way, there was yet the heavy drag of heathenism and the besetting sins of the tropics. It was not possible that those who had never recognized any moral law or practised self-control, save under physical fear, should conform their lives at once and without a fall to the Christian standards of love and purity. It is not surprising, then, that mingled with reports of gains and encouragements, and inspiring stories of Christian loyalty, should be tidings of another sort, of painful reverses, lapses into heathenism, gross sins of church members, and even of Christian teachers, of islands and stations where work seemed to be for a time at a standstill or even slipping back.

Shadows Too

The Gilbert Islands were for long the most disheartening field, with their rank heathenism, the bloody quarrels of their chiefs, and their indifferent or defiant attitude to the gospel. So late as 1879, on Tarawa, a year in which there was no white missionary in the Gilberts, one of the four church members being slain in battle was actually eaten by the savages, and the head of another Christian, known as King David, was cut off and carried away for the sake of the teeth, to be used for neck ornaments.

The year 1877 was marked in the Carolines by the opening of a new station at Truk, an archipelago of high islands about in the center of the group, but farther west than any point yet occupied, and having one of the largest lagoons in all Micronesia. It was approached with some hesitation as the inhabitants, though of superior build and capacity, were supposed to be specially savage.

Pushing to Westward

No canoes came out to meet the missionary party, but as they entered the cove they saw the islanders gathered before their feast house, watching the landing. When Mr. Logan stood up and called the Mortlock salutation, the company rushed down into the water, and, seizing the loaded boat, carried it to dry land. Mr. Sturges' description of what fol-

lowed gives a vivid picture of what missionary pioneering involved in the Micronesia of that day. "The king came forward and, on being introduced to the captain, took him and the missionary, and led the way up the slope and into the great house and, pointing to the platform on a big canoe, asked his guests to be seated. The crowds rushed in and largely filled up the house. After a few moments the king brought with his own hands a wooden tray, filled with what looked like frosted dumplings, and placed it before us. I was not slow to get out my pocket-knife and appropriate to myself one of these very inviting (breadfruit) dumplings. There was nothing to excite our fears, except that I had noticed on landing some few of the natives holding big knives in their hands, not grasping them as if for use, but merely holding them after the Ponape fashion, so I did not dread them. Still it was a relief to have the food so quickly brought, and the leaders on both sides partaking of a friendly meal together, as, on all these islands, to partake of food together is to be friends.

"The crowd being called to order, perfect silence prevailed, and the great object of our coming was introduced. After a few words of explanation the question was put, 'Do you want the teachers we have brought for you to stop on your island?' The king and the chiefs answered in the affirmative."

A site was afterward selected for a station, and after full explanations the king and queen and people promised to love and care for Moses and Zipporah, the Ponapean teachers who were to be left on the island. Though a Ponapean by training, Moses was by race a Gilbert Islander, born on a canoe that had drifted out to sea; his first cradle thus suggested his name. The service of these two noble souls in the far island to which they thus committed their lives entitles them to high place in the roll of missionary heroes.

After leaving Truk, the *Star* sailed to the Mortlocks and there left the Logans. Rev. Robert W. Logan, who had come to Micronesia in 1874, and whose missionary career, though not

long, has caused his name to be cherished with special love and reverence in the islands, had visited the Mortlocks two years before. So impressed was he with the need of a leader in that field that on his return to Ponape he began the study of the Mortlock speech. At length, with his brave wife he was left on the remote and desolate low island of Oniop. At first they lived in a trader's hut; the people stole their goods and threatened their lives; when the goods were almost gone, the chief put the *tabu* on the foreigners: no one could sell or give them anything that the island afforded. Mr. Logan was of frail physique and fell sick under the privations. At length the last flour was used, the last loaf was half eaten. In that desperate hour a trading vessel touched at the island. After a voyage of eleven weeks, with no shelter but a temporary cabin on deck, so low that they crawled into it on hands and knees, and through whose light thatch both sun and rain beat on them, they entered a New Zealand port. When at last they reached America, and were somewhat restored to health, Mr. Logan disclaimed any heroism in his missionary life. "Sacrifices? I do not know that I have ever made any great sacrifices." Of such stuff were the men and women of the Micronesian Mission; in labors, self-devotion, and persistence they surpassed the coral insects who formed the islands.

The Logans on the Mortlocks

Questions of the relocation of missionaries were rising in the mission in the late '70s, as it was felt by many that the low islands were not healthful and safe residences for foreigners. There were two minds about it then, and have been ever since, but it was at length decided at the mission meeting of 1880 that Kusaie should be made the center for the work in the Gilberts and Marshalls, and Ponape for that in the Carolines. It was also felt that the high island of Truk should be occupied by American missionaries. The training-schools for the Marshall and Gilbert Islands were now transferred to Kusaie, and it became

Readjustments by Experience

part of the work of the *Morning Star* to carry to and fro the pupils selected for this higher education. At the same time the purpose of these schools to prepare teachers and preachers of the gospel was yet more clearly defined. A few years earlier, Dr. C. M. Hyde had been sent by the Board to Honolulu to take charge of the North Pacific Institute, there to train missionaries and a native ministry for Micronesia. Thus at the close of this period the mission was rearranging its plans and force for larger dependence on the native church and the native ministry in the winning to Christ of two thousand islands, not one of which was yet thirty years out of savagery.

Chapter XIII

IN THE EMPIRE OF CHINA

The China of 1850 had opened a few ports to the foreigner, but she was hardly cordial to his presence. The missionaries found utmost difficulty in locating in Foochow city. A district magistrate hindered Mr. Peet from renting a room for a street chapel and Mr. Richards from securing a building lot in the eastern suburbs; in the same way he shut them off in another quarter. When, at length, a lot was secured, the neighbors rose in opposition. They treated the missionaries abusively, tore down official notices forbidding persecution, and put up inflammatory posters instead. But the government issued another proclamation recognizing the right of missionaries to pursue their work, and threatening with severe punishment all who abused them; whereupon the tumult subsided as quickly as it arose.

The Door Opens Hard

The northern part of the empire was at this time in the first shock of the portentous T'ai P'ing rebellion, and terror and disorder filled the land. With its astounding religious origin and its early superficial association with missionary work, this outbreak was not unnaturally watched with anxiety by the missionaries. Fortunately it did not spread far enough to the south to touch the Board's fields.

A Disturbed Country

The capture of Amoy by insurgents in 1853, with its consequent siege by the imperial forces, though merely a local disturbance, was of greater immediate effect upon the Board's work. During the two and a half months that the siege lasted there was almost daily fighting and the mission residences, being on the water side, were directly in the path of the missiles.

All of them were perforated by cannon balls. Mr. Doty's house, after the sharpest naval engagement, showed the marks of about a hundred balls of various sizes; the roof was fairly ripped up. Yet all the missionaries escaped harm and there was no serious loss of property.

It was a remarkable incident of the siege that many of the insurgents, while they were captors of the city, resorted to the Christian chapels. Hundreds if not thousands were thus brought into contact with Christianity who might never have learned of it otherwise. On the whole, the missionaries in Amoy regarded 1856 as the best year yet in China, with evidences of a genuine religious interest which increased the year following, till all the time and strength of the workers were absorbed in holding services, meeting inquirers and candidates for church membership.

Far more care, it was felt, was exercised in the examination of these candidates than was customary in the homeland, and far greater confidence was justified in the genuineness of their conversion. Mr. Doty was enthusiastic over their zeal and fidelity. The native workers were his pride. "There is not one of our native assistants," he says, "who makes money by connection with us. Several of them renounced situations of considerably larger incomes, willingly receiving a small living allowance for the sake of usefulness among their perishing countrymen."

The Amoy Church was now more fully organized, with the choice of deacons and elders; in every way it was a vigorous mission which was transferred to the Board of the Reformed Church in America when the separation occurred in 1857.

Shanghai Opened, 1854

For some time the American Board had meditated a station at Shanghai. This city offered a location farther north than had yet been attained; it was one step nearer to the challenging imperial province of Chi-li. Shanghai was already occupied by other missions, but the open ports were yet few, and there seemed room enough

for all in those swarming plains of Kiang-su. As they watched the multitudes in this province, the missionaries recalled Dr. Poor's saying, "The human race is in the East."

Even while the T'ai P'ing mobs were spreading desolation over the region, Mr. Bridgman had been busy at Shanghai in translating the Scriptures and his wife had started a boarding-school there. With the recapture of the city from the vandals (here, also, there was a marvelous escape of missionaries and mission property from the general slaughter), the way was opened for the entrance of missionaries, and in 1854 Messrs. Aitchison and Blodget were designated to join Mr. Bridgman.

Judging that the city crowds could be sufficiently cared for by the twenty missionaries already on the ground, the newcomers soon transferred their residence from a house to a boat, and thenceforth, for a while, gave themselves largely to touring among the dozen walled cities and almost innumerable towns and villages which they regarded as their parish. The accommodations of the boat were not spacious; a cabin, nine feet by seven, served as parlor, dining-room, and chamber for both. A Chinese teacher, servant, and four boatmen completed the party; where they stowed themselves at night was a mystery.

Passing slowly along from place to place, with a week or a month's stay in each, as seemed to be required, these devoted men proclaimed the gospel round and round their district. Their appearance on the streets of one of these towns was sure to draw a crowd; boys ran before them shouting, "The barbarians are come," or, "Ya Soo! Ya Soo! (Jesus, Jesus)." Stopping in front of some temple, and using a step as a pulpit, the missionaries would address the rabble hemming them in on all sides. The majority paid respectful attention; they seemed to enjoy any keen thrust at the impotence of their idols. Occasionally a nutshell would be tossed from behind; but once were stones thrown. Sometimes a rowdy would

break in with noisy comment on the foreigners' dress; when opportunity was given for questions, frivolous inquiries were pretty sure to come from the onlookers. Toward evening, as their presence in the town was known, the missionaries received calls from respectable people, who would pretend at least to seek information as to Christianity, though their real motive was plain curiosity. There was little open opposition and a wide field to evangelize.

Canton Closed

China's epochal war with England and France grew slowly out of a trivial incident at Canton, in 1856, that involved the capture of the city the year following. This year of war not only compelled the missionaries to leave Canton and take up temporary residence at Macao; it wrought havoc with mission property and interests. Residences were destroyed by fire or looted, the chapel was ruined, the printing establishment consumed. This last was the heaviest loss of all, carrying with it several presses and valuable fonts of Roman, Chinese, Manchu, and Japanese type, besides Mr. Williams' collection of 7000 Chinese works, text-books and reference books, many of which were never reprinted. The outlook was dark indeed; the people of Canton, incensed at England's action in the matter, were bitterly antagonistic to foreigners; the government was weak; rebellion and disorder were rife; it looked as though the return to Canton was to be indefinitely delayed.

The burden on the mission was increased by the resignation of Mr. Williams to accept the post of secretary to the United States Legation. His withdrawal was not through lessening of interest or faith in missionary work, but, as he felt, to meet a special need of the time, in which he could also serve the missionary cause; he desired it should be looked upon as only "a temporary interruption of a relation which has many probabilities of being resumed."

The entrance of the allied armies into Peking, the destruction of the summer palace, and the flight of the emperor to

Tartary, at last, in 1860, opened China to the world. The treaties made in 1858 with four great powers of the West had greatly enlarged the opportunities and privileges of foreign merchants in the empire; to foreign missionaries they brought a yet greater boon, as they pledged toleration to Christianity and its right of a free course in the land. With the humbling of a national pride built largely upon ignorance, there appeared among the Chinese a determination to learn the secrets of the Western world, the foregleam of the New China to appear in the next generation. Looking back from the twentieth century, it may seem a very meager and incomplete transformation which was wrought by the treaty of Tientsin; but at the time and in comparison with previous conditions, it appeared to the eager observers nothing less than the breaking of a nation's bonds. At the annual meeting of the American Board, in 1859, the first news telegram transmitted by the Atlantic cable was announced amid great enthusiasm, "The Chinese empire is to be open to all trade; the Christian religion is to be allowed and recognized; foreign diplomatic agents are to be admitted to the empire."

A New Era, 1860

The great and surprising concessions to Christianity which were included in these treaties were due largely to the good-will and ability of United States Minister Read, Dr. S. Wells Williams, then secretary of the Legation, and Rev. W. A. P. Martin. That the assistance was not all on one side appears in a speech of Minister Read, replying to grateful expressions of missionaries in Shanghai. After calling attention to the fact that in negotiating the treaties the Imperial Commissioners of their own accord offered to concede to the missionaries free access to all parts of the empire, a significant concession which the minister could not accept for the sufficient reason that it would involve the distinction of classes among the people he represented, Minister Read went on to make handsome acknowledgment of the help he had received in accomplishing the commercial results of

Christianity's Share in the Change

his mission: "In my despatches homeward I have spoken of my high obligations to the American missionaries in China, without whose practical aid I could have done little, and to whose good example, making a deep and favorable impression on the Chinese mind, what is called diplomacy owes much. The missionary is never, by his own act, in trouble here. He is never importunate for assistance, or clamorous for redress." That these words were not the mere compliment of a graceful response is evident from the ex-minister's speech to the merchants of Philadelphia, upon his return to the United States: "I went to the East with no enthusiasm as to the missionary enterprise. I come back with a fixed conviction that in this true and harmonizing power, and in its increasing influence on commercial adventure, it is, under Providence, the great agent of civilization; and I feel it my duty to add that everywhere in Asia and Africa, among the Kaffirs in Natal, on the continent of India, among the forests of Ceylon, and over the vast expanse of China, the testimony to the success and zeal of our countrymen, as missionaries of truth, is earnest and concurrent. I heard it everywhere, and from high authority."

The Call of the Hour

The new opportunity of Christianity meant a larger responsibility. In affirming his conviction that nothing in the modern history of Asia equaled in importance the accomplishment of these new treaties with China, Dr. Williams urged that here was a new call to the churches. It was likely that there would still be difficulty about protection, till the Chinese realized what they had done. But China was truly opened; not less than 100,000,000 of her people were now accessible. It was the time to press forward, carefully, patiently, but bravely and in force.

The premonition that it might not be possible to make an immediate and bold advance proved warranted. The treaties, drawn in 1858, were not at once put in operation; indeed, they were not ratified, as agreed, within a year; evasion and delays occurred, fresh hostilities broke out, the allies suffered

reverses; for a while it looked as though hopes were once more doomed to disappointment. However, the occupation of Peking brought the Chinese government to terms, and the treaty's provisions were maintained.

North China at Last

So that in 1860 the American Board was able to open the long-desired station at Tientsin; two years later Peking was occupied; the Board had penetrated at last to the capital, the city of population, wealth, and influence for the vast empire. In 1865 a station was begun at Kalgan, by the great wall on the northern boundary and looking out upon Manchuria; in 1867, at Tung-chou, the port and granary of Peking, and six years later at Pao-ting-fu, the capital of the province. The choice of these five cities, commanding the imperial province of Chi-li, was due largely to the judgment of Dr. Blodget, who entered Tientsin with the allied armies, went with them to Peking, and was ever alert to seize the vantage points for an effective evangelizing of the heart of China.

The burden on this pioneer missionary was crushing. Dr. Bridgman's death, in 1862, was a heavy drain on the slight force trying to occupy the field. "I marvel," writes Dr. Blodget, "that no one comes to join me." Yet foundations were laid and results began to appear. Four converts were soon reported (1862) at Tientsin, men of position and literary teachers. Unhappily accessions were followed quickly by lapses, and some of the early additions to the infant church were not encouraging. The coming of Mr. Hunt from Madras to serve as printer for the North China Mission was a timely aid in the hard task of preparing Christian books and papers in the most difficult language on earth. For in China, also, the missionaries of the American Board were from the beginning leaders in the production of a Christian literature.

Meanwhile the missions left in the southern part of the empire were finding their path somewhat smoother. In general the attitude at Canton station had greatly improved.

Both day and boarding schools, including Mrs. Bonney's school for girls, were prosperous; attendance at services was growing.

In the South

Mr. Vrooman found 100 to 150 assembling at his chapel for the tri-weekly services; the prospects were never more hopeful. Yet when Mr. Vrooman was obliged to withdraw because of his wife's health, inasmuch as other missionary societies were operating at this center, and the opportunity and need in the North China field were felt to be surpassingly great, the Board in 1866 decided to discontinue its mission at Canton. The establishment was taken over by the Presbyterians, although, as will appear, work in Canton was resumed by the American Board with a new stimulus and objective in 1883.

At Foochow the good effect of the new treaty was evident. People were readier to listen; there was a more respectful attitude toward the foreigner; it was understood that chapels and houses could now be rented in the city as well as in the suburbs; church members and native workers were becoming more useful. Yet hostilities were not altogether past. In the early part of 1864 rioting against Christians was renewed in Foochow city. The mob spent its force on the Methodist mission, so that, though the American Board's chapel was attacked, it was not badly damaged. Upon restitution by Chinese officials it was thought there would be no more such injury. But when, in 1865, a site was purchased for a larger and better city chapel, it was almost as hard to get possession, despite the treaty, as it was to get the first little chapel seven years before.

However, prejudice was lessening. The girls' boarding-school at Nantai station, established in 1863 with one scholar, the daughter of the native catechist, was at first looked upon with intense suspicion. . People feared their daughters would be carried away to a foreign land, or converted by some occult art into opium. No story was too absurd to be believed. Now, only five years later, there were twenty pupils; more

applications could be secured than could be met. The motive of the parents still was not encouraging, less a desire for their daughters' education than to be partly relieved of the burden of their support. The need of guarding against a too free school became apparent.

In these days the work of the China missions was preeminently evangelistic. The era of institutional enterprises had hardly begun. The schools and the press were both in the preparatory stage, the former having to meet the immemorial pride of the Chinese in their own educational system. Medical missionaries were getting some hold, but without equipment of hospitals and dispensaries; the first missionary physician came to Foochow in 1870. The great concern then, as it has ever been a characteristic of the missions in China, was street and chapel preaching, and the following up of openings made by such acquaintance.

Into the Interior, 1870

The zeal for touring was now quickened; liberty to travel over the empire brought the watchword, "Push into the interior." Tours covering hundreds of miles, and sometimes involving absence from the station for a month at a time, were a common experience; even the ladies went on tour. Everywhere the country was open, the climate healthful, the people generally kind and accessible; there was always the motive of curiosity to win listeners. The closer the acquaintance with the people, the clearer it became that opium was blighting the life of China, dulling minds, searing consciences, entailing weakness, poverty, disease. All ranks and all ages fell victim. Even Christian disciples and sometimes mission helpers were enticed away by the drug. The burden of this national vice and menace weighed on the hearts of the missionaries. Something must be done particularly to meet this need, if missions were to adapt themselves to the situation in China. The germ of opium refuges and their special evangelism was in this first impulse of Christian pity for the wretched slaves of the opium pipe.

Despite the new times and the growing freedom of missionary activity, there were occasional disturbances which warned the foreigner to go carefully. At Tientsin, in June, 1870, occurred the most fiendish attack which so far had been made upon Europeans by Chinese. It was a sudden and isolated outbreak directed against Romanists (no missionaries of the Board suffered personal violence, though for a time their lives were imperiled), soon over, and at once denounced by the officials, who sought to bring the guilty to punishment. But it seriously interrupted work at Tientsin and Kalgan; at the former city public preaching was suspended for several months and the freedom of the missionaries was much restricted. The conduct of the native Christians during this trying period was exceedingly gratifying; not one, concerning whose sincerity there had been no suspicion before, proved false now to his Master.

Fanatic Outbreaks Recur

At Foochow there was a revival of anti-foreign feeling which provoked alarm and some injury. Native Christians had to sleep by wells and chapels to protect them. Strangers found difficulty in passing through the country and itinerating and colportage were interrupted. In this same year, 1870, at a little outstation seventeen miles southwest of Foochow, the chapel was raided toward the close of morning service. The marauders frankly confessed that they had no objection to the chapel or to the preaching so long as there were no converts, but now that some young men were accepting Christianity and others were hesitating whether to do likewise, it was not safe to tolerate it any longer. An appeal to the consul soon brought an official proclamation sustaining the rights of the missionaries and forbidding persecution; the question remained whether the orders would be obeyed. The policy of the government was indeed changed; not so surely the prejudices of the people, whose living in many cases would be hurt by the decline of idolatry.

Yet constant gains were made; the stations became more

firmly established; their lines of work broadened; the boys' boarding-school at Foochow was resumed and strengthened; the one for girls, started so modestly in 1863, was now a substantial institution preparing to blossom out in 1881 as the "American Board Female College." Tours up the Min River had opened a permanent location at Shao-wu, a prefectural city in an isolated mountain country, 250 miles from Foochow, and with different dialect, customs, and needs. By 1877 two missionaries and a physician, with their wives, were located at this station, which thus could be more adequately administered. In the same year the beginning of a native pastorate was made with the ordaining of two men to that office. The issuing of an alphabetical dictionary in Chinese and English, in which Mr. Baldwin assisted Dr. Maclay of the Methodist mission, and a manual of the Chinese language in the Foochow dialect, the work of Mr. and Mrs. Baldwin, were valued aids to missionary work that enriched the '70s.

Steady Gains, 1870–80

In North China attention was called to the extent and value of the press as an auxiliary by the death of Mr. Phineas R. Hunt, the veteran printer, who died in 1878, after eight years of service in this field, and as he was preparing to return to his native land. The several stations in this mission were developing their individual character and lines of work. Tung-chou early indicated its educational importance, as its high school attracted to it selected pupils from the other station schools; thus, by 1870, a beginning was made of the higher educational life of that center. Mr. Blodget noted in June of that year that as he went to Tung-chou to preach for Mr. Sheffield, the chapel at morning service was filled to overflowing with literary men from the surrounding region. Gathered at Tung-chou from twenty-four district cities for a public examination, they took occasion to come in and learn of the new doctrine, proving attentive observers and listeners. This was fortunate ground for an educational mission.

In 1878 the northern provinces of China were swept by a famine so fierce and appealing that the energies of the missionaries there were for a time absorbed in ministering relief. Messrs. Stanley, Smith, Porter, and Sheffield aided 18,000 persons in over 100 villages. At all stations relief was received and dispensed. Investigating needs, succoring the famished, caring for helpless women and children, facing the masses of human want and suffering, the men and women stuck to their task despite the heavy drain on body and heart. It proved the most eventful year so far; the devoted missionaries had their reward in finding among the people a new confidence, gratitude, and willingness to hear the gospel of hope.

The Door of Famine

At one village, a few miles from relief headquarters, the combined sense of gratitude for the missionary's help and of disgust at the failure of their own religion to help in the hour of need, led the villagers to propose that they should cast out the gods from their temple, thus to testify their conviction that Christianity was true. After prolonged discussion and counseling with prudent fears, they decided to remove the idols into the front building, leaving the edifice in the rear for a chapel. The "dedication" of this new Christian sanctuary is thus described: "On the 20th of June the work was completed and a red card was sent, inviting us to attend the following Sunday and hold a service in the new chapel, as had been promised. This invitation was gladly accepted, and on Sunday, June 22, one of the missionaries had the pleasure of preaching in an empty temple from a platform once used to support Buddhist idols, and from a 'desk' which two days before had been an incense table, and to an audience of respectable size, assembling at the call of the temple bell, vigorously beaten by the son of the temple keeper. Thus this building was formally dedicated to God when as yet there was not only no church to worship in it, but no baptized person within five miles, and only one inquirer, and he a Taoist

keeper of a Buddhist temple, dependent on the temple for support."

In the autumn the question of the destruction of the idols was again agitated. The growing Christian sentiment was not content to have them housed anywhere in the temple. Yet ancient fears and superstitions were strong. There was further delay and questioning; legal difficulties might arise; it was a new and dangerous act. At length it was decided to make the venture. A solemn feast was set to mark the transfer of the temple. The story concludes: "A formal deed of gift was drawn up and read to the meeting, in which the temple was made the property of the church, and its land was dedicated to the support of the temple keeper, who now becomes a chapel keeper. The formal ratification of the transaction was no sooner complete than, at dark of the autumnal day, fifteen or twenty men attacked the fifty or sixty gods crowded into the front temple, falling upon them, as the Chaldeans and the Sabeans fell upon the flocks and herds of Job, smiting them with the edge of the shovel and of the spade, hurrying them ingloriously into a gutter, so that at midnight not one remained alive! The next Sunday a church of twelve members was organized at that village, several of those baptized being trustees of the temple."

So the period closed in North China with a new doorway opened for the missionary into the heart of its people.

Chapter XIV

IN THE EMPIRE OF JAPAN

The *Missionary Herald* for March, 1828, recorded among the donations two monthly concert collections from Brookline, Massachusetts, amounting to $27.87, "for mission to Japan." Similar entries appear occasionally during months and years following. This solitary but persistent naming of Japan as a missionary field, while yet the American Board had no mission there or any thought of one, and while that nation was tightly closed to all foreign influences, witnesses to the faith of a little company who met in the home of William Ropes of Brookline to pray for the conversion of the world. At their first meeting attention was called to a Japanese basket, which was one of the ornaments of the room, and it was suggested that their gifts should be designated for the land from which it came. Out of that meeting grew a ladies' sewing society, which at length formed itself into a missionary society for Japan.

The Gift of Faith

Not then, however, or until forty years afterward, was it possible for the Board to undertake any work in that island empire. Christianity had been brought to Japan in the sixteenth century by the Jesuit, Xavier. Welcomed at first as an ally against the Buddhists, it was soon discarded by the great Hideyoshi, who became the avowed enemy of Christians and expelled them from the island. Those who would not leave or recant were put to death with savage tortures; some crucified, others torn to pieces by oxen, others buried alive. Yet multitudes persisted in their faith till, in 1638, upon a fruitless revolt against their

The Door Closed

oppressors, 37,000 were massacred. After that it was believed that Christianity had been exterminated from the thought of all in the land, save a few scholars in Yedo, who were set to watch for its reappearance. Fierce edicts against Christianity, the exclusion of all foreigners except the Chinese and the Dutch, who denied that they were Christians, the forbidding of the Japanese to leave their own country, the compelling of all suspects, sometimes whole provinces of the people, to trample upon the cross, together with systematic reports from Buddhist priests as to any taint of Christianity in their territory, were some of the means used to protect Japan from any further contact with the hated religion of the West.

The Door Opened

The historic visit of Commodore Perry with his warships in 1854 and the treaty secured in 1858 by Hon. Townsend Harris opened the door which had been so tightly closed. By 1859 four ports were declared open to commerce, and permanent residence and several missionary societies had their representatives on the ground.

Not until ten years later, in 1869, did the American Board venture to begin its work in Japan. And not much advance had been made by the missionaries on the field during that decade. The anti-Christian edicts were still in force, placards being found at every street corner. The discovery in 1865 that a community of Catholic Christians in villages around Nagasaki, with no priests or churches, still maintained the faith thus handed down for three centuries raised a new alarm against the evil sect and fresh edicts were issued against Christians. The government defended its course in face of the treaties by declaring that the torture of these Christians was but a question of internal administration which concerned the Japanese alone.

These were tumultuous years in Japan; there was no security of life anywhere; even foreign diplomats were assaulted and assassinated; all foreigners went about with guards to defend them. It was still uncertain whether the revolution would

issue in any stable government. The American Board did well to bide its time. But by 1869 the shogunate was decisively overthrown and peace partially restored. The time had come for missionary advance. The Board determined to begin its mission.

Opening the Mission, 1869

The $600 given by the ladies of Brookline had now become $4000, assigned to the opening of this new work. And the first missionary to be sent to the field was Rev. Daniel Crosby Greene, whose father, when a young minister, was present at the first meeting of that Brookline society. Landing at Tokyo, Mr. and Mrs. Greene at length proceeded to Kobe, then little more than a fishing village, but newly opened as a port and destined to become one of the leading cities of Japan. Together with the neighboring cities of Osaka and Kyoto, this was to be the permanent center of the Board's enterprise in the Japanese empire. Within the next three years arrived substantial reenforcements, Messrs. O. H. Gulick, Davis, Berry, and Gordon, and their wives, men and women whose influence in the formative days of the mission left permanent mark upon it. The question of locations was perplexing in part from the very amplitude of the field. Practically the whole southern half of Japan from Yokohama to Nagasaki was yet without any Protestant missionary, save that Bishop Williams of the Episcopal Church was located at Osaka.

Beginning Work

It was not easy to get under way even in 1870. The law against Christianity remained in force; Mr. Greene could see the placards as he walked the streets of Kobe, and wondered whether the edict was likely to be enforced. It was almost impossible to secure a place for meetings, as both by law and custom neighbors could control rentals by protesting against prospective tenants. Buddhist priests were alert to hinder the missionaries, and went about enjoining a pledge of boycott: "Therefore we agree that if any native of this village becomes a Christian, we will cease

to have any intercourse with him, and if any person dwelling here, not being a native, embraces the foreign creed, we will send him back to his birthplace."

Yet the stir of new life was in the air. While official recognition came slowly and it was hard to get a foothold, there was almost a mania among the Japanese for Western ideas and manners; it seemed that in a moment freer access might come. Shifts in temper and attitude were sudden. A reactionary voice would be heard one day, and, the next, the same voice would be declaring for progress and Western knowledge.

The first marked step forward came with the opening of an exhibition in Kyoto, in 1872, and the granting of permission to foreigners to visit it. The missionaries availed themselves of this chance to venture on quiet efforts there, and Dr. Berry, in particular, received quite an ovation on his arrival. Local officials even invited him with Mr. Gulick to take up residence in that city; the former as medical teacher, the latter as teacher of English. Upon inquiry it appeared that permission to work in the city would involve a pledge not to mention Christianity. On those terms the invitation could not be accepted, and the missionaries withdrew, though by no means discouraged as to the outlook.

When they gathered for the annual meeting of the mission in July, 1872, all reports showed that the attitude of the Japanese toward Christian teachers was rapidly changing; before long the way would open for swift advance. At the first conference of Protestant missionaries, held that same year in Yokohama, a broad policy as to the character and methods of mission work was adopted: "We will use our influence to secure as far as possible identity of name and organization in the native churches, in the formation of which we may be called to assist, that name being as catholic as the Church of Christ; and the organization being that wherein the government of each church shall be by the ministry and eldership of the same, with the concurrence of the brethren"; and, as to the use of native

workers, "whereas in the work of foreign missions the native element must constitute the chief means for its prosecution, — Resolved, that we deem it of the utmost importance to educate a native ministry as soon as possible."

The Year 1873

An epochal year in the history of Christianity in Japan came in 1873, when it was ordered that the edicts against this religion should be everywhere removed. The history of the unexpected event is happily interwoven with that of the Board's mission. The first Japanese teacher of its missionaries, Mr. Ichikawa, was seized one midnight and with his wife was carried away, no one could say where, though admittedly by the secret police of the imperial government. The abduction frightened many who were becoming interested in the missionaries' teaching; it was difficult to secure other language teachers. For a time it looked as though a heavy injury had been done the infant mission. A year and a half later the wife of Ichikawa returned to declare that her husband, under pressure of his arrest, had confessed himself a Christian and died as one in the Kyoto prison. As a result, she herself became a believer and one of the original members of the first church organized by the mission. Soon after, in the latter part of 1871, a Japanese embassy, negotiating in Washington a revisal of treaty, were told that the United States government could not cancel certain extra-territorial clauses while the laws against Christianity remained unrepealed. When it was denied that religious persecution existed longer in Japan, the case of Ichikawa was cited. No reply was made at the time, but the withdrawal of the proclamation in 1873 was regarded as the direct outcome of the conference at Washington.

While official action was thus more favorable to Christianity, private influences also came to its support. An article by Paul Sawayama in a Kobe newspaper condemned the prevailing religions and urged the introduction of Christianity into Japan. Mr. Greene was now able to secure a building

for Christian services on a principal street in Kobe, part to be used as a book depository and part as a chapel. There he began preaching to audiences that soon came to fill the room, sometimes numbering as many as 200. Before the year was out, Dr. Berry started in Kobe the first Sunday-school using the Japanese language, and Messrs. Gulick and Gordon began public preaching services in Osaka. And while Christianity was securing this footing, the decline of Buddhism was marked. Temples were deserted or leased for other than religious purposes; one ship took to England 600 tons of bronze, of which a large part was in old temple bells.

Medical Work Under Way

In 1873, also, Dr. Berry began teaching in the provincial hospital at Kobe, having at first ten pupils, and soon a large class. A lesson sheet prepared daily was sent to 126 physicians, who could not leave their practise to attend his lectures. So eager were the native physicians to learn of European medical knowledge that at the outset they assumed all the cost of hospital and dispensary, and even of medicines and the wages of servants; later, the expense of the dispensary was met by the local government.

From its beginning the medical work was of utmost help in gaining an approach to the people and breaking down prejudices. There was no concealment of its Christian purpose, religious exercises being part of the daily routine at the hospital and Christian publications being there dispensed along with the drugs. From this center medical tours were undertaken into the outlying towns, even so far as forty miles away, in some of which at length other hospitals and dispensaries were started, along with the evangelistic work which developed into churches. As Dr. Berry made it a rule not to visit patients except as a consulting physician, the native doctors being left in charge of the case and receiving the fee, these Japanese doctors were ever glad of his help.

The arrival of Dr. Wallace Taylor in 1873 increased the

missionary force and gave opportunity for still wider tours and the dedication of some charity hospitals, two of which were in old Buddhist temples. At first, visits were made with great care. The physicians were conveyed in closed *jinrikshas* to private quarters, and the gates barred, their patients being brought to them, while they were not allowed to leave the place lest harm might come to them. Gradually, as their work became known, more freedom could be allowed, and the vigilance of the guards was somewhat relaxed.

Schools Opened

Another important avenue of first approach was the school. The desire to learn English was almost a craze among the Japanese, and in spite of prejudice and fear of persecution, schools were sure of pupils. Messrs. Davis and Greene began a boys' boarding and day school in Kobe in the fall of 1872. Like the medical work, this could scarcely be called a distinctively mission enterprise, since from the first it was self-supporting and the general conduct of it was in the hands of a board of officers self-constituted by the pupils. The school began with forty scholars, and, as the Bible was made a principal text-book of English, and ranked with the sciences as a theme of instruction, and on Sundays, when there was no school, a voluntary Bible class was well attended, it offered a fine chance for Christian instruction to some exceptionally eager and responsive youth. Some of these early students at Kobe were among the distinguished leaders of the Christian movement in Japan.

A similar school was begun in Osaka at about the same time, with the advantage that a heavy reduction in the government schools there led many who were shut out from them to turn to the mission. Though they were seeking a knowledge of English rather than of the Bible, they came in crowds, saying, "Please, master, teach me the English Bible." Here, as in the earlier missions, it proved that the schools were in every station the foundation of the work. Mr. Gordon's testimony was: "Such schools have been direct precursors of churches.

The schools gave us not only our opportunity to teach Christian truth in school hours to our students, they gave us also our Sunday congregations, composed mainly of the students and their friends; the Sunday congregations grew into churches; the pupils and helpers became our Christians and not a few of them Christian preachers."

The several Woman's Boards were early at work with schools for girls and women. So early as 1873 Miss Talcott and Miss Dudley began to teach the girls at Kobe. By 1875 they felt the time had come for a boarding-school. For the first building, thought to be amply planned with accommodations for thirty girls and their teachers, Japanese friends contributed 800 yen, then equal to $800; when in less than two years a second building was needed, again they gave liberally. At first it was not easy to get and hold pupils in these schools for girls. Here, as in China, many parents were suspicious and there were all sorts of stories current to discredit the foreign teachers.

In this early endeavor the mission won its first influence among the more intelligent and cultured classes. Unlike many lands to which the Board had gone, in Japan they were not commonly the poor or the weak or the despised who first gave attention to the gospel, but rather the alert and influential men of the country. There is a memorable and characteristic story of Dr. and Mrs. Davis' stay at Arima in the mountains just north of Kobe, during a few weeks in the summer of one of these early years. There they made the acquaintance of the former *daimio* of the near-by district of Sanda, and through sympathy with the *daimio's* family, at the time of the death of a little child, a friendship was formed which opened the way to Dr. Davis' coming to Sanda, Dr. Berry's beginning of medical work there, and later the undertaking of evangelistic work by many of the missionaries, Miss Dudley being notably successful during several months of work for women and families. Out of that acquaintance came at

length a school of forty pupils and a church of sixteen members, twelve of them of the *samurai* class.

The Beginning of Churches

The first church organized by the mission was at Kobe in 1874, with a membership of seven men and four women. At Osaka, a month later, a church was constituted with seven men as members. Both of these churches nearly doubled in membership the first year. An enthusiasm to preach characterized all these Japanese Christians. They seemed to feel that being members of the church meant being preachers also. When the Kobe church numbered thirty-two members, twenty of them men, thirteen of the latter became evangelists without pay, going forth Sunday and week-days on preaching tours at their own charges; the women as well as the men were teaching or accompanying missionaries on their tours. When the question of forming a church at Sanda was being discussed, one difficulty which was raised was that they did not know enough yet to preach.

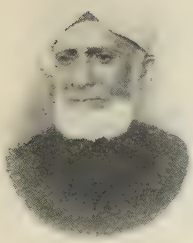
Such was the beginning of the churches which were at length to adopt the name, *Kumi-ai*. At first they had no distinctive name; they did not care for one. The mission had not attempted to give them denominational character, but at the annual meeting, in 1874, reaffirmed its desire to promote church union and its purpose to continue organizing churches on the broad basis of Christian fellowship. The spirit of independency, both in support, government, and extension, was in these churches from the first.

Neesima and the Doshisha

Another epoch in the history of Christianity in Japan came with the return of Joseph Hardy Neesima to his native country in December, 1874. It is not possible here to relate again the life story of this most famous Christian that Japan has yet produced. The chance discovery from the reading of a Chinese Bible history that the Creator of the world had another name, "Heavenly Father"; the clear deduction that the supreme claim on his life was not that of his earthly parents, but of God; the desire to come

to America to learn more of this Heavenly Father; the flight from home, and the venture on a strange ship to work his passage to Boston; the finding in the owner of the ship, Hon. Alpheus Hardy, a devoted member of the Prudential Committee of the Board, his future patron and friend; the fixed purpose to return to Japan to serve his country; the years of eager study and preparation in academy, college, and seminary; the providential service with the Japanese embassy, opening the way to wide and important acquaintance both in this country and in Japan; the prolonged conference with the foreign secretary of the American Board over his heart's desire for a Christian college for his people; the impetuous and irresistible appeal at the annual meeting of the Board in Rutland, in 1874, when the timid and unknown Japanese, forgetting all of the prepared address with which he went on the platform, could only stand and with streaming eyes, but with knees stiffening under his sudden determination, declare that he would not take his seat till his appeal was answered, a challenge as convincing as audacious and that brought at once pledges of $5000, and assured the turning of a young man's dream into an accomplished fact; all these anticipatory steps to the actual work of founding the Doshisha can here be only suggested.

Upon arrival in Japan, after a brief visit to his parents' home in Annaka, where he spoke freely of Christianity before his townsmen, to the alarm of the local governor, who, upon referring the case to Tokyo, was told, "If it is Neesima, it is all right; let him alone," the young man turned at once to consult the members of the American Board Mission as to the carrying out of his plans. They had been for some time eager for a training-school for native preachers and teachers. Neesima's thought was to include with that a college for higher Christian education, the founding, indeed, of a university that should teach all sciences and train all kinds of workers under Christian auspices.



KASSIMBHAR
M. DHALWANI
India

JOSEPH HARDY
NEESIMA
Japan

B. PROCHAZKA
Austria

PASTOR CHIA
China

SARKIS LEVONIAN
Turkey

JAMES DUBÉ
Africa

REPRESENTATIVE NATIVE LEADERS

To combine all these interests in a feasible plan, and, in particular, to win the assent of government officials, tested the patience, tact, and persistence of Neesima. When Osaka proved unwilling to receive the new institution, attention was turned to Kyoto. Here they had the benefit of counsel from Mr. Yamamoto, the adviser of the governor. This remarkable man, though blind and crippled, had a judgment so clear and true that his word was almost authority with the Kyoto government. A copy of Dr. Martin's *Evidences of Christianity*, given him the year before by Dr. Davis, had roused his interest in Christianity. Calling the governor to him, they read the book together into the small hours of the night, till they were convinced that here was the solution not only of the deeper need of their own hearts, but of Japan's renovation. Thus prepared to meet Neesima, Yamamoto welcomed him with cordiality and urged the locating of the new school in his city of Kyoto.

Through Mr. Neesima's influence with the central government, and in particular with Mr. Tanaka, the Minister of Education, with whom he had been associated on the embassy, the difficult matter of securing an imperial permit to found this Christian school in what was formerly the mikado's city and a stronghold of Buddhism, was at length accomplished. The institution, called at first the Kyoto Training School and ultimately styled the Doshisha or "Same Purpose Company," was located on land just north of the imperial palace, and Kyoto became the third station of the Board's Japan Mission.

The school was opened in November, 1875, with Mr. Neesima and Dr. Davis as teachers, and with eight pupils, who came, as did all the early students, from the churches already established in other districts. Even with such powerful support, the obstacles in the way of establishing the Doshisha were tremendous. The first six years were anxious and full of trouble, while yet inspiring as the opportunities increased. At once upon its establishment, the Buddhist priests were

furious and did their best to drive out this defiler of their holy city. Local officials, made timid by the attack, urged Mr. Neesima to exercise utmost caution, and even to drop the teaching of the Bible in the school for a while. It was understood that indirectly much might be done that must not be openly declared.

There came to the school in its second year thirty young men from Kumamoto, who had been under the earnest Christian teaching of Captain Janes. This retired United States army officer had gone to Japan as a teacher at the invitation of a *daimio* and, his term of service being ended, had now left his students, who had agreed together to spread the religion of Christ through the empire. The impulse of their presence and influence on the newly founded school was immediately to broaden its field and to increase its power.

Gaining Ground

The work of the American Board's mission, as indeed of Christianity in general, now began to advance in Japan with quicker steps. As persecution was relaxed, attention and interest increased; there was no difficulty in getting audiences at every turn. Missionaries came back from their tours tired out, but exhilarated with the opportunities. Mr. De Forest wrote from Osaka: "The work here is spreading so rapidly that I can't keep track of it. Every few days I hear of a new place where several services have been held. I went last night into the heart of this city, between the two greatest temples in this whole valley, and met some thirty men and women, who listened to one of our preachers till nine o'clock." Mr. Atkinson, busy in evangelistic touring, not only around Kobe, but on the island of Shikoku, often faced crowds of from 300 to 700 people who pressed about him to listen to the gospel.

Inquirers came as a result of preaching at second hand, the word of the missionaries being effectively repeated in places where they had never been. Two girls of seventeen and nineteen years came thirty-eight miles from their mountain

village to Kobe with the definite errand to learn how to sing and how to begin and end a prayer. Received with open arms at the Kobe Home, after happy days of instruction there, they climbed to their village again to tell the good news that they had heard. When missionaries followed some time after for a visit to that town, they were hospitably received at the home of one of these girls; later, the house was thrown wide open and a company of eighty or ninety invited in to hear the message, the number growing on successive evenings to several hundred.

The evidence of transformed lives also began to be felt. The power of the gospel was now manifest, not only among the more favored, educated classes, but among the vicious and criminal as well. Keepers of gambling saloons and houses of ill fame were reached, abandoned their wicked pursuits, and used their influence to try and reclaim those whom they had corrupted. The gospel was carried to the prisons also, where there were found not a few political prisoners, as well as low criminals, and with some striking results.

In 1875 Dr. Berry secured permission to make a tour of inspection of the prisons in different parts of the empire. His report recommending many improvements was well received by the government and was distributed widely among prison officials. As a result the governor of Kobe appointed a Christian, a member of the church in that city, as teacher in the prison; soon he became virtually chaplain, and was able in spite of opposition to introduce gradually some teaching in Christianity. As a result of this quiet teaching eight prisoners soon formed themselves into "The Company of the New Covenant," pledging themselves to cease from violating the law of God and of the land, and to follow Jesus as their Saviour. The teacher and self-appointed chaplain, thus rewarded, a little later became superintendent of the prison, and thereupon was able to venture upon more direct Christian work than before.

At the same time Mr. Neesima was sending Christian books to the prison at Otsu, near Kyoto, among them a Chinese copy of Martin's *Evidences of Christianity,* that had so impressed blind Yamamoto. One of the more educated prisoners translated it into Japanese for the benefit of his fellows, most of whom were uneducated and petty thieves. At length eighty men were studying this Christian book and listening to the preaching of their leader. When fire broke out one day in the prison there was no disturbance; the volunteer teacher preserved order and directed his forces to the extinguishing of the fire. Upon the discovery that not one had escaped, the fact was so wonderful that it was reported to the authorities of the city, whereupon they released the man who had wrought this change, for good conduct. The ex-convict at once started a private school in Otsu in happy association with the missionaries.

Broadening the Work

New lines of effort and the enlargement of existing lines were now the order of the day. In 1875 had appeared the first Christian newspaper, *The Weekly Messenger,* edited by Mr. O. H. Gulick, who had had experience in such work in the Sandwich Islands. A school for girls, the famous Baikwa, or Plum Blossom School, was opened in Osaka by the two Congregational churches, neither of which then had more than twenty-five members. It was largely due to the zeal of the pastor of the second of these churches, the Naniwa, organized in 1877, together with Mr. Leavitt, the foremost advocate of self-support in the Japan Mission, that the cost of this school was thus assumed by these infant churches.

Several new churches were now organized, some of them outside the open ports. The two leaders in this work were Mr. Neesima, the preeminent Christian educator of Japan, and Paul Sawayama, the prince of pastors. The service which Mr. Sawayama rendered in laying the foundations of the Christian Church in the field of the American Board's mission is

beyond measure. A *samurai* by birth, fully educated in his own land and in the United States, fired with the evangelistic zeal of the apostle whose name he took and never dishonored, the first Japanese minister ordained and installed over a church, his life became a flaming sacrifice on the altar of the Church of Christ in Japan. As evangelist, advocate of self-support, and educator, his zeal was untiring; yet all the while he was obliged to lie on a sick-bed about two-thirds of the year. A revelation of the man appears in the testimony of Mr. Miyagawa, a fellow pastor in the service of the *Kumi-ai* Churches: "But when he departed from us we found a list of the names of his church members, by which he used to pray to our Father for individuals every morning and evening, sometimes shedding bloody tears. This list must have been kept for many years, because it was stained with much handling. In some parts the letters were indiscernible, they were so black. I thought, 'This much-used list is a monument, telling of his appeal to his Father for every member of his church by name.' From this also I received the answers to all my questions concerning him, that the secret of his success was in prayer."

At a meeting of the nine churches connected with the American Board Mission, in 1878, a Japanese Missionary Society was formed, with its management wholly in the hands of the Japanese, and relying on them for support, the churches promising to make monthly contributions to it. Work began the following summer by sending theological students from the Doshisha to places where there were then no Christian institutions; in many cases these undertakings have since developed into large and organized churches.

In 1879 Okayama was opened as a station of the Board, with the assignment of the Berrys, Carys, and Pettees. The situation there was inspiring. The city itself and the villages round about were opening up to missionary work. Government officers showed good-will, and granted liberal concessions. Opportunity was made for the missionaries to render service

in connection with a private school founded by a former *daimio;* the outlook for hospital and medical work was particularly bright, with such government regulations as promised fullest freedom for the Christian physician.

By 1880, in one of the Tokyo churches, was celebrated the completion of the translating of the New Testament, a work in which missionaries had been engaged for eight years. Hitherto, aside from brief portions of the Scriptures, only the Chinese version had been available, and its use had been restricted to the educated Japanese. Now the New Testament was offered to the people in their own tongue, and the labor of missionaries of several societies, in which Dr. D. C. Greene had represented the American Board, was successfully accomplished. The increase in the sale of the Scriptures was immediate and effective. Thus the forces favoring Christianity were gaining in power; the missionaries were full of encouragement and hope.

Yet, while much of the opposition and prejudice was confined to the ignorant and comparatively unimportant classes of the Japanese, there was also an antagonism which was bitter and ominous; for there were not wanting men from Christian lands who were ready to instil the venom of their hatred of Christianity into the minds of the Japanese, friendly and impressionable to all Western teaching. Moreover, there was a growing materialism in the land which was an ill omen for the progress of Christianity. A critical temper in religious discussions was beginning to turn some away from the gospel. Yet, on the whole, the tendency was strongly in favor of Christianity; the tide of popular approval was to rise rapidly higher and stronger.

Chapter XV

IN THE DARK CONTINENT

Hopes founded on the removal of the West African Mission from Cape Palmas to the Gaboon were disappointed. As capable and steadfast missionaries as ever served the Board put their lives into this field. Rev. William Walker and Rev. Albert Bushnell, who came out just as the transfer to the Gaboon was made, toiled manfully side by side for more than a quarter of a century, or so long as the mission remained under the American Board. But despite the heroic struggle of these and other devoted men, it seemed impossible to make headway. Once curiosity had been satisfied, the people were quite indifferent to the message, "their every look, action, and groan during the service seeming to say, 'Behold, what a weariness is it.'" Work was under way for three communities, the Mpwonges, the Bakeles, and the Pangwes, each of these tribes probably representing a separate migration from the interior. Among the Mpwonges, the head men of the towns, the pupils in the schools, and many former pupils were accustomed to attend the services; the rest of the people generally stayed away. It was not known that the gospel had made any transforming impression upon one person in the Bakele nation.

The Gaboon Mission

The vice and brutality of the coast life were appalling obstacles; heart and conscience often seemed eaten out of all classes. And for much of this demoralization men of the missionaries' race were responsible. The powerful aid of many naval officers in the abolishing of the slave trade, and their kindnesses to the mission, were gratefully acknowledged; and

the conduct of the French government toward the missionaries during this period was all that could be desired. But here, as in other dark lands, the coming of white races meant, on the whole, a new debasing force. Sometimes the injury came from a source that made it peculiarly hard to bear. "Think," said one, facing the situation with dismay, "of a Scotch Presbyterian elder sending 100,000 gallons of 'liquid damnation' to the heathen in a single vessel, and atoning for the whole by giving the missionary a free passage! It is these things that kill!"

Its Transfer in 1870

The strain of such disappointments, added to the exhaustion of persistent tours into the interior and exposure to the deadly climate, wofully reduced the missionary force. Mr. Herrick returned alone to the field in 1857 because Mrs. Herrick was compelled to remain with Mrs. Ford for longer recuperation in America, before venturing once more upon life at the Gaboon. Within four months of his arrival, Mr. Herrick fell victim to the fever, and Dr. Ford, who laid his colleague's body in the grave at the back of the mission premises, lived but two months longer. Yet the missionaries toiled on through the '50s and '60s, commending themselves to those who watched their work. Du Chaillu, the African explorer, promised his aid for an outstation at Kama, where he had been dwelling for a year, offering to give them his premises outright. But through all these years the mission was undeniably weak and languishing. One-half the missionary force on an average had been obliged to be absent from the field because of ill health, and many lives had been prematurely laid down. In 1860 but one church could be reported, of fifteen members. Six years later the condition of this church was deplorable; all its members had gone far astray; it was doubtful if one was in a fit state to come to the communion table. At the annual meeting six or eight of the more intelligent members were present, but not one could be appointed to an office. The outlook was dark.

In the transfers connected with the withdrawal of the Presbyterians from the American Board in 1870, the Gaboon Mission also was passed over to them; how bravely and successfully its problems have since been met belongs to the history of the Presbyterian Board.

The Zulu Mission, 1850

While on the west coast the Board's mission thus made little gain, if it did not actually lose grip during this period, on the other side of the dark continent there was a different story. The advance in the Zulu Mission began with the reenforcement of 1849, when nine new missionaries and their wives came to the help of the four families in the field. The three churches existing in that year were doubled in 1850; the two schools of 1842 were now eight, with 185 pupils; the single convert who could be counted in 1846, after eleven years of effort, had become one of seventy-eight communicants in 1850. Opposition to Christianity was suddenly broken; the missionaries took heart and toiled on.

Still Slow and Discouraging

But they were not even then to win a quick victory. The next decade saw but one new church; a wave of reaction had set in. The very achievements of missionary effort were an offense to those who lusted after the old life of their fathers. British authority in Natal had liberated 100,000 Zulus from a cruel despotism, but it had also resulted in a tightening of law and order; the missionary was an even nearer and more insistent preacher of an irksome righteousness. Many were tired of hearing about their sins, and being called upon to lead a stricter life. Mr. Grout, meeting a company of natives, old and young, about the year 1854, was thus addressed by one of them:

"Teacher, white man! We black people do not like the news which you bring us. We are black and we like to live in darkness and sin. You trouble us; you oppose our customs; you induce our children to abandon our practises; you break up our kraals and eat up our cattle; you will be the ruin of our tribe. And now we tell you to-day, if you do not cease,

we will leave you and all this region, and go where the gospel is not known or heard."

"But," said Mr. Grout, "how is this? I oppose your customs, of course, because the Word of God is opposed to them, and because they are all wrong, and will be your certain and endless ruin, if you do not forsake them. Your children I teach, as I do you, to become wise and good and happy. But how do I eat up your cattle, and break up your kraals and your tribes? All that I obtain from you I pay for, do I not? And I sometimes try to do you a good turn besides."

"Yes. But you teach repentance and faith; and a penitent believing man is to us as good as dead. He no longer takes any pleasure in our pursuits, and no longer labors to build up his father's kraal; but he leaves it and joins the church; and then he tries to lead others away to the station after him. And as to our cattle, our girls and our women are our cattle, but you teach that they are not cattle, and ought not to be sold for cattle, but to be taught and clothed, and made the servants of God and not the slaves of men. That is the way you eat up our cattle. Many have left us and been engulfed at the station; and more wish to leave us. And now if you continue these labors and instructions, we shall just leave you and go to another country.

"See what your new religion costs you. You must buy clothes to wear, which are only an impediment to all action, and buy soap to wash them, and thread and needles to patch and mend them. You must be always building upright houses, which are cold and uncomfortable; and must buy dishes to eat in; must work in the garden just like a woman. And then, perhaps, you must be hungry and waste much time in going to meeting and learning to read. But we live in idleness, which is both agreeable and manly. Our wives dig the gardens. Our houses are warm. With our money we buy cattle, which give us food and rejoice our eyes, instead of buying clothes which soon wear out and are only in the way

while they last. And, instead of going to read and to worship, we go to hunt and to dance; and we lie basking in the sun, and take snuff, and smoke our pipes, and drink beer, and do many other things."

Thus on the East as on the West of Africa there were many who had no ears to hear the gospel message, and the task of the missionary was a slow and patient hammering of the rock.

"Engulfing at the station," to which objection was made, refers to the practise of forming communities of native adherents around the several stations. In this way they were removed from the degrading influence of the kraals and brought under more continuous missionary influence. The colonial government cordially approved the plan and, in 1856, granted large tracts of land, surrounding the residences of the missionaries and known as Mission Reserves, for the use of these native communities. The allotment for missionary residences was outright, virtually a glebe donated by the government; the land for the natives' use was put in the hands of trustees, representing both the government and the mission; no rent was then required.

Mission Reserves, 1856

This plan of segregating the Christian natives became thenceforth an important factor in the progress of the Zulu Mission. Gradually the Reserves were occupied by those natives who were disposed to adopt civilized and Christian habits of life; houses were built and fields planted; their children were sent to mission schools, their families went to the mission church; a Christianized society developed. The Reserves were regarded as centers of light for their region by which the darkness would at length be driven from the whole land. Later there was to be trouble over these Reserves, much as trouble came over Indian reservations in this country; but for the time they seemed both to the government and the mission a happy device for civilizing and Christianizing the Zulu.

Thus with a place to work in, some people at hand to work upon, and a race all about to work for, the mission toiled hopefully through the rather hard years of the '50s. The immorality of the people was disheartening; it often seemed as though there was nothing to build on; no basis of conviction, steadiness of purpose, or sense of loyalty. To instil moral ideas into those who offered themselves for Christian training was a difficult task. A sharp conflict was brought on by the effort to banish polygamy from the homes of the Christians; the discussion in 1855–56 filled the land with controversy, especially as the eminent Bishop Colenso threw the weight of his influence against interfering with this native custom.

Working Hard

But in their stations and on the Reserves the missionaries worked patiently and there were some manifest gains. Common schools were prosperous, aided and encouraged by the colonial government. In 1853 Amanzimtoti Seminary, a boys' high school, was begun modestly by Mr. Rood, and rapidly developed. Within seven years it trained some of the best native pastors the mission has had, and so proved its value that, though closed by Mr. Rood's failing health, it was reopened in 1865 to become at once the institution of men's higher education and pastoral training for the mission. These years of inconspicuous labor were also in part spent in preparing and issuing the Scriptures and text-books which the broadening work necessitated.

And there were outward signs of progress even then. The crusade against polygamy had such effect that in a land where ten years before no other ideal of marriage was known, there were now 100 monogamous families on the Reserves; and between sixty and seventy of these families had abandoned the Kaffir hut for a house. Sir George Grey, governor at Cape Town, was moved to express to a United States commission his gratitude to the American Board for what it was doing through its missionaries for the native and heathen inhabitants of the colony.

A Cheering Decade, 1860–70

The forming of a native home missionary society in 1860 marked the beginning of a new era. In five years it had three missionaries in the field, and the churches were feeling a new responsibility and enthusiasm. Their gifts were increasing as well as their disposition to evangelize their countrymen; native pastors were coming forward to take charge of churches that were moving steadily toward independence.

One of these three native home missionaries was set over an outstation where a church of ten members had been gathered with no missionary to lead them. Less than twenty years before a missionary since gone from earth had found this Umbiyana a careless heathen, instructed him, brought him to Christ, and started him on the way to his Christian ministry. Mr. Tyler, who was present at the service which marked the beginning of this pastorate, felt as if he was sharing the exultation of the angels as he looked about upon the large company gathered in that almost inaccessible locality in the high mountains and partook of the Lord's Supper with his Zulu brethren.

The missionaries were enjoying the reward of their labors. It was the greatness and, as it seemed, the suddenness of the change wrought in the land that were most felt, rather than the obstacles and the delay. Mr. Grout, who had toiled for eleven years before he baptized the first convert, and who had been driven away from three stations, wrote: "If I was a fool in the eyes of some men, yet called and sent of God, as I then believed, I have lived to see in this work of God a hundredfold more done than I ever dreamed that I might effect in a long life. And if I have suffered all that missionaries do in ordinary missionary work, I can cheerfully say that I have suffered far less than I anticipated, and enjoyed a hundredfold more than I expected. Every promise of God has been abundantly fulfilled to me, and I would not to-day, for time or eternity, change situations with my most gifted classmates." When

at length he returned to America, Mr. Grout took pleasure in replying to some friends, who, on his departure to Africa, had charged him with going on a wild-goose chase, "Well, if I did, I've caught my goose."

Henceforth there was a lessening need for the missionaries to assume pastoral care of the churches; their chief work was now to be in providing higher education and Christian literature. The awakened Zulu began to show a love of money and a disposition to make godliness a way of gain; the tendency was here quite the opposite of that in the Sandwich Islands, where civilization was neglected in the enthusiasm for religion. The spiritual ideals, motives, and forces were needing the missionary's most devoted furtherance.

In 1869 a theological school was opened, first as a branch of the Amanzimtoti Seminary for boys, but soon becoming a separate school with its distinctive and high task of preparing religious leaders. The same year Mrs. M. K. Edwards opened at Inanda the first school in South Africa for native girls, and has continued with it to this day. Successful from the start, with an annual attendance of 150, this school has been sending forth a stream of teachers and home makers to leaven the land with Christianity. A similar school at Umzumbe, opened in 1873 and intended for kraal girls, was soon compelled to raise its grade and become distinctively a training-school for teachers, like Inanda, and with a roll of pupils almost as large. These schools, with their drill and discipline, were doubly important for those who were to become leaders of a race still so close to savagery.

Progress toward supplying native churches with pastors of their own was steady if not rapid. By 1870 there were three of these ordained pastors without dependence on the mission. The last settled was James Dubé, of Inanda, brother of the tribal chief, a man six feet three inches in height, of splendid figure and presence, who had renounced every rag and tatter of heathenism and still held the regard of his people.

To this wise and noble man, with the board of four good men chosen to aid him as deacons, the missionaries who delighted in them looked to see the Inanda church brought to be a true spiritual temple.

Broadening the Field

And now this Zulu Mission, one of the smallest in territory which the Board has occupied, stretching west but seventy-five miles from the sea to the Drackenbergs, and with the narrow boundaries of the Tugela River on the north, and the Umzumbe on the south, needed an outlet for its rising Christian life. There was plenty yet to be done in Natal; heathen at home and the Christians on the Reserves were still in need of constant watch and care. Missionaries were not looking about for something to do; native pastors were not out of a field. But in the '70s it was clear to the observant leaders of the mission that the Zulu churches, growing in number, size, and zeal, needed a definite missionary objective to widen their horizon, to deepen their sympathies, and to develop self-sacrifice.

The Zulus are characteristically orators; they make good preachers, and they have the evangelistic temper; they are quick to respond to calls for such service. A Zulu church is not a mere congregation of listeners; its men expect to go out and repeat the message they have heard. As it became known that the Zulu language was spoken beyond the boundaries of this mission and understood far to the north and among interior tribes, the idea grew that the Christian Zulu was meant to be the evangelist of eastern Africa. And for this task there were new tools now ready; considerable portions of the Bible, including the New Testament entire, in Zulu; Mr. Döhne's dictionary of the language, and Lewis Grout's grammar, the last-named text-book being still in use.

This disposition to push out to new fields was mightily reenforced with the coming to the mission, in 1871, of Rev. Myron W. Pinkerton. "The specific object," he soon wrote, "which most excites my enthusiasm is to go up the deep,

broad, and rugged valleys of the Umtwalumi and Ifafa, where thousands of heathen dwell, who have heard little or nothing of the Saviour. I hope the Master will give me both the spiritual power and the strong bone and muscle to fill these hilly districts with churches and schools." And while busy in such itinerating of his field, this missionary with the heart of Paul was constantly hoping, aided by the Zulu Christians, to extend the mission into remoter regions as yet altogether untouched.

The project of an advance was made more definite by the new interest awakened in Central Africa through the explorations of Henry M. Stanley, and his impressive plea for missionaries for that region. Both England and America were stirred by this appeal, and fresh impulse was given to the idea that the missionary societies of both lands should stretch a chain of missions across the dark continent. Generous proposals made in 1877 by a wealthy Englishman, Robert Arthington, of Leeds, and which in many ways quickened and enlarged missionary work in Africa, fell just short of securing the cooperation of the American Board in a part of the undertaking; another plan was soon to be adopted.

Tugging Along

Meanwhile in the field already occupied the missionaries were laboring to develop a sturdy and responsible type of Christian character, and to awaken aspirations for a better life among the stolid Zulus of the kraals. It was wearisome work and often discouraging. And beyond the ordinary drag of a hard field came now and then violent and alarming events to trouble the hearts of the missionaries. A recrudescence of heathenism was felt in the later '70s; not merely the lapse here and there of a church member or a pupil from the schools, but a general sag in the churches and communities, in which some who had been leaders in religious and social affairs were inclined to revert to polygamy, the practise of selling daughters for cattle, called *lobolisa*, the drinking of native beer, and other degrading cus-

toms. The war of 1877–79 between the British and the Zulus, which ended in the practical subjugation of the natives, was another unsettling influence with which the mission had to contend.

Matters were brought to a crisis in 1880, when rules were adopted forbidding to church members polygamous marriage, the practise of *lobolisa*, and the use of intoxicants. It was not easy at once to enforce these rules; the churches were thrown into tumult; sorrow and perplexity were for a while the habitual condition of the missionaries. But they held firm, the churches were purified of these gross inconsistencies, higher standards were accepted, and a fairer type of Christian behavior appeared. In that very year, 1880, the veteran Josiah Tyler, reviewing the course of the mission, marked the sure evidences of its success.

"Good work has been accomplished, and it is foundation work among the most degraded people to whom the A. B. C. F. M. has sent missionaries. Before the Word of God came here, a wide pall of barbarism spread over the whole land. It was like ancient Galilee, 'the region and shadow of death.' I have heard one of the oldest missionaries say that, when he came here, throughout the length and breadth of Natal not a single native had on his body the least mark of civilization; and the minds of the natives were fearfully destitute of thought except that which pertained to their own sensual gratification. But, thank God, light has sprung up in South Africa; spirit worship is being abandoned, civilization is advancing; upright and neatly whitewashed dwellings, constructed after the English fashion, are taking the place of the low, beehive-like huts of their ancestors; the daily schools on mission stations are well attended; the two seminaries of a higher order — one for males and the other for females — are flourishing; the native Home Missionary Society supports three ordained ministers, and has a surplus of funds in its treasury; our Sabbath audiences were never so large as at present; and, altogether, I see great reason for encouragement."

Chapter XVI

IN NOMINALLY CHRISTIAN LANDS

The American Board made early efforts to enter lands nominally Christian. It was on the heart of Samuel Mills that the United States was specially responsible for the evangelization of South America, and in 1813 he proposed that the Board should send him to that continent on a commission of inquiry. The same year the Prudential Committee was directed to consider the expediency of establishing a mission in San Salvador, Brazil. Both these proposals came to naught, but ten years later Messrs. John C. Brigham and Theophilus Parvin were despatched on an exploring tour to the more important parts of Spanish America. They made Buenos Ayres the base for their investigations and Parvin opened a school there; when it soon became self-supporting he was honorably discharged from the Board's service to continue this educational work. Brigham was left to continue alone the long and important tour across the continent to Chile, up the western coast to Peru, thence to Mexico, and back to the United States, bringing valuable information as to these lands in which paganism and Latin Christianity were strangely mingled. The judgment, however, was adverse to attempting a mission in any of those lands at this time; the long tour was but one more labor of path-finding in the Board's effort to determine the most urgent fields.

Early Purpose

Not until 1871 did the American Board undertake any work in lands where Roman Catholicism was dominant, and then not upon its own initiative. At that time the American and Foreign Christian Union, which for twenty years had been conducting mission work

Four Missions Undertaken

among Romanists in foreign countries as well as in the United States, was losing some of its supporters. They felt that this society was too harsh in its attacks upon Romanism, or that one not organized directly to combat the papacy would be more successful; they argued that the work could be done more economically also by a larger and more fully equipped organization. The Congregational churches in particular were drawing away from the Union, and in 1871 presented a memorial to the Board, which had successfully dealt with various bodies of nominal Christians in the Levant, urging it to undertake this work. Whereupon, with some hesitancy, the Board accepted it as a duty to extend its work on behalf of nominally Christian peoples. Within a year the Prudential Committee had begun missions in Spain, Austria, and Mexico; in 1873 an attempt was made to get foothold in Italy.

There was no expectation of making proselytes of the great body of the people in these countries nor any such desire. The instructions were explicit on this point: "In going to countries where the evangelical work is already begun, the missionaries of the Board will be careful not to build up a separate interest, but rather to become fellow helpers unto the truth, and thus to illustrate, to the eyes of Romanists, a true Christian unity. The special object of their efforts will be to raise up an efficient native ministry. Each nation must be evangelized by its own sons; and the limit of our duty will be reached when such assistance has been rendered as will enable them to take up and complete the work of evangelization." But inasmuch as the Bible was a forbidden book in several of these countries, and the people were held in superstition and ignorance, with little incentive and no help to improve, there was justification for some effort to convey to them the light of the free gospel.

To provide funds needed for this new enterprise, estimated at from $25,000 to $35,000, and to secure therefor gifts which were being withheld from the American and Foreign Christian

Union, it was agreed that a separate offering should be sought for this purpose from the churches connected with the Board. Unfortunately this virtual pledge of an extra gift was not fulfilled save by a few churches, and the Board had to carry the burden of a larger task with but little increase in its resources.

The Attempt in Italy, 1873

In Italy alone of the countries entered were evangelical churches already established. The Board attempted to work with them and with the Waldensians, the Italian Free Church, and other independent bodies, but soon found that such cooperation was impossible without abandoning its principles of self-support and self-government; moreover, it was difficult to find a clear field where the newcomer could operate without overlapping. In the face of these embarrassments and as the receipts for missions in papal lands were not coming in as expected, and the financial condition of the Board was cramped, it was soon judged best to suspend the undertaking in Italy. After a year of brave and resourceful attempt by Rev. and Mrs. Walter S. Alexander and Dr. and Mrs. Luther H. Gulick, in 1874 the missionaries withdrew.

Beginnings in Spain

Spain was entered at a fortunate time. The revolution of September, 1868, opened a new era. Heretofore all religious reform had been violently suppressed, even the study of the Scriptures in secret being a high crime. Now the Spanish Cortes adopted a new constitution, which, while maintaining Roman Catholicism as the religion of the land, promised religious liberty to Spaniards as well as foreigners. Though it was soon to be learned that in Spain as in Turkey the granting of toleration by statute did not prevent indirect and even open persecution, a real gain was made by this overturning. A month after the revolution a public evangelical service was held in Seville; a church was organized before the year closed and a Protestant church edifice opened for worship. Similar services were held by

those of evangelical temper in several of the leading cities of the kingdom. Bibles and other religious publications were widely scattered by evangelists and colporters in spite of bitter opposition by Roman Catholic priests.

Under these new conditions and entering into the labors of various independent agencies, the American Board began its work in 1872. Locations were chosen in the northern part of Spain, as that was a field largely untouched as yet by Protestant agencies. Rev. and Mrs. William H. Gulick, the former already knowing the Spanish language, and having had three years' experience as a missionary in South America, settled at Santander, a city of 20,000 inhabitants on the coast; Dr. Luther H. Gulick, with twenty years' experience in missionary work in the Micronesian and Hawaiian Islands, located at Barcelona, a commercial city of 200,000, sometimes called the Manchester of Spain, from which place he was transferred in a few months to undertake the short-lived venture in Italy. The following year another brother, Rev. Thomas L. Gulick, joined the mission, and located at length in Zaragoza, due west from Barcelona and some 200 miles south of San Sebastian.

Work was begun with utmost caution and experiment. With the gaining of acquaintance and some use of the language, several schools were established, evangelical literature was judiciously distributed, and a few native preachers were secured who had obtained their education in Switzerland. It was almost impossible at first to secure a place for worship. "Finally, at Santander, a room forty feet long by thirty feet wide, which had been used as a storeroom for fish, was found in the second story of a double house, and fitted up for a chapel. The walls and ceilings were whitewashed; unpainted pine plank benches and an unpainted table for a desk were used; here the little congregation gathered and the services were often interrupted by stones thrown through the windows, some of them as large as a man's fist. Though these demon-

strations reduced the size of the congregations, yet there were some who were faithful in coming, and in a few hearts the truth found lodgment."

The times were stormy; Carlists were making warlike demonstrations; it was difficult to forecast the political future. Yet the mission was not hindered directly. Touring among the villages of the region was possible, and everywhere curiosity at least was stirred. Some sincere inquirers were continually found, many of them secret disciples; 113 families in Santander took the weekly Spanish evangelical paper, *The Christian*, though not more than thirty people ventured to attend the Sunday services. It was plain there were unsatisfied and aching hearts to be reached in this fair but oppressed land. A company of basket-makers from a village in the Cantabrian Mountains, who brought their wares each summer to Santander, were led to the Protestant service by a shoemaker who was a member of the church. The message they heard there went to their hearts and, when they returned to their mountain village at the close of the summer, they established regular meetings for prayer and Bible reading.

In the Face of Persecution

In these early years it was chiefly the laboring classes that listened to the missionary; social as well as ecclesiastical influence was against him. A junta of Catholic ladies was formed to watch the missionaries and counteract their work. Systematic and ceaseless persecution followed every Protestant; no one but an eye-witness, said the missionaries, could form a correct idea of what the poor people suffered for the gospel's sake. When entreaties and bribes would not suffice, even this junta of ladies was not above threats, forcing landlords and employers to put the ban on Protestants.

By 1876 the first evangelical church in northern Spain was organized in Santander with seventeen members, devoted not to Congregationalism or any other *ism*, but open to disciples of every name. A new church was organized at Zaragoza with seventy-five members from the old body and twelve

new converts. Here at the same time a school for boys was opened and soon another for girls. In December an evening school was started for adult pupils, and after the Week of Prayer there was a marked religious quickening among them. Zaragoza had been the scene of a noisy opposition. Protestants were hooted on the streets; stones were thrown at the chapel and services interrupted; once a funeral service was broken up by the authorities, who carried off the body, determined to prevent a Protestant burial. When friends protested, the family was summoned to court for resistance and the Protestant pastor was imprisoned for ten days for interfering with the Roman Catholic rites. In one town, as brethren from Santander were selling Bibles and tracts, a priest bought a Bible, tore out some of its leaves, and burned it. The effect was not quite what he intended, as it so stirred the curiosity of the people that many inquiries followed. The homes of native Christians were sometimes beset by mobs, while stones and bullets hammered the walls. The missionaries and evangelists learned what it was to be stoned and even fired upon as they went their rounds, and to escape as by a miracle. An educated Spanish lady, school-teacher of the mission, was stoned on the public square of Zaragoza by a crowd of twenty yelling boys, without a hand raised in her defense.

Notwithstanding this determined opposition, political disturbances, and lack of support by the home churches, much was accomplished. New villages and even districts opened up encouragingly, particularly in the mountains of Asturias. The picture of beginnings in one of these mountain districts indicates both the difficulties and inspirations of this work. In Allevia a little house was rented for a chapel by a leading friend of the evangelical movement. The required notice of its intended use was given to the mayor, and on the evening of its dedication three tin lamps threw a dim light on the company of about forty-five persons listening earnestly, "with occasional sobs," and also with some fears. Opposition was

immediate and intense. The helper from Santander, put in charge of the work, reported increased numbers in attendance, some of the people coming from many miles away, but also increased persecution. The bishop sent a special delegate and two Jesuit missionaries to guard his flock. Mingled promises and threats made their natural impression on the minds of the simple villagers. From neighboring villages came a rabble of fanatics to terrify them. Some who were merely curious were frightened back to the old fold; but it was impressive to see with what heroism many stood firm. With no pastor, as sheep without a shepherd, they bravely faced their great trial.

A Good Accomplishment

At the end of ten years there were connected with the two important stations six outstations; two native pastors and seven native preachers; three churches, with 215 members; a boarding-school for girls, with eleven pupils, and a total of 209 pupils in all schools. Yet these figures show the least part of what had been done in those years; hundreds of towns and villages were now more or less eager for a better type of religious life; new missionaries were importunately called for to meet the opportunities. Yet instead of reenforcement came retrenchment; for want of needed appropriations a school of sixty pupils was closed. In 1881 Mr. and Mrs. W. H. Gulick removed to San Sebastian, near the border of France, and after the withdrawal of Rev. T. L. Gulick, because of ill health, there was left to the mission in Spain but this one station. The centers thus vacated were put in charge of efficient Spanish evangelists and pastors. But in the face of every kind of persecution, and the untiring energy of Jesuit and Franciscan missioners, traversing the provinces to warn off all attendants on Protestant teaching, it was a pitifully undermanned mission that was to be found in Spain at the close of the '70s.

If the opening of the Mission to Spain was beset with obstacles, the task in Austria was even more difficult. "In no other mission field occupied by the Board," is the report after sev-

eral years of endeavor, "are so great hindrances encountered to the dissemination of the truth as in Austria. The utmost ingenuity of which Jesuit experience and craft are capable has been employed to devise legal restrictions upon every possible form of evangelical effort from abroad. The missionary can enter no pulpit; can hold no public service to lecture or preach or read the Scriptures, without applying to the local authorities for a permission which they are at liberty to withhold. The giving away even of a tract may subject to a fine, and, if the offense is repeated, to imprisonment or exile from the country."

Beginning in Austria

Three men, with their wives, Rev. and Mrs. E. A. Adams, Rev. and Mrs. Henry A. Schauffler, and Rev. and Mrs. A. W. Clark, made the brave beginning in 1872, locating at first in Bohemia, the land of John Huss, and at the capital city, Prague. When, in December of the following year, they had secured a place for a service and posted a notice, according to the law, of a Bible lecture to be given the following Sunday on the theme, "Loving One's Neighbor," the chief of police flatly refused to allow the service. At length reluctant permission was granted to hold the meeting, but only at the home of the missionaries, and for invited guests; a license fee was required and a police officer was in attendance to watch the proceedings. Every item in the service was scrutinized, professedly as a safeguard against some political plot; when an attempt was made to introduce singing, the officer objected, giving his consent only after being reminded that men were allowed to sing freely even in the saloons.

In spite of such restrictions the winter showed unexpected progress. An intelligent and attentive audience of 100 to 150 was secured, including some of the Reformed Church, who were tired of infidelity and glad to hear the gospel. A Sunday-school was started in Mrs. Schauffler's parlor for German children; later, Bohemian boys were included. Colporters and evangelists were secured as openings appeared, but as Aus-

trian law forbade the disposal of tracts in any way except by gift or immediate sale and required colporters simply to show samples and take orders, this department was much restricted.

At the opening of 1874 opposition became so oppressive that it was determined to seek new locations. Innsbruck in the Tyrol was selected for the Clarks and Bissells, Brünn in Moravia for the Schaufflers, while the Adamses remained at Prague. Yet after this rearrangement they were not to find the way opening easily or at once before them. Mr. Schauffler at Brünn was absolutely prohibited from inviting even a half dozen Christian friends to his house for worship, though many were eager to come. He was for a time allowed to give lectures on the Bible if he would pledge himself not to pray or sing or perform any other act of worship; but even this privilege was afterward denied through the efforts of a Roman priest and a Lutheran pastor.

Driven to Relocate

The chief service which the missionaries in Moravia were then able to render was through personal intercourse with a few individual believers, especially some pastors; for, in contrast with the situation in Prague and Bohemia, in Moravia the pastors of the Reformed Church began to show sympathy with the missionaries' effort. Circumstances diverted the Clarks from Innsbruck to Gratz, where the same general methods were pursued as in other parts of the field, with particular care not to transgress the law. In Prague disappointment was met when, near the close of 1875, fresh and intenser complaints against the missionaries compelled the closing of the Sabbath-school, and finally the suppression of all public services. By working to help Bohemians of evangelical temper, notably in aiding the school for girls established near Prague by Pastor Schubert, whose work as preacher in the mission hall in Prague had been a notable help, the mission's influence was indirectly maintained until fairer times should come.

Such better times did come as a result of patient waiting. By an appeal to Vienna the malignant action against the work of the Schaufflers in Brünn was reversed, and a limited opportunity was allowed them. Through the kind offices of Dr. Joseph P. Thompson with the Evangelical Alliance at its session of 1879 in Basle, Switzerland, an appeal was presented to the emperor of Austria, resulting in the redress of some of the grievances set forth.

A Purer Type

One ground of objection to the missionaries' efforts was the criticism, not altogether uncomplimentary, that they taught too strict a religion. The type which would be approved is described as "an easy kind, leaving out the hard things and retaining the comforting ones." The report of the missionaries in this regard is not without a touch of humor. "If missionaries insist that 'Remember the Sabbath day' means anything more than to have the best time possible, wherever and with whomsoever it may be; or that 'Thou shalt not commit adultery' means anything more than outward deference to public opinion, not at all to be strictly interpreted among friends; that 'Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbor' means anything like reproof, or censure, or prohibition of lying or deceiving one another; or that 'Thou shalt not steal' or 'Thou shalt not covet' mean that we shall not take advantage of our neighbor, and get what we can from him,—all this makes the gospel too onerous. Hence some, who for a time came to hear, find the instructions of the missionaries hard sayings and turn away. One attendant on the service declared her intention of leaving the meetings because when the missionaries spoke against lying some of the audience looked at her. She knew she sinned often in this way, but it hurt her feelings to have it spoken of as a sin."

Despite opposition, political, ecclesiastical, and personal, headway was made. The first church was organized in June, 1880, in the house of Mr. Clark, in Prague, as the Free Reformed

Church of Bohemia, with twenty-six members. The mission that had struggled for its very life had become at last so far established as to be ready for the next stage in its development.

The Mission to Mexico

In Mexico the American Board encountered a strange mixture of races and of culture. One-half the population was of pure Indian origin, a small fraction pure Spanish, the rest a mixture of the two races. All degrees of civilization were found, from the barbarism and even savagery of the Indians in the mountains of the northwest to the polished manners of the Spanish gentleman. The Indian element was the more vigorous and capable, the mixed race occupying the high positions in political, commercial, and educational affairs.

While the Roman Catholics claimed about ninety-five per cent of the population, this claim was found to be greatly exaggerated. The new constitution of 1860 had proclaimed religious liberty and opened the way for Protestant missionaries. Unsettled conditions delayed for a time any missionary advance, but the growing sense of freedom in the state stimulated the desire for religious liberty, and the power of the priests began to be shaken, from a conviction that they had been the oppressors of the people.

The time seemed providential for the American Board to begin its work in the young republic. Other societies had made a beginning since 1865. The Presbyterians and Methodists had entered the central and southern portions of the country; the northern and western parts of the republic were left as a clear field for the American Board. Miss Rankin, associated with the American and Foreign Christian Union, was ready to transfer her mission, centering at Monterey, to its care. Two of the three members of the first graduating class of the Pacific Seminary offered themselves as missionaries; with the sending of these two young men, Rev. J. L. Stephens and Rev. David F. Watkins, in 1872, to Guadalajara, the

capital of the state of that name, the work of the American Board in this land was started.

The young missionaries at once found influential friends who promised aid and counsel; among them the governor of the state and the superintendent of public instruction. At once, also, they were besieged with callers eager to talk with them on religious subjects. Opposition and abuse followed; letters were thrown in at the windows declaring, "Mexicans do not want Protestant rascals," and warning them to take care. But Mr. Stephens was living in the same house with the commander-in-chief of the Mexican army, who declared that he would publish the threat and would defend the missionaries with his whole army if necessary.

At Guadalajara

Here, as in all of these nominally Christian lands, the press was of great value in getting hold of the people. From the first, American tracts and Bibles were in demand; stocks were sold out almost as soon as received. When public meetings could not be held it was always possible quietly to scatter the printed Word. A thousand tracts on the duty of reading the Bible could be distributed in the city of Guadalajara during Holy Week and passed through many hands as the streets were crowded. People would come in from towns and villages in all directions to secure papers containing news respecting the religion of Jesus Christ. As the Roman Catholics were printing eight different papers weekly, with the special object of attacking the missionaries, there was no lack of advertising. The mission felt at once the need of a press of its own which Catholic influence could not control.

Notwithstanding the fierceness of the opposition, the missionaries won a large circle of friends, among whom were some of the Romanists themselves. Once only in those early days did they suffer physical attack, when a party of men and boys threw stones at them, slightly injuring Mr. Watkins. Guadalajara was indignant at the outrage, and it was admitted that the blow was worse for Catholicism than for Mr. Watkins.

By the close of 1874 the opposition of the Romanists seemed to be dying down; the missionaries could go about and preach without hindrance, meeting everywhere with marked kindness. Mr. Watkins' house had become too small for the weekly services and the governor had sent word that he hoped soon to give him a good building for public meetings. More than 100 had been added to the "Society of Reformed Catholics" within the year and more than 200 seemed to be so earnest in the Christian life that they could be sent out, in turn, to carry the gospel to others.

At Monterey

At the Northern Mission around Monterey it was possible to push out somewhat, and it was encouraging to find people awakening from their sleep of indifference. Ten churches were reported in 1874, with 220 members; there were 125 pupils in the schools, and three new churches had been formed within the year. One method of outreaching is indicated by the story of three members of the Monterey church, men who made crockery and sold it through the state. As they went through districts where there were no evangelical churches, in small towns and *haciendas*, they would sell their wares in the daytime and at night would collect little companies of people to read the Bible and pray. Thus many were reached who would have turned a deaf ear to the missionaries, and seed was scattered widely over a needy field.

The Assassination of Mr. Stephens

In the winter of 1873 the town of Ahualulco, about ninety miles from Guadalajara, had shown itself so cordial to the Protestant teaching that it was decided to make it a new outpost. Day and evening schools were begun, and public services held. After the first few days of opposition all tumult seemed to subside. But on the 2d of March, 1874, under cover of night, a mob of about 200, stirred to anger by Roman priests, assaulted the house of Mr. Stephens. Forcing the doors, they brutally assassinated the helpless missionary, hacking his head into

several parts, and mutilating the body. To the ferocity of murder was added the shame of robbery, as they stripped the body and carried off everything they could find in the house. To cap all, they entered the church and rang twice a merry peal of bells. It appeared afterward that the plot contemplated the killing, not only of this noble soldier of the cross, but of all his comrades in the Mexican Mission. Seven of the guilty ruffians were tried and condemned to death; it was almost impossible to secure an execution, but five of them finally suffered the death penalty.

Despite the shock to the mission, and the fears which this tragedy aroused in many of the adherents, evangelical work was not to be wiped out. Schools dwindled somewhat, but the "reunion" or congregation in Guadalajara was but slightly affected. The hunger for the gospel in Mexico was evident and inspiring. Converts could recite large portions both of the Old and New Testaments; nor did those who heard the Word listen for themselves alone; many were active in spreading the good news. On Christmas Day of 1874, at the close of the year whose early months had been so portentous, fifty-six were added to the church in Guadalajara, making a total membership of seventy-one. Many of these were from the very town of Ahualulco where Mr. Stephens was murdered. In July of the following year twenty more were added. Here and in northern Mexico work was spreading into outlying *pueblos* or villages, where had gone those who had been won to the evangelical faith.

The Need of Trained Workers

With the increasing opportunities for preaching and the growing number of inquirers who needed to be taught, the mission was in dire straits for trained men to do this work. Miss Strong's school at Monterey was training some thirty girls, but as yet very few young men had been put under a course of instruction; a mission seminary was an urgent necessity if the work was to grow. Many slightly trained workers, who had been pressed into

service, it was found necessary to release because of their inadequate preparation for their task. The enforced return to the United States of some of the few missionaries stationed in Mexico, and the lack of reenforcements and of support for this young mission, gradually brought its endeavors almost to a standstill, save for such unorganized advance as could be made by native Christians passing on the message. It will appear in the next period how work was resumed by the American Board, and how the seed that had been sown and nourished by martyr's blood was to bear its harvest in a strong and aggressive mission.

Chapter XVII

APPROACHING MATURITY

This second period in the American Board's life, from 1850 to 1880, showed as marked development in its organization at home as in its operations abroad. To begin with, it grew bigger as the years went on. As first constituted, no limit was set upon membership; the only rules prescribed by the charter required that members should be elected by ballot at the annual meeting and "that not less than one-third shall be composed of respectable laymen, that another third shall be composed of respectable clergymen, and the remaining third to be composed of characters of the same description, whether clergymen or laymen."

The Enlargement of the Organization

But as the United States increased in number and the Great West began to be developed, and, moreover, as the churches then working through the Board also multiplied, it became necessary both to limit the membership of the Board and to determine a fairer ratio of representation. Accordingly, at the annual meeting of 1864, rules were for the first time adopted concerning the election of members. As finally accepted they fixed the number of active members at 150, with the same distinction as to lay and clerical as before; called upon the active members to accept their membership as a pledge to be constant in attendance at the annual meetings of the Board; provided that the proportion of Congregational members to Presbyterian should be two to one, and settled upon a fixed proportion of the total number for each of the several states. From time to time the limit of membership was raised until the corporation had grown to 225 members in 1880.

The statistics of residence of the members at the beginning and end of this period indicate something of the changes going on in the "home base." In 1850, 81 were from New England, 47 from New York, 10 from New Jersey, 18 from Pennsylvania, 22 from the rest of the country. This rest of the country then included a few of the Southern states, Virginia, Maryland, South Carolina, Georgia, Tennessee, and what was then the Great West, Ohio, Indiana, Missouri, and Michigan, one representative coming from each of the three states last named. In 1880 there were 128 members from New England, 25 from New York, 4 from New Jersey, and 2 from Pennsylvania; one each from Virginia and Alabama, the reduction being due to the withdrawal of the Presbyterian and Dutch Reformed churches from the support of the Board. The growth of the West is evidenced by the fact that Illinois, Wisconsin, Minnesota, Iowa, and California now appeared, each with several representatives, while Kansas, Dakota, and Oregon had one each.

The deaths and withdrawals from the corporation during this period, 271 in number, far exceeded the total membership at its close, when the Board had become in its personnel practically a new organization. The changes among the Board's officers were no less marked. When the Reformed Church in America withdrew to form its own missionary organization, in 1857, Hon. Theodore Frelinghuysen, a distinguished member of that Church, felt compelled to resign from the presidency of the Board. Thereupon Mark Hopkins, president of Williams College, was chosen to the office, which he held for thirty years. His name gave distinction to the Board in many quarters, his genius and counsel brought wisdom to its administration, and his significant addresses at the annual meetings added much to the celebrity and stimulus of those historic occasions. In 1857, also, Mr. William Jessup was chosen to the vice-presidency, and he was followed in 1864 by another distinguished Presbyterian layman, Mr. William E. Dodge.

RUFUS ANDERSON
Secretary, 1832–1866

SELAH B. TREAT
Secretary, 1847–1877

NATHANIEL G. CLARK
Secretary, 1865–1894

LANGDON S. WARD
Treasurer, 1865–1895

MARK HOPKINS
President, 1857–1887

EDMUND K. ALDEN
Secretary, 1876–1893

RICHARD S. STORRS
President, 1887–1897

JUDSON SMITH
Secretary, 1884–1906

JOHN O. MEANS
Secretary, 1880–1883

SARAH L. BOWKER
President, W. B. M.
1868–1890

LATER OFFICERS OF THE AMERICAN BOARD

The withdrawal of Secretary Rufus Anderson, in 1866, after thirty-four years of magnificent service in the Board, the death of Secretary Treat, in 1877, after a like prolonged term of faithful and efficient labor, and the resignation of Secretary George W. Wood, in 1871, to resume missionary work in Turkey, left as executive officers, at the close of the period, Secretary Nathaniel G. Clark and Treasurer Langdon S. Ward, who had come into the service since 1865, and Secretary Edmund K. Alden, whose election was in 1876.

Notable changes had come also in the make-up of the Prudential Committee by the decease of those who linked the earlier years of beginning with this period of more normal growth: Charles Stoddard, John Tappan, and Nehemiah Adams, the first named serving on the committee for forty-one years, during the last thirteen of which he acted as its chairman. No other layman in the United States or Europe, it was believed, had rendered larger service to the foreign missionary cause. Near the beginning of this period there came to the Committee, Rev. Augustus C. Thompson, D.D., and Willian T. Eustis; a little later, Linus Child, Henry Hill (after thirty-four years as treasurer), and Alpheus Hardy; and at length, Abner Kingman, Ezra Farnsworth, J. Russell Bradford, Joseph S. Ropes, and James M. Gordon (after ten years' service as treasurer), men who were to transmit the traditional character and ability of the Committee to the later time.

The Civil War

The work of the American Board could not but be affected by the War of the Rebellion. The anticipation of it, as it became imminent, brought to the supporters of the Board the added sorrow of danger to the interests they were guarding. It seemed inevitable that the thought of the nation would be absorbed in the conflict; that her young men would be swept into the armies, and that the cost of the war would dry up the springs of benevolence or divert them to other than missionary channels. Yet the result did not so prove. There was for a while a reduced

number of missionary candidates, but the Board's supporters proved loyal to it through all the draining years of the war. While there was a temporary stringency at one time or another during the period, at the end there was not only no debt, but a balance in the treasury.

Moreover, the issues of the war removed from the platform of the Board's annual meetings and from the burden of its administration questions that had proved very heavy during the years preceding. Indeed, before the close of the war the Board had clearly voiced its antagonism to slavery, which earlier it had affirmed more mildly. At the annual meeting of 1861, in one of two resolutions on the subject, it declared, "we fervently implore the God of nations so to overrule the conflict that the rebellion may be crushed; slavery, its prime cause, removed; and that peace, prosperity, and righteousness may be permanently established throughout our whole land."

One unforeseen but prized benefit which the war brought to the Board was its awakening of sympathies on the mission fields. It has been already recounted that in several of the missions, notably India and Turkey, extra efforts were made in the direction of self-support, and special gifts came from native Christians, and not a few foreign residents, some of them high in official life, to help fill the treasury when the regular sources of supply were likely to be reduced.

Valued Allies

The American Board in this period also drew to itself the interest and support of many friends outside its natural constituency. The organization of the Turkish Missions Aid Society in England, in 1854, shows the impression which its work was making in that land. Formed to aid "evangelical missions in western Asia and the east of Europe, especially those of the American Board," and with the Earl of Shaftesbury as president and several distinguished and titled men on its board of officers, this society contributed in the first year of its existence about $5000 to

the Turkish missions of the American Board, and thenceforth became an annual contributor. In the critical times of 1863 the Free Church of Scotland gave £1300 in aid of American missions in India and Turkey, one-third of which was gratefully received by the American Board.

Ties of comradeship with English friends of missions were still further cemented by the general conference at Mildmay Park in October, 1878, the modest forerunner of the world conferences of to-day. Following that assembly, Rev. E. G. Porter, of Lexington, Massachusetts, representing the Board, through meetings in public halls and private drawing-rooms in different parts of England, won new and influential friends for its enterprises in Asia Minor, where Great Britain was then exercising a protectorate.

The aid of the Bible societies, British and American, had become so substantial and adequate that in 1863 the Board was prompted to secure an amendment to its charter releasing it from the obligation to use for the work of translation and publication so large a percentage of its funds as the original act had required.

Withdrawal of Cooperating Churches

The Board was organized on undenominational lines. At the outset, before work had fairly begun, its corporate members included one Episcopalian, one member of the Dutch Reformed Church and six Presbyterians; afterward the German Reformed Church was also represented. On the foreign field Congregationalists were in happy cooperation not only with Presbyterians and Dutch Reformed Church brethren, but with those of other communions. The Japan Mission during its early years included members of six different denominations, Presbyterians, Cumberland Presbyterians, Dutch Reformed, Baptists, and Methodists, as well as Congregationalists. For a while the Cumberland Presbyterian Church conducted most of its foreign missionary work through the American Board, contributing both men and money. Even after that church maintained

a mission of its own in Japan, Dr. M. L. Gordon remained a loved and valued member of the American Board Mission.

Two bodies of the Christian Church, which had been united with the Board in missionary work, withdrew during this period. The Reformed Church in America, commonly called the Dutch Reformed Church, after twenty-five years of united work, formed its own foreign missionary organization in 1857; and in 1870, upon the reunion of the two wings of the Presbyterian Church, the "New School" felt in honor bound to transfer its support from the American Board through which it had maintained its foreign missionary work for fifty-eight years. These withdrawals were viewed with regret by all concerned in them; there was nothing but good-will on both sides. But those who withdrew felt that for the development of their branches of the Church and for the larger service of missions, the division would result in increased power. And this, it is believed, has been the result. As, by an agreement made in 1832, some of the Board's missions had been particularly assigned to the Dutch Reformed Church, being developed by men of that communion, and in accord with its policy, it was a simple task, when the division came, to turn over to this church these missions in Amoy and Madras. The Presbyterians took over the Gaboon, the Syrian, and the Nestorian missions, as well as work among some of the Indian tribes, with whom they had been more closely associated. Despite the change, certain individuals of the Presbyterian Church maintained a lifelong allegiance to the corporation of the Board or to the service of some of its missions, thereby enriching its fellowship for long years. To many of the missionaries, who felt compelled to resign from the Board in loyalty to their church affiliations, it was a sore trial. Dr. Calhoun of the Syrian Mission, coming forward to speak at the annual meeting of 1870 in Chicago, began, "I am getting to be an old man; I am losing my memory; I cannot remember that I do not belong to the American Board."

The shrinkage in the Board's work thus threatened by the withdrawal of these two influential bodies was, in the providence of God, largely prevented by the organization of the Woman's Boards of Missions, the most significant event on the home field during this period. From the days of Ann Haseltine and Harriet Atwood, women had shared with men the perils and labors of the mission field, and unmarried women had been employed as teachers in mission schools. More direct labors for women were then impossible.

The Woman's Boards

Through all these years, also, women had shared with men in sustaining the missions. The earliest auxiliaries and mission aid societies were largely of women, as, for example, the one formed in Park Street Church, Boston, in 1823. Now the time had come to organize the women of the churches into an effective agency, both for developing interest in the home churches and for stimulating the work on the field. Stirred in part, at least, by what earnest women had accomplished during the Civil War through the Christian Commission, and impelled by a growing appreciation of the inexpressible misery of womankind in many mission lands, a few great-hearted Christian women in Boston and vicinity were prompted to organize a society auxiliary to the American Board. Secretary Clark, to whom the matter was broached, gave his cordial support to the project. Misgivings, criticisms, and even opposition had to be overborne, but the faith and determination of these women, notably of Mrs. Albert Bowker, were not to be daunted. In 1868 the Woman's Board of Missions was organized, with its headquarters in Boston and Mrs. Bowker as its first president. Later in the same year the Woman's Board of the Interior was formed, with its office at Chicago; five years afterward appeared the Woman's Board of the Pacific, with the states west of the Rocky Mountains as its territory, and its headquarters at Oakland, California.

At once upon the organization of these Boards, it seemed

that new opportunities were discovered for their ministry. "The unity of the Spirit's work was recognized in that no sooner did the women in America begin to do their duty toward their sisters in other lands than the women there began to cry, 'Give us the bread of life.'" By tours among the women of the villages, as in Turkey; by the visits of Bible readers to women in their homes, as in India; by maintaining girls' schools and seminaries of distinctive excellence, and, at length, by starting hospitals and dispensaries in which women should care for their sisters, they enlarged and enriched the work of the American Board in all its fields. And by the energy and skill with which they organized the women at home and systematized the gathering of funds, they attained a success in administering their work which has provoked the admiration, not to say the envy, of the American Board itself.

Financial Gains

The receipts of the Board for 1850 were $251,862.21; for 1880, $613,539.51. One might think that in this period there could have been no problem of finance. But these figures hardly tell the story. The receipts for 1850 were unusually small, while those for 1880 marked an increase of $100,000 over the amount of the year before, due to the receipt of a phenomenally large legacy. The fact is that through all these years the question of ways and means was an anxious problem for the Board's administration. Secretary Anderson, in a special report read at the annual meeting in 1859, just before the jubilee year, brought out the fact that in thirty out of the forty-nine years of its existence, the Board had been obliged to report a debt; not that its expenses had exceeded its income in all these years; in many cases it had merely carried along a debt that had been incurred before. There had been on the whole an upward tendency; every four years, with one exception, had marked an increase in receipts. The difficulty had been that with the rapid growth of the missions and the consequent increase in cost, the receipts had not grown correspondingly. But if missions were to be

maintained, provision must be made for growth and development as well as for planting.

The fluctuation of receipts was often a surprise and disappointment. It seemed as though every gain must be followed by a loss. In 1857 a fine showing was made; a debt of $36,000 was paid off; the missionary packet, the *Morning Star*, was built, launched, and sent out, with a surplus in the treasury to maintain her for a year; expenditures for missions were moderately increased, and the year closed with only a small deficit, due to special expenses in the Turkish missions. But the next year the Board had to report a debt again, due in part to financial disturbances at home and abroad, but, in part, to causes not adequately explained.

The jubilee year, 1860, was marked by the extinguishing of that debt and a resolution to have no more. The annual meeting planned to raise not less than $400,000 to celebrate the semi-centennial; there was great enthusiasm; outbursts of song by the congregation; a scene long to be remembered. Yet the next year, at the advent of the rebellion, a debt was reported of nearly $28,000.

The marvel of the Board's financial history during the period of the war has been already remarked. Notwithstanding the debt at the outset, in that dubious year of 1862, all expenses were met and the deficit reduced by more than one-half. In 1863, when there was an average advance of thirty-five per cent in the price of gold, the deficit was again cut in two, while in 1864, darker than any of the earlier years, and when, in spite of strictest economy, the expenses of the missions mounted up beyond all expectation, by unprecedented gifts both in the homeland and from abroad, the expenses of the year were met, the deficit wiped out, and a small balance left in the treasury. The contributions of August, 1864, nearly $135,000, were greater than in any two months of preceding years. The amounts acknowledged that year from foreign lands, including gifts from the Sandwich Islands,

China, and India, were over $18,000. The help of the West now began to be felt, gifts from this section increasing more than one hundred per cent during the two years from 1862 to 1864. In 1861–62 the donations from some of the central Western states were as follows: from Iowa, $551; from Missouri, $334; from Minnesota, $227; from Kansas, $34; from Nebraska, $2.

A temporary decline in gifts followed the closing of the war, yet the receipts were for some time sufficient to keep the Board in good financial condition. By the bequest of $100,000 from Anson G. Phelps, at that time the largest legacy ever received by the Board, and from which $10,000 was paid annually into the Board's treasury, it was possible to report a small surplus in 1868 and a larger one in 1872. The annual meeting of that year was held at New Haven; for the first time since the Board met at the same place, twenty-six years before, the treasurer could report so considerable a balance as $8993.

Financial Decline

Notwithstanding so good a report, it was soon apparent that the income of the Board was not keeping up with the necessities of its work. Though six missions had been transferred to the Presbyterians in 1870, three new fields in Papal Lands had been added; as doors opened wider in the older missions the attempt had been made to enter; there had been an increase of one hundred in the missionary force and corresponding enlargement on the field, yet with no gain in the average annual receipts of the Board. The withdrawal of the Presbyterians, taking off a third of the constituency of the Board, the failure to produce the extra offerings promised for the missions in Papal Lands, and two colossal fires — in Chicago and Boston — accounted in part for the standstill in the treasury. Under such circumstances the policy of entering open doors could not be long continued. Deficits appeared and increased from year to year, save as they were met by special contributions, as at the memorable annual meeting in Providence, where, under

the lead of Ex-Governor Page, of Vermont, with great enthusiasm, and in less than one hour, $48,000 was pledged. The relief which came with the removal of this heavy drag of debt produced a scene without parallel in the Board's meetings. After the singing of the Doxology and a prayer of thanksgiving there were demonstrations of uncontrollable joy; laughing, singing, waving of hats, and bursts of applause. The dismay was correspondingly great when at next year's meeting, in Milwaukee, it appeared that, in spite of this deliverance and the vote to raise $500,000 for current work that year, the receipts were actually the smallest for many years and, after a sharp curtailment of expenditures, had left a new deficit of some $4500. It was apparent that still further reductions must be faced. The enthusiasm of public meetings could not be relied upon as a basis for appropriations. The expenditures must be brought down to the receipts. The hearts of all who cared for the work at home and abroad were made very heavy.

Light in a Dark Sky

The situation was the more difficult because the United States were then laboring to restore specie payments. The inflated values of war times were succeeded by heavy shrinkage; the country felt poor; it had little to give.

The year 1877–78 was one of the severest stringency which the missionaries had so far known. War and pestilence were raging on some of the fields. Hopes raised by the Providence meeting had been dashed by the record of the year since. Heavy retrenchments must now be made heavier. The depression on the field and at home was intense; the administration was desperate to know what to do; the question of abandoning the recently undertaken missions to Papal Lands was being considered.

Then upon a day in March, 1879, when the year was at its darkest, word came to the Board Rooms of a legacy of about $1,000,000 from Asa Otis, of New London, Connecticut, a quiet

but careful observer of the Board's work, who had read for years the *Missionary Herald*, and who had come to have thorough confidence in the policy and business management of the Board. The reaction at this news was tremendous. The burdened officers were almost bewildered by the change in situation. Within twenty-four hours the good news was carried at lightning speed to every mission of the Board, announcing immediate relief for the most pressing needs. For several years the word "retrenchment" was no more heard, though such economical use of the great gift was sought as should insure getting with it the most and the best. At the annual meeting in 1879 it was voted that of the amount of the Otis bequest not yet expended, one-third be devoted to the important educational work of the Board, with reference especially to the training of a native ministry; one-third to the needed enlargement of present fields through evangelistic efforts, and the remaining third to missionary exploration and the establishment and partial support of new missions, giving the first place to Central Africa.

The pressure of financial needs throughout this period was reflected in all the Board's utterances and deliberations.

Broadening the Home Base

At the annual meetings the ever-recurring subjects of discussion were how to increase missionary zeal in the churches, how to administer the funds most economically, and in what way to secure that support which would make the income match the necessarily increasing expenditure. A notable paper by Secretary Anderson, in 1861, on "Economy and Curtailment in Missions," early exposed the folly of abandoning missions in order to retrench; nothing could be gained by cutting down expenses to what a timid piety would consider within the easy convenience of the churches, which greatly need a system of missions large enough and costly enough to challenge their best efforts. It was also to be recognized that the Board had a work to do in this land as well as abroad; part of its purpose was to diffuse intelli-

gence and to awaken and sustain missionary interest and spirit in the churches.

During war times a careful examination was made of all departments, and even items of expenditure, when it appeared that ninety-four per cent of the income from all sources was being expended directly in the support of missionaries and in sustaining missions. To curtail expenses, the *Journal and Dayspring* was discontinued in 1861, with the purpose of making "freer use" of the religious and secular press for spreading missionary news. The *Missionary Herald* at this time had attained a circulation of 30,000 copies, the high-water mark in its history. The large number of copies distributed without charge kept it from becoming self-supporting then, as ever since. Yet its service in informing and stimulating the Board's supporters approved it as an indispensable agency.

The intimate relation between the American Board and the churches, often unrecognized in the early days, was now so generally accepted that there was less need of a large number of agencies. By the close of this period such agencies were reduced to two district secretaryships, one for the Middle District, with offices in New York; the other for the District of the Interior, with headquarters in Chicago. The local and district auxiliary societies had dropped out of sight, and the appeal of the Board was made to the churches directly, or through their district and state associations. The institutions of the local church, its Sunday-schools, missionary societies, and regular church services were now directly approached. The concert of prayer had become a recognized force in developing missionary knowledge and interest in the churches. At the annual meeting of 1869, 900 churches reported themselves as observing this monthly concert.

It was during this period, also, that the annual meetings, which at the first were purely business sessions, so increased in size and public interest as to make the business quite subordinate in popular thought to the inspirational features. All

these assemblies were now significant; some of them left indelible impress upon all present. The meeting at Cincinnati, in 1853, was the first beyond the Alleghanies, and called forth a paper by one of the secretaries on the "Relation of the West to Foreign Missions," in which the daring prophecy was ventured that occasional visits might be made to more distant states! The semi-centennial meeting at Boston, in 1860, was a jubilee indeed, with the clearing away of debt, thanksgiving over what had been accomplished, and the kindling outlook upon the next half-century, dimmed only by the apprehensions of the war so soon to break. The rejoicings over the close of the war in 1865 were celebrated at the first annual meeting held in Chicago, a city which ten years before was only looming on the horizon. The meeting at Rutland, in 1874, where Neesima and his Doshisha won all hearts, and the one at Providence, in 1877, where the crushing debt was lifted, were other memorable occasions of this period.

Policy Abroad

The most significant event of general character in the management of the missions during this period was the sending of a deputation to India and Ceylon in 1854–55, as described in Chapter IX. The inquiries which this deputation undertook covered practically all the questions of mission administration: the place and method of education; the creation and development of the native church; native leadership; the worth of other mission agencies, such as the press, the hospital, and the industrial school. It was a large undertaking, conducted on a large scale and with far-reaching results, as it led in one line to a revolution in mission policy and in another to as marked a change in the ecclesiastical constitution of the missions. The deputation's instructions called for such conference with the missions as might lead to joint conclusions. This conference feature was perhaps not perfectly carried out, inasmuch as to some of the missionaries it appeared that the deputation came to the discussions with opinions largely predetermined. But though

there was not unanimous agreement either on the mission field or in the Board's councils at home, the recommendations of the deputation were finally adopted and promptly put in execution. The narrative of events during this period in India and Ceylon; in Turkey, also, and, indeed, to some extent, in all the missions of the Board, as the new policy was extended to them all, has shown the results of the changed methods on the life of these missions.

That the restrictions upon higher education were unwise and even intolerable is manifest from the fact that during this period the principle was reversed, and schools and colleges for higher education on a yet broader basis were again established in many of these lands. By 1875 Jaffna College was in full operation, with as many as seventy students; Central Turkey College at Aintab had just secured its charter and was opening its preparatory courses; other higher institutions were in near prospect in Eastern Turkey and Japan. Secretary Clark, who followed Dr. Anderson as foreign secretary, was soon prepared to affirm: "The history of missions has shown that for the development of a Christian community, whose membership should be vigorous and self-reliant, competent to support and advance the religious institutions necessary for a permanent Christian civilization, some broader view of the education required must be adopted. The experience of the Board in the Sandwich Islands, and also in India, after thirty and more years of missionary labor there, is sufficient to illustrate the inadequacy of this early view of missionary education."

Meanwhile, other items of the new policy, particularly those touching the relation between the missions and the native Christians, were being abundantly justified. The new insistence upon native responsibility, both in the establishment of independent churches and in the use of native preachers and teachers, is in a large degree accountable for the substantial development of the Board's work on the field, and for the

prestige it has won among the foreign missionary societies of the world. Yet it was slow work to establish the policy upon mission ground. So as late as 1862 but thirty of the 140 churches connected with the missions of the Board had native pastors. The missionaries found many difficulties in the way of establishing native leadership; often they were not without misgivings about trusting weak and inexperienced disciples with authority. Yet experience showed that in every land responsibility developed capacity and devotion; in spite of some unfortunate experiences, the general result was good.

Secretary Anderson held to his conviction and pressed the application of it upon all the missions. Self-governing churches must be urged to self-support. Only in exceptional cases should they be helped in the building of their churches. The native church and ministry were to be honored as of equal standing, ecclesiastically, with the home churches and ministry. The paternal relation of the missionary to the native pastors must be regarded only as temporary and incidental. They were in theory, and as soon as possible should be in practise, brethren and co-workers. By 1875 the native pastorate was fully recognized by the Board and all its missions as essential; in many missions its help had come to be accepted, not only in preaching, but in counsel and administration. Often the natives became more effective preachers than the missionaries. In some fields it began to be seen that the work of the missionaries was rapidly becoming that of preparation and direction of native agents. By the end of the period proper pastoral work had been in certain cases largely transferred to native hands.

The move toward self-support was greatly stimulated by its advocacy at Harpoot. Mr. Wheeler's volume, *Ten Years on the Euphrates*, marked an epoch in the progress of this policy. Received at first with comparatively little favor by missionaries, as by the Board at home, it soon became better appreciated, till at length its claim was accepted as the just principle upon

TITUS COAN
Sandwich Islands,
1835–1870

CYRUS HAMLIN
Turkey, 1839–1859

STEPHEN R. RIGGS
Sioux Indians,
1837–1883

ELIZA AGNEW
Ceylon, 1840–1883

SAMUEL B. FAIRBANK
India, 1846–1898

JOHN L. STEPHENS
Mexico, 1872–1874

MARQUIS L. GORDON
Japan, 1872–1899

REPRESENTATIVE MISSIONARIES (Later)

which church life was to be developed in all lands. The results attained were varied in different missions, according to the circumstances of the people. In the last half of this period genuine and substantial progress was made in this direction. Madura, where little had been done toward self-support and a native ministry up to 1865, had in 1875 eighteen native pastors, supported from a common fund; in the Marathi Mission native Christians were believed to be in the matter of giving fully up to the standard of New England Congregationalists; Hawaiian churches during this decade contributed $50,000 for home and foreign missions; while the churches in Micronesia received no pecuniary aid from the Board. Self-reliance was further inculcated in most of the missions by the adoption of tuition charges for the schools and by the withdrawal of the Board more and more from the work of printing and publication where it was possible to turn over this department of work to native enterprise. At the end of the first ten years of this period the Board had diminished its printing establishments from ten to five; in the Sandwich Islands, Constantinople, Bombay, and Ceylon, other means of printing were provided.

The Missionaries

The securing of recruits in this generation was almost as serious a question as that of securing funds. The number of ordained missionaries in the field was actually one less at the end of the period than at the beginning, and though the number of single women had increased almost fivefold, largely in consequence of the organization of the Woman's Boards, the foreign agency in the conduct of the missions was hardly holding its own.

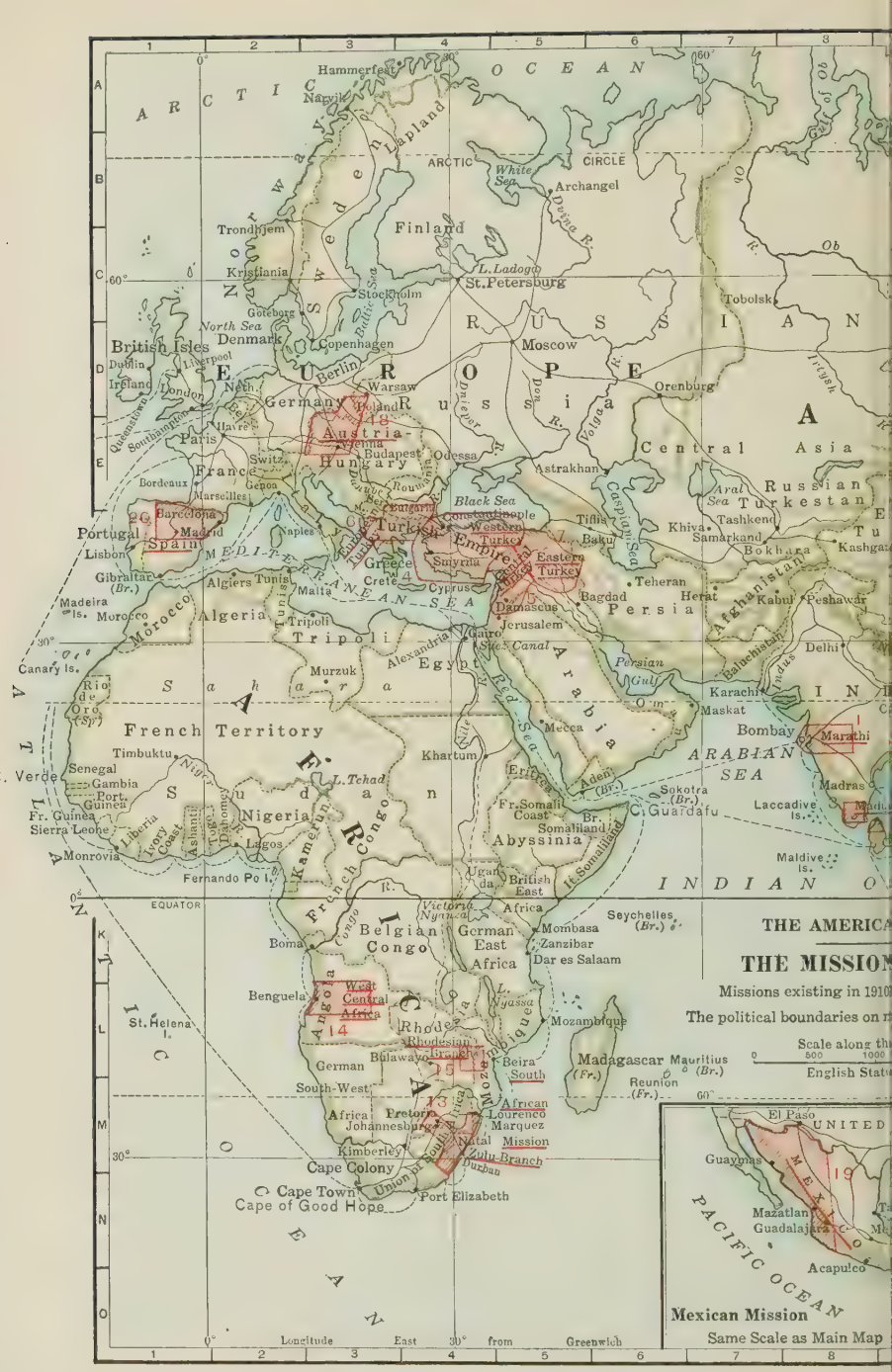
In this second generation of missionary work the care of its missionaries in the homeland, as well as on the field, became an increasing concern of the Board. The disabling of many of the veterans, the necessities of widows of missionaries, together with perplexing questions as to providing for the education of missionaries' children, were subjects of repeated

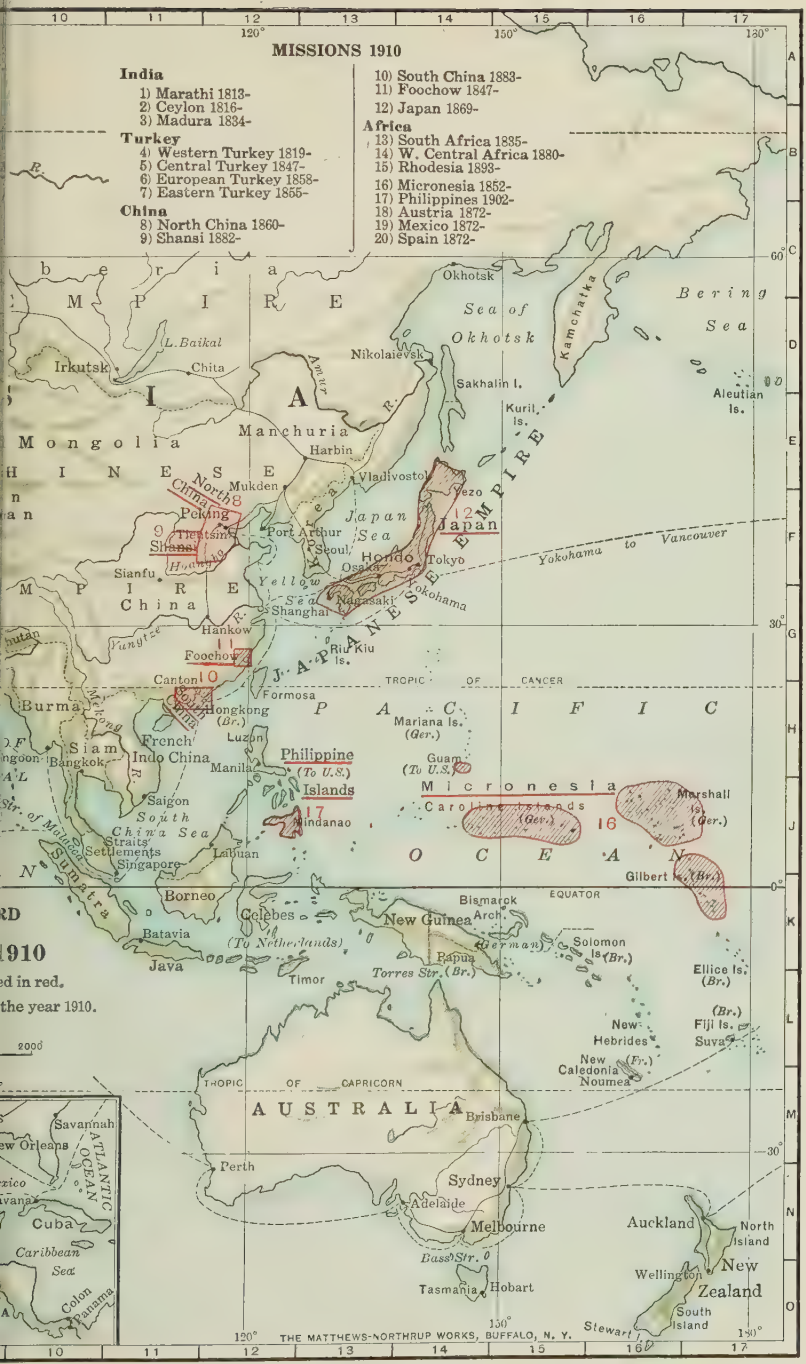
discussion and action at the annual meetings. What was evident through all was the purpose of the Board to provide for the needs of its missionaries and their families as sympathetically and helpfully as might be. It was in this period that Mrs. Eliza Walker, herself the widow of a missionary, and with children of her own to train, began to receive into her home at Auburndale, Massachusetts, the children of other missionaries coming to this country for education, and thus laid the foundation of the Walker Missionary Home, afterward by her care to become a house of blessing to a host of missionaries and their families, and the prototype of the similar Tank Home at Oberlin, Ohio.

With the care of missionary children in mind, it is an impressive fact to note that in almost every mission of the Board there were, even in this second period, children or grandchildren of missionaries who had returned to missionary work in the land of their parents' adoption and of their own birth.

The relations between the missionaries and the Board throughout this period are well indicated by Dr. Goodell in his farewell letter: "One thing is certain, viz., were I to live my life over again, and were it left to my choice, I would again enter the service of the American Board; I would again put myself under the direction of the same Prudential Committee; and I would again choose to carry on my correspondence with the churches through the same beloved and respected secretaries."

THE INCREASE, 1880–1910


THE AMERICA
THE MISSION
Missions existing in 1910
The political boundaries on
Scale along th
English Stat
Mexican Mission
Same Scale as Main Map
ARCTIC OCEAN
ARCTIC CIRCLE
Hammerfest
Narvik
Norway
Sweden
Lapland
White Sea
Archangel
Finland
Trondhjem
Kristiania
Stockholm
L. Ladoga
St. Petersburg
Goteborg
North Sea
Denmark
Copenhagen
Baltic Sea
Berlin
Moscow
Tobolsk
Ob
Irtysh
Gulf of Ob
RUSSIAN
EUROPE
Russia
Dublin
Ireland
Liverpool
London
Neth.
Germany
Warsaw
Poland
Dnieper R.
Don R.
Volga R.
Orenburg
Queenstown
Southampton
Havre
Paris
Austria
Vienna
Budapest
Hungary
Odessa
Central Asia
Astrakhan
Switz.
France
Genoa
Bordeaux
Marseilles
Black Sea
Caspian Sea
Aral Sea
Russian Turkestan
Tashkend
Barcelona
Portugal
Madrid
Spain
Naples
Turkish Empire
Constantinople
Western Turkey
Tiflis
Baku
Khiva
Samarkand
Bokhara
Kashgar
Lisbon
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
Greece
Crete
Smyrna
Central Turkey
Eastern Turkey
Gibraltar (Br.)
Algiers
Tunis
Malta
Cyprus
Teheran
Herat
Kabul
Peshawar
Madeira Is.
Morocco
Algeria
Tripoli
Damascus
Bagdad
Persia
Afghanistan
Jerusalem
Delhi
Canary Is.
Tripoli
Gairo
Suez Canal
Alexandria
Egypt
Persian Gulf
Baluchistan
Indus
Murzuk
Sahara
Rio de Oro (Sp.)
Arabia
Karachi
Maskat
Red Sea
Mecca
Bombay
Marathi
French Territory
Timbuktu
Khartum
ARABIAN SEA
Senegal
Gambia
Port. Guinea
Fr. Guinea
Sierra Leone
Liberia
Ivory Coast
Ashanti
Togo
Dahomey
Lagos
Nigeria
Kamerun
Sudan
L. Tchad
Eritrea
Aden (Br.)
Sokotra (Br.)
Fr. Somali Coast
Br. Somaliland
Abyssinia
Guardafu
Laccadive Is.
Madras
Monrovia
Fernando Po I.
Uganda
British East
It. Somaliland
Maldive Is.
INDIAN O
EQUATOR
Victoria Nyanza
Africa
Seychelles (Br.)
Belgian Congo
German East Africa
Mombasa
Zanzibar
Dar es Salaam
Boma
Benguela
West Central Africa
Angola
L. Nyassa
Mozambique
St. Helena I.
Rhodesia
Rhodesian Branch
Bulawayo
Beira
Madagascar (Fr.)
Mauritius (Br.)
Reunion (Fr.)
German South-West
Africa
Pretoria
Johannesburg
African Mission
Lourenco Marquez
Natal
Zulu Branch
Durban
Kimberley
Cape Colony
Union of South Africa
Cape Town
Cape of Good Hope
Port Elizabeth
Longitude East from Greenwich
El Paso
UNITED
Guaymas
MEXICO
Mazatlan
Guadalajara
Acapulco
PACIFIC OCEAN


MISSIONS 1910
India
1) Marathi 1813-
2) Ceylon 1816-
3) Madura 1834-
Turkey
4) Western Turkey 1819-
5) Central Turkey 1847-
6) European Turkey 1858-
7) Eastern Turkey 1855-
China
8) North China 1860-
9) Shansi 1882-
10) South China 1883-
11) Foochow 1847-
12) Japan 1869-
Africa
13) South Africa 1835-
14) W. Central Africa 1880-
15) Rhodesia 1893-
16) Micronesia 1852-
17) Philippines 1902-
18) Austria 1872-
19) Mexico 1872-
20) Spain 1872-
Okhotsk
Sea of Okhotsk
Bering Sea
Kamchatka
Nikolaievsk
Sakhalin I.
Kuril Is.
Aleutian Is.
Irkutsk
Chita
L. Baikal
Amur R.
Manchuria
Harbin
Vladivostok
Yezo
Japan
Mukden
Port Arthur
Seoul
Japan Sea
Hondo
Tokyo
Osaka
Nagasaki
Yokohama
Yokohama to Vancouver
Peking
Tientsin
Shansi
Huang R.
Sianfu
Yellow Sea
Shanghai
Hankow
Yangtze R.
Foochow
Riu Kiu Is.
Canton
Hongkong (Br.)
TROPIC OF CANCER
Formosa
Mariana Is. (Ger.)
Guam (To U.S.)
Philippine Islands
Luzon
Manila
Micronesia
Caroline Islands (Ger.)
Marshall Is. (Ger.)
Mindanao
Saigon
South China Sea
Straits Settlements
Singapore
Labuan
Borneo
Celebes
Batavia
(To Netherlands)
Java
Timor
Bismarck Archipelago
EQUATOR
New Guinea
(German)
Papua
Torres Str. (Br.)
Solomon Is. (Br.)
Ellice Is. (Br.)
Gilbert Is. (Br.)
New Hebrides
Fiji Is. (Br.)
Suva
New Caledonia (Fr.)
Noumea
TROPIC OF CAPRICORN
AUSTRALIA
Brisbane
Perth
Sydney
Adelaide
Melbourne
Bass Str.
Tasmania
Hobart
Auckland
North Island
New Zealand
Wellington
South Island
Stewart I.
Burma
Siam
Bangkok
French Indo China
Sumatra
Malay Peninsula
Bay of Bengal
Yunnan
Mekong R.
Hainan
Pacific Ocean
Atlantic Ocean
Savannah
New Orleans
Cuba
Caribbean Sea
Colon
Panama
1910
ed in red.
the year 1910.
2000
THE MATTHEWS-NORTHRUP WORKS, BUFFALO, N. Y.

Chapter XVIII

A PERIOD OF EXPANSION

With the opening of its seventh decade the American Board entered upon a period of quick enlargement. In what mere figures show the ratio of growth was greater in the first two decades; infancy is usually the time of most rapid increase in size. But if in physical proportions its largest gains were earlier, as the Board approached maturity it suddenly acquired new strength and efficiency. The impetus came with the Otis legacy in 1879. As described in the preceding chapter, that gift changed the whole face of the Board's sky. An amendment to the Board's charter was made necessary to allow it to hold larger funds. The limit, first set at $4000 income from real estate and $8000 from personal property, which limit had been enlarged in 1863, was now advanced to $2,000,000 personal estate and $1,000,000 real. Before the Board and its constituency had hardly adjusted themselves to the new situation there came, five years later, another bequest of nearly $600,000 from the estate of Samuel W. Swett of Jamaica Plain, Massachusetts, whose commercial interests in the Pacific Ocean, which his vessels traversed, had impressed him with the good work accomplished by the missionaries of the American Board in the Sandwich Islands. It was possible now more adequately to maintain the missions that had outgrown their resources and to answer some of the clamorous calls for advance.

In Income and Outgo

The projects to which Mr. Otis' bequest was apportioned were at once undertaken. By 1882 five new missions had been started; in 1884 another was added, altogether a more

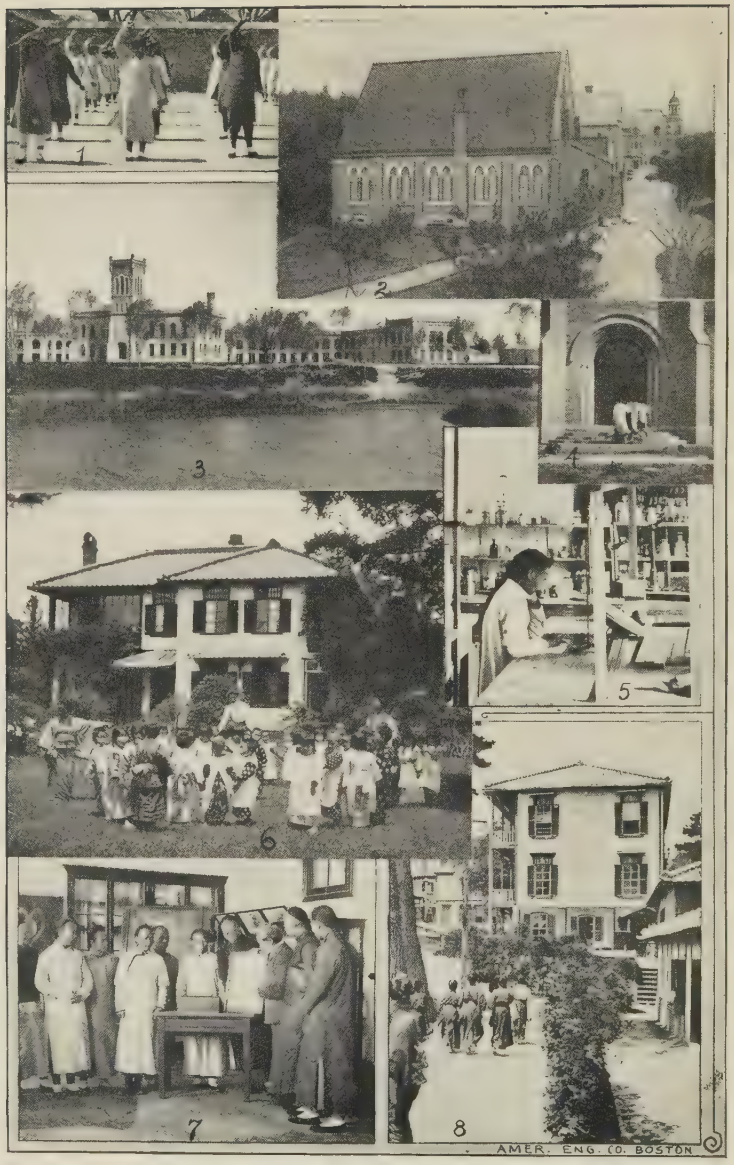
rapid enlargement of its field than had before occurred in the history of the Board. Though begun so promptly and strongly, this line of expansion did not make advance enough for some time to cause heavy inroads upon the fund assigned for the purpose. But of the thirds set aside for enlarged educational work and for evangelistic outreach, $265,000 had been expended for the former and for the latter over $285,000. When the Swett bequest was received, in 1884, it was treated in the same fashion and designated largely to meet special calls of evangelism and education, particularly in the newly awakening empires of Japan and China.

As a result of these great benefactions, receipts from living donors fell off somewhat; there was a lessened rate of giving for several years thereafter; yet it was gratifying to find that there was not more general disposition to rest upon these legacies. By 1890, when they were fast dwindling, the burden of the annual meetings became once more the securing of enlarged and extra gifts and the devising of methods to fill the needy treasury. But by that time the Board was fairly launched upon its broader and more diversified activities.

In Administration

In the beginning it was usual that each missionary should do somewhat of all kinds of work. Later in the larger stations there came a division of labor; gradually some missionaries were set apart to definite undertakings, particularly translation and publication. Now with the increase in forces and equipment it became the habit, both at home and on the field, to distinguish certain departments of labor. At length five general lines were recognized: evangelistic, educational, medical, industrial, and publishing, efforts of philanthropic or social sort being loosely grouped by themselves.

By this time the Board had reappraised its educational work and determined to provide Christian schools, not only for adherents, but for all who would attend them, and to promote a broad and general culture under Christian auspices. With



EDUCATIONAL UNDERTAKINGS IN CHINA AND JAPAN

1 A GYMNASTIC CLASS, PEKING
2 ALONG THE DOSHISHA CAMPUS
3 UNION COLLEGE OF ARTS, TUNG-CHOU
4 AT THE COLLEGE DOOR, TUNG-CHOU
5 IN THE LABORATORY, FOOCHOW COLLEGE
6 A KYOTO KINDERGARTEN
7 UNION MEDICAL COLLEGE, PEKING
8 A VISTA AT KOBE COLLEGE

the distribution of $50,000 of the Otis fund as endowments for Central Turkey College at Aintab, Jaffna College in Ceylon, Armenia College (then so called) at Harpoot, and through the Woman's Boards to the trustees of the Constantinople Home for education of wives for the native ministry, the few colleges of the Board already organized received encouraging recognition. Others were soon projected or begun; in all of them native teachers and professors were to be found in the faculty, tuition was required, and in general native responsibility and support was secured. In this period, also, the whole educational scheme of the missions was systematized from the kindergarten to the post-graduate school; in many cases it was more closely related to the educational life of the mission lands, as notably in India.

In the same way the medical line was now rapidly developed. In the early days it was but an incident; some ordained missionaries had also medical training and were able to take with them and use effectively a case of medicines; but they were not distinctively medical missionaries, and they had no such equipment as would now be thought necessary for the most inadequately provided missionary physician. Even in 1880 there were but thirteen men practising medicine in mission fields; of these, seven were ordained and only six distinctively medical missionaries. There were then no women engaged in this service. At the end of the period there are no less than forty-six medical missionaries, fourteen of them being women, with twenty-eight hospitals and thirty-seven dispensaries under their care.

The industrial department was virtually reorganized, not to say reborn, during this period. It was the early idea that among degraded peoples industrial teachers would be needed as sappers and miners, to prepare the way for the constructive work of the missions. Results on several fields disproved the theory that some measure of civilizing influence must precede any effective attempt to Christianize, whereupon the Board

for a time inclined to the opposite extreme, depreciating every other mission agency than direct evangelism. The results of this rigid policy were also disappointing.

At length many missionaries in various fields began to introduce certain lines of industry as a means of helping students to earn their support or as furnishing relief work in times of famine or plague. Yet in 1880 the industrial department was still in its experimental stage.

In 1893, in a paper dealing with industrial education as one of "Two Unsolved Mission Problems," Secretary Clark pointed out that it had been steadily coming to the front for some years and that missionaries without endorsement or formal encouragement had begun industrial schools in at least a half dozen fields of the Board. But while such education was, in the main, for providing self-help for students, many missionary societies were looking toward a wider activity in this line in order to prepare the way for self-supporting Christian communities. In Turkey, for example, it was found that "the best work yet done by any native pastors or preachers has been done by men who were trained to industrial habits and pursuits at the Bebek Seminary by Dr. Hamlin. The young men whom he brought together were all taught some useful occupation in connection with their studies. These men have made their mark wherever they have gone throughout the Turkish empire; they have been the strongest men, whether as pastors or business laymen, to be found in the Christian communities."

The development of industrial education has been slow and cautious. The expense involved in the equipment of technical schools is so great that the Board would have been unable to carry this undertaking far, even if it had so desired, and many experiments in this direction have, for one reason or another, not proved successful. The question is still an unsolved problem though, by force of necessity as well as by the impulse of broadening missionary purposes, industrial enter-

SOME LINES OF EVANGELISM

1 STREET PREACHING, MADURA, INDIA
2 A BIBLE READER OF TREBIZOND, TURKEY
3 A WOMAN'S MEETING IN WEST AFRICA
4 TENT MEETING, BOMBAY, INDIA
5 BOOKSTORE AND STREET CHAPEL, PEKING
6 A SERVICE FOR PATIENTS AT CEYLON HOSPITAL

prises have gradually developed in the less prosperous or productive lands in which the Board works. Many industrial plants, such as those at Ahmednagar, Sirur, and Bombay in India; Mount Silinda and Amanzimtoti in Africa, and at stations in all the Turkish missions, are among the potent and hopeful forces at work in these fields.

Publication as a department of the Board's activity has not grown like the others, inasmuch as in many fields the Board has got beyond its early need of maintaining presses and a corps of translators and writers. But as it is associated through actual cooperation or moral support with native presses and publications, this is still a clear field of service in every mission where there are regularly appearing vernacular periodicals, papers, pamphlets, and magazines, some of them with large subscription lists and mighty influence over a wide territory, and to which native Christian leaders as well as missionaries contribute. The power of the Christian press is not less but even greater than in the earlier periods. Dr. John P. Jones has said that the press is to-day the most important agency in furthering Christian thought in India.

The evangelistic field of missionary enterprise is as clearly marked and as fully developed as the others. In some lands, notably Japan, it is becoming the missionary's particular field, as he goes out to aid in proclaiming the gospel through the institutions and agencies belonging to the Christian communities. As the native agency has multiplied so rapidly in this period, there being 954 preachers in 1910 against 517 in 1880, in some cases, as in the Madura Mission, a regular part of the year's work is the itinerating, when missionaries and native preachers attempt to cover every district in a systematic effort to carry the gospel to those who have not heard it; in similar tours the churches also are visited for their spiritual upbuilding. The work of evangelism is as distinct and fundamental a part of missionary labor in this period as ever, while the other departments are felt to serve the same end as really if not so directly.

It looked for a time as though the Board's constituency would diminish rather than increase during the '80s, because of what was popularly known as the "Andover controversy." The mooted point with the Board was whether its missionaries should be required to affirm their disbelief in the theory of probation after death. A vote was passed at the annual meeting of 1886 in Des Moines, lamenting the tendency of this theory, and cautioning the Prudential Committee to guard the Board from committing itself to a doctrine judged to be divisive, perversive, and dangerous. It was not until 1893 that the issue thus started finally disappeared from the Board's platform and not until some years later that its disturbing effects had subsided.

In Comprehensiveness

During this time of public controversy there was considerable shifting of ground and change of attack. For several years the conservatives were strongly in the majority, while the positive and uncompromising attitude of the Home Secretary maintained the policy which the annual meetings renewedly approved. The conservatives feared the consequences of tolerating the theory in dispute, by which, they said, the nerve of missions would be cut. The progressives pleaded for freedom: the Board should not assume the place of an ecclesiastical council; there should be the same liberty for missionaries abroad as for ministers at home; whoever was acceptable to the churches here should be acceptable for service in the foreign field.

The strain of the time was intense. Personal factors complicated the situation. The controversy touched not only the appointment of new candidates, but the return to the field of missionaries on furlough who declared their sympathy with the new views. The annual meetings of the Board lost their wonted character and became the scenes of brilliant but stormy and unhappy debate. Moreover, the controversy resulted in some loss of receipts, although the seriousness of

the situation was less marked in this particular than in others. There were threats of separation and the forming of another missionary board. That such a split did not transpire witnesses to the Christian loyalty and charity of those on both sides of the debate. Men were not willing to deny the genuine faith and missionary zeal of those from whom they differed. Love of the "old Board" and its work, and trust in the spirit of Christ to guide those sincerely seeking to preach his gospel, held together the disagreeing constituency in this time of stress.

In particular, the election of Dr. R. S. Storrs as president, in 1887, upon the death of President Mark Hopkins, and his broad-minded and mediating policy, frankly announced and impartially applied, renewed confidence in the hearts of those who were trying to find a fair solution of the difficulty. The outcome was in close accord with the position which Dr. Storrs took in his letter of acceptance of the presidency. The Board did not further declare itself upon the vexed question of theology, which by this time had been relegated to the field of academic discussion; it did not put out of its own hands the decision as to the fitness of missionary candidates. But it did declare that neither the Board nor its Committee was a theological court, that missionaries were to have the same freedom of thought and speech as their ministerial brethren at home, and that private or provincial standards of theology were not to be used as barriers in the way of men in other respects qualified for missionary service. The heavy losses, both of men and money, that would naturally have flowed to the Board in these turbulent years, purchased for it a more comprehensive spirit, and, we may believe, forever determined that there shall be room in the Board, both in support at home and in service abroad, for all who feel that they are called to preach to the world the redeeming grace of God through Jesus Christ.

Among the readjustments which this struggle involved was the loss to the Board of its home secretary, Dr. Edmund K.

Alden. Possessed of marked executive ability, unusual gifts in the discernment of character, untiring industry, and a loving and kindly heart, Dr. Alden was also able to portray the missionary enterprise with memorable eloquence and power. His inflexibility in maintaining the theological standards to which he committed himself and to which he sincerely believed every missionary should be as firmly committed, and the zeal and adroitness with which he for a time carried his point in the administration of the Board, unfortunately obscured at the last a career of distinguished service.

The withdrawal from the same cause, in 1893, of Dr. Augustus C. Thompson and Mr. Elbridge Torrey deprived the Prudential Committee of two most efficient members, the former its chairman. Dr. Thompson had served the longest term and, with the exception of Charles Stoddard, by far the longest term of all those who have been chosen to the Committee. For more than forty-four years, or over half the lifetime of the Board, he had sat week by week at the Committee's table and had rendered freely an amount of laborious and skilful service such as money could not purchase. As a result, he was easily the best informed man on the Committee in matters pertaining to the work, not only of this Board, but of all other foreign missionary societies. Clear in his judgments, frank in the expression of them, strict in his allegiance to the convictions which he had carefully formed, Dr. Thompson was gracious in bearing and generous of heart, while the flash of his wit often relieved the strain of discussion at the Committee's table.

In Organization

Another result of these years of controversy was the readjustment of the American Board's organization to relate it more closely to its constituency. In the theological debates it was frequently charged that as a self-perpetuating corporation the Board was not sufficiently sensitive to the will of the churches whose agent it really was; that it claimed the gifts of the churches as con-

ducting foreign missions for them, while it managed its affairs as an incorporated body, independent of their control. The growing tendency among Congregational churches, especially those of the West, toward a more developed oversight and direction of denominational affairs by state and national organizations, pointed the appeal that the Board should attach itself organically to the churches it served. Now that other denominations, formerly working through the Board, had withdrawn, the way was easier for such readjustment.

During these troubled years various committees were appointed to investigate different phases of the Board's organization and action. As a result of one of these lines of investigation, a plan was adopted in 1894 which, with subsequent modifications, provides for nomination to corporate membership by district and state bodies of Congregational churches. The corporate membership has thus been greatly increased in numbers during this period, the limit being raised from 350 to 500, and the churches have now the main responsibility in the proposal of members, though the corporation itself has the right to nominate a certain proportion of new members at large.

It was during this period of reconstruction under pressure, also, that the president and vice-president of the Board were made *ex-officiis* members of the Prudential Committee. The legal right of the Board to elect women to corporate membership was also established, but so far has been exercised in only a few cases. The Canadian Congregationalists, as making the Board the medium of their foreign missionary operations, have been granted representation in the corporation, though outside of the national organization of the Congregational churches to which the Board is directly attached.

But the most significant expansion of all in the life of the American Board in this period has been the broadening of its aim. In all the periods of the Board's history its missionaries have gone forth under a strong sense of loyalty to Jesus Christ

and his great commission. But their attitude toward the people to whom they have gone has gradually experienced a change amounting almost to a revulsion of thought. The early missionaries regarded the heathen world to which they went as utterly depraved and doomed, feeding on lies and clinging to religions that were the invention of the devil. They viewed both with horror and with pity the wretched people among whom they made their new home, and set themselves with all the ardor of their Christian faith to snatch those whom they could reach from the death in which they seemed already involved.

In Aim

A closer acquaintance with these people, bringing better knowledge of their customs and faith, their ideals and modes of thought, did not lessen the sense of horror over their condition and of pity for the bondage of superstition in which, in all these lands, they walk in darkness. But it did bring a juster apprehension of the religious spirit underlying the crude and mistaken forms and of some points of truth and value in many of the oriental faiths to which appeal could be made, and, beyond that, of the potential strength of races which might be won for the building up of the wide kingdom of God on earth.

Moreover, the new science and philosophy which had begun to shape modern thought in all other fields of interest inevitably affected missionary motives and aims as well. The importance of man's environment, the unity of his nature, in which body and spirit are combined, the influence of racial and geographical elements as affecting character and habit, these and other new and constructive ideas in modern thought have tended greatly to broaden the conception of the missionary enterprise. From being what Dr. Dennis has called "a kind of slum work among sunken, degraded, and altogether degenerate races," wherein the effort was in pity to hold out a helping hand to such as would be saved, there is now a new appreciation both of the value of these belated nations and

of the necessity of seeking to redeem them in order really to save the people within them. The task is recognized still as primarily working for individuals, but now they are continually thought of and addressed as representatives of the race with whose life and fortunes they are bound, and in the regeneration of whose society and the Christianizing of whose national life they are to be factors. To the awakening, transforming, and equipping of these individuals both in the interior springs of their lives and in their outer action, so that they may become living forces in the redemption of their own people, the missionary sets himself with renewed purpose. And that Christian influences can be imparted to all the varied life of these ancient lands until the customs and ideals of their people are penetrated with Christian conceptions is the great and gladsome hope that inspires the Board's missions to-day.

Chapter XIX

INTO NEW FIELDS

West Africa

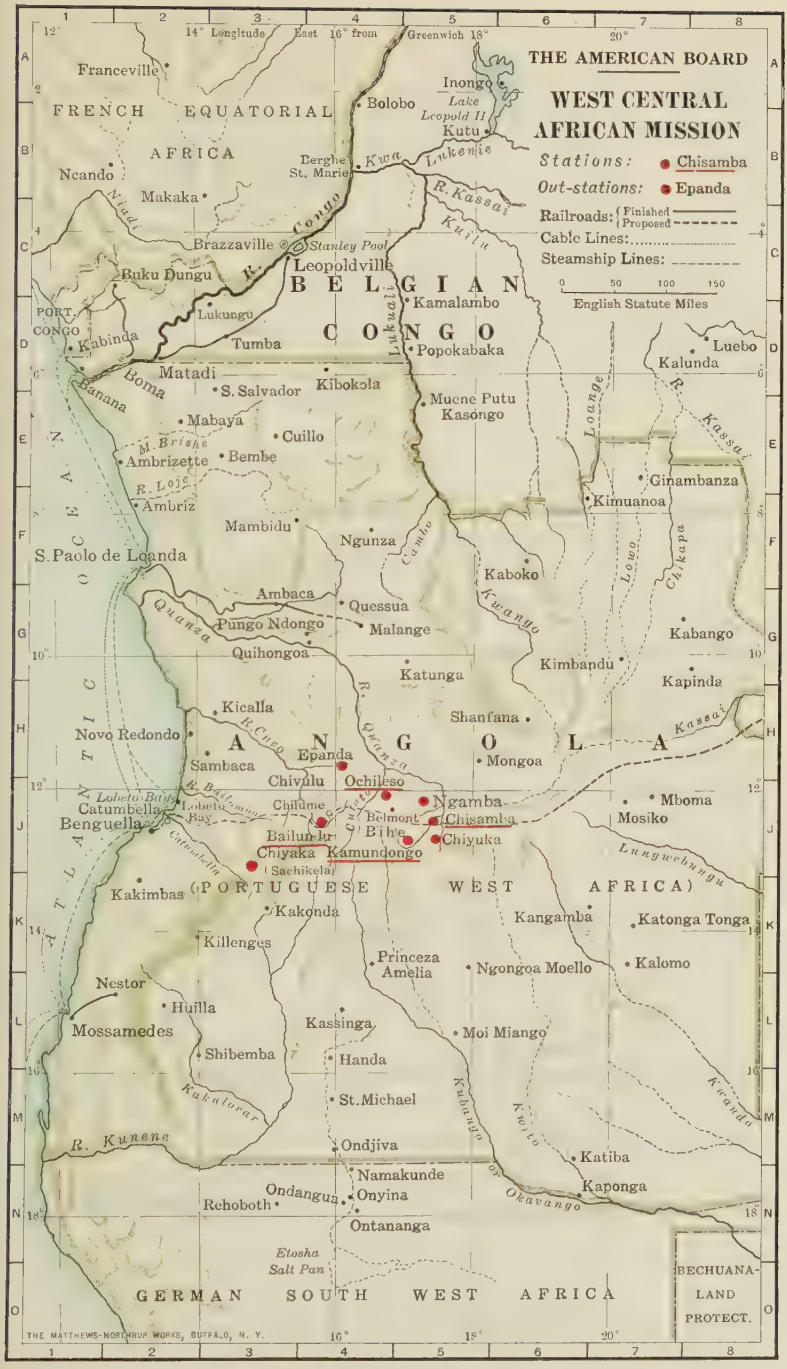
When it became possible to think of entering upon new fields the Board turned at once toward Africa. The project of another mission in that land was taken up with utmost care. Dr. John O. Means, then recording secretary of the Board and soon to be elected corresponding secretary, was appointed to make the investigations. His inquiry was painstaking and complete, involving not only a study of the literature on Africa, but consultations with officers of other Boards in England and on the Continent, and with officials of high importance in African affairs and in world politics. The report, presented to the annual meeting of 1879, was so complete in its survey of the land and its missionary possibilities as to be a document of first importance, not only for the American Board, but for every student of Africa.

Spying out the Land

The recommendation with which Dr. Means' report closed pointed to Bihé, in the province of Angola, on the west coast, as on the whole most nearly meeting the desired conditions. This location, some 250 miles east from the port of Benguella, with an elevation of 5,000 feet above sea-level, was accessible, healthful, populous, and in a potentially important field. Its tribes of vigorous and capable Africans, Bihénos, and Bailundos, nominally under Portuguese jurisdiction, were measurably untouched as yet by the vices of the coast, with no defined religious system or object of worship, and wholly unreached by missionary operations.

The Location at Bihé

The Board promptly accepted this report and determined to


THE AMERICAN BOARD
WEST CENTRAL AFRICAN MISSION
Stations: Chisamba
Out-stations: Epanda
Railroads: Finished Proposed
Cable Lines:
Steamship Lines:
0 50 100 150
English Statute Miles
14° Longitude East 16° from Greenwich 18°
20°
FRENCH EQUATORIAL AFRICA
BELGIAN CONGO
ANGOLA
(PORTUGUESE WEST AFRICA)
GERMAN SOUTH WEST AFRICA
BECHUANA-LAND PROTECT.
ATLANTIC OCEAN
Franceville
Ncando
Makaka
Niadi
Brazzaville
Stanley Pool
Leopoldville
Buku Dungu
Lukungu
PORT. CONGO
Kabinda
Tumba
Matadi
Boma
Banana
S. Salvador
Kibokola
Mabaya
Cuillo
M. Brishe
Ambrizette
Bembe
R. Loje
Ambriz
Mambidu
Ngunza
S. Paolo de Loanda
Ambaca
Quessua
Pungo Ndongo
Malange
Quanza
Quihongoa
Katunga
Kicalla
Novo Redondo
R. Cuvo
Epanda
Sambaca
Chivulu
Ochileso
Lobeto Bay
Catumbella
Benguella
Chilume
Belmont
Bailundu
Bihe
Chiyaka
Kamundongo
(Sachikela)
Kakimbas
Kakonda
Killenges
Nestor
Huilla
Mossamedes
Shibemba
Kassinga
Handa
St. Michael
Kakulovar
R. Kunene
Ondjiva
Namakunde
Ondangua
Onyina
Rehoboth
Ontananga
Etosha Salt Pan
Bolobo
Inongo
Lake Leopold II
Kutu
Kwa
Lukenie
Berghe St. Marie
R. Kassai
Kuilu
Kamalambo
Lukuali
Popokabaka
Muene Putu Kasongo
Loange
Luebo
Kalunda
R. Kassai
Ginambanza
Kimuanoa
Cambo
Kaboko
Kwango
Lowo
Chikapa
Kabango
Kimbandu
Kapinda
Shanfana
Kassai
Mongoa
R. Quanza
Ngamba
Chisamba
Chiyuka
Mboma
Mosiko
Lungwebungu
Kangamba
Katonga Tonga
Princeza Amelia
Ngongoa Moello
Kalomo
Moi Miango
Kubango or Okavango
Kwito
Kwando
Katiba
Kaponga
THE MATTHEWS-NORTHRUP WORKS, BUFFALO, N. Y.

plant another mission in West Africa. The event has fully attested the wisdom with which the selection was made. The region has proved healthful, the people responsive, and the chain of stations lies directly along the line of roads between the coast and the interior. As railroads are now being built in the province, it seems that they are to touch these highways of travel which the missionaries chose and to make access to the mission still easier. The Umbundu speech, also, which the missionaries of this Board were the first to acquire and reduce to written form, is a leading dialect of the great Bantu language and widely diffused throughout the interior. A Scotch missionary of a neighboring field has said that Bihé cannot be overestimated as a center for missionary work; he has found its people traveling in every direction, their word everywhere believed; it is his conviction that a more enterprising tribe of men does not exist in all central and southern Africa.

The First Missionaries

The first missionaries were sent out in 1880: Rev. Walter W. Bagster, an Englishman of the family associated with the famous Bible publishing house; Rev. William H. Sanders, son of American Board missionaries in Ceylon, where he himself was born, and Mr. Samuel T. Miller, son of a freedman in Virginia, educated at Hampton Institute, unordained but fitted, it was believed, to be of special service in the establishment of work in Africa. The party landed at Benguella in the middle of November, and were civilly treated by the Portuguese authorities. But the customary delays and difficulties in dealing with the easy-going natives made it a wearisome and vexatious task to secure porters and prepare for the inland journey.

Getting on the Field

After many disappointments at last they got started on their slow and adventurous journey of three weeks, and, after many vicissitudes, arrived at Bailundu, only a short distance from Bihé, March 28, 1881. It was a picturesque procession that wound into this African village. Beasts of burden not being available, the loads

were carried by porters, and the travelers either had to walk or be carried, African fashion, in *tepoias* suspended from poles on men's shoulders. Mr. Bagster, who had already suffered much from coast fever, rode an ox; Messrs. Sanders and Miller, who started in *tepoias*, walked most of the way; then there were seven donkeys taken for use in the interior, and some sixty natives, each carrying a load of about sixty pounds. Including all the camp followers, ninety-five persons were in the company. The party was cordially received by Kwikwi, king of Bailundu, who fairly compelled them to remain there as his "children," although the king of Bihé was likewise eager for their coming and had even sent out his "secretary of state" to extend his hospitality. With the coming of reenforcements in the next two years, including a skilled mechanic and teacher and a medical missionary, it became possible to open a second station at Kamundongo, six miles from the king's residence at Bihé.

Facing the Task

The pioneers were quickly established in temporary quarters and began to make acquaintance with the people and their speech. Soon they were occupied in building permanent homes, constructing a written language, winning confidence, and beginning instruction. In 1882, before work was fairly under way, the mission was saddened and depleted by the death of Mr. Bagster, who suffered heavily from coast fever and upon whom the labors and hardships connected with the founding of the mission had put a harder strain than flesh could bear. The first to offer himself for the new mission, in a sense its leader, combining rare good sense and practical efficiency with a deep and sensitive spiritual nature, Mr. Bagster was fitted for superb service in this field. A letter written to his father shows the sense both of shock and appeal with which the eager missionary viewed the raw heathen: "When the real, live, dirty, naked savage comes before you, not in book or letter, not in fancy or passing notice, but under your own eye; when you place your hand upon his

shoulder and feel the dirt and nakedness; when you turn that man's face toward you, and there you read — 'no good thing'; when the foulest pictures, thoughts, and words fail to show him as he is, then, and only then, you have to go to Jesus for faith to believe that for such Christ died; then you need to be very humble and look upon this poor creature and say, 'My brother.' Oh, father, there is much to be done. There are long hours, days, months of patience, labors and prayer needed to raise such. There is enough to do, and yet how powerless we are."

A sentence from another letter, written after he got to his task, reveals the same sensitiveness of soul and the reality and splendor of his missionary faith: "The same belief I have now that I had before I left America, only with this difference: it is real now, it has entered into my own experience; it has become a part, not only of my convictions and belief, but it has grown into me, become mine; it is no longer hazy and far off, it has touched me; I have felt the coolness of the chill of Death's hand — 'dead in trespasses and sin' — touch me, and, thank God! even now I can say with all the same feeling that often swept over me in California, Boston, and England, 'In this name we conquer' — Jesus — 'for He shall save his people from their sins.'"

Expulsion of the Missionaries

Hardly had the mission recovered from the loss of its leader when, in a whiff of suspicion, and as it proved, instigated and bribed by unfriendly traders, in May, 1884, King Kwikwi stirred up his people to drive out the missionaries. So sudden and threatening was this outbreak that from both stations they were compelled to flee to the coast, leaving most of their possessions to be plundered by the natives and with their labor apparently altogether lost. Several of the missionaries returned to America; Mr. Walter remained at Benguella to defend as might be possible the interests of the mission. Happily, after a short time, the chiefs, convinced of their mistake, and influenced by the

governor-general of Angola, invited the missionaries to return. Mr. and Mrs. Sanders, who had only gone to the coast, were back at Bailundu the same year; in due time their associates joined them and the mission was reestablished, with Mr. Walter settled for a while at Benguella as its business agent.

Aside from this outbreak no serious opposition was experienced from native ruler or people. The king of Bihé did show a disposition to treat Mr. Sanders harshly, but, while stirring his people to an attack, he fell dead in a drunken carouse, and the missionaries were relieved of further danger from that quarter. New stations were gradually opened, as at Chisamba, by Mr. Currie in 1888. This station has from the beginning been maintained by missionaries and funds from the Congregational churches of Canada, operating through the American Board. Schools of various grades, under the instruction of missionaries, were established at all the stations; a press was set up and books and papers put into circulation; new houses were erected both for the missionaries and for those natives who had yielded themselves to the influence of a Christian civilization. Preaching also was begun, religious meetings being held, before there was any chapel, in the homes of the missionaries on Sundays and week-days.

The Mission Planted

At Bailundu, in 1887, fourteen young men, the oldest not more than twenty years of age, were baptized and organized into a church, with deacons from their own number, and with their most promising representative soon chosen as pastor. This first church erected at its own expense a house of worship, and began evangelistic work in the surrounding villages. The significance of the step which these lads took appears in the fact that they solemnly renounced the use of alcoholic drinks and tobacco, and the practises of slavery, fornication, and of idolatry, that is, fetishism of every sort.

The further story of this established mission belongs with the record of the other African fields and is told in a later chapter.

East Central Africa

At the annual meeting of 1879, when it was determined to open a mission near Bihé in West Africa, it was decided also to start one on the other side of the continent. The Board's early purpose to found an interior mission in East Africa had not been forgotten. It was never meant that it should confine its operations to the small territory occupied in Natal; and even that was now further limited by the incoming of other missionary societies. Also the development of the Christian Zulus required a larger field, where they might exert their influence and broaden their horizon. The time seemed ripe for the venture and all signs pointed to Umzila's kingdom as the location. Umzila was then the great chieftain of the region in South Africa lying south from the Zambesi River and stretching to the latitude of Delagoa Bay, where it joined the territory claimed by the British. Portuguese authority was hardly recognized here except along a narrow strip of coast. The whole interior, commonly called the Gaza country, was under the control of Umzila. On this vast and fertile tableland there was a field as yet untouched, with people absolutely heathen, yet with fine native capacities and belonging to the same Bantu race as those of Natal. They were a direct challenge to the Board's expanding purpose; it might yet be possible to plant through Umzila's country a line of mission stations to touch, on the lower Zambesi, the waterway that reached almost to Bihé on the western side of the continent.

A Renewed Purpose

Accordingly, in 1880, Mr. Pinkerton of the Zulu Mission was appointed to organize an exploring expedition, and, if the way opened, to prepare for starting the new mission. The young missionary set about his task enthusiastically, only to be stricken down in the malarial region, through which, either unwisely or by adverse necessity, he had laid his route, and where his lonely grave

Exploring Tours

became the first landmark in the march of Christianity into that new country. Mr. Richards, sent to join the enterprise, bravely took the place of the fallen leader and pushed his way safely to Umzila's capital on the high lands, where he was cordially received, and urged to begin missionary work. A ringing appeal was sent to America for four families to answer the call of this African chief. But these families could not be found, nor were the Zulu helpers ready to offer themselves, and Umzila's invitation was unanswered. The door thus allowed to close was never again so easily to be opened. When the Board was ready to make new trial, in 1888, and another expedition, consisting of Messrs. Wilder and Bates, with difficulty approached the royal kraal, and, after weeks of delay and spying, at last got audience with the new chief Gungunyana, they found that the temper had changed. Others had preempted the ground; a foreign prospector was searching the land for gold; the Portuguese were actively negotiating. The king gave courteous attention to the missionaries, but finally replied: "Your feet have been too slow in coming. We have other missionaries now; we cannot take you also." With this reproach weighing on their hearts, the messengers of the Board were forced to turn back.

Temporary Location at Inhambane

A temporary location had been made at Inhambane Bay by Messrs. Wilcox and Richards, in 1883, until the way should open to the interior. Rev. and Mrs. Benjamin F. Ousley and Miss Nancy Jones, negro helpers from America, came to their aid, and the East Central Africa Mission was really organized there. Several locations around the Bay were occupied, and Mr. Ousley reduced the Sheetswa language to writing so far as to translate into it some of the New Testament. The region, however, proved too unhealthy to allow the mission to lose sight of the original plan of settling on higher land away from the coast.

With the passing of Gazaland into the control of the British South Africa Company, the Board renewed explorations into

the region which then came to be called Rhodesia, and in 1893 the new mission was formally organized. It was planned to employ native Zulu evangelists; to make industrial work a strong factor in the development of the mission; and to fix the central location at Mt. Silinda, from which highland station systematic work could be attempted, particularly by native helpers, and during the winter months, at least, on the lower part of the Busi and Sabi rivers that drain the country. The exploring party of 1891 had the good fortune to meet Hon. Cecil Rhodes, from whom they received many courtesies. When their purpose was explained to him he expressed his approval of it, promised them a concession of several thousand acres of land at nominal rent, and taking a map marked out what he considered the most favorable location for the mission, which later proved to be the very spot selected for the Mt. Silinda station. To this region in the highlands, 4000 feet above sea-level, on the upper waters of the Busi River, about 200 miles inland from the coast, with fertile land all about, and the one fine forest of the region adjoining, the founders of the mission, Messrs. Wilder, Bates, Bunker, and Thompson, the last a medical missionary, their wives, and Miss Nancy Jones, the first unmarried woman of the negro race ever commissioned by the American Board, set forth from Durban June 21, 1893.

Rhodesia at Last

It took them three months to get to their field. From Beira they sailed up the Busi to Jobo's kraal, where they shifted to smaller boats, and eighty miles further were forced to take to foot travel for the last 150 miles of their journey. At each stage their goods were reduced to smaller packages, each family at last dividing its possessions into three classes, "must have," "would like," and "can't take."

The Journey in

Camping along this unfamiliar trail, with the untrained carriers, was not a simple or comfortable experience. The trials of the time were more easily laughed over afterward than

while they were endured. But the slow rate of progress gave chance for making acquaintance at the kraals of minor chiefs along the route and for winning confidence by such kindnesses as could be shown. Some surgical operations were performed, and many simple ministries to the sick. It was a good opportunity, too, to study the people at close range, to test the availability of the Zulu language, and to learn the new dialects. The wildness of the country, the beauty of the scenery, and the noises of the beasts and birds of the forests, gave interest and excitement to every mile of the journey. Plenty of venison and fish could be secured for the table. At last Mt. Silinda was reached on October 19.

Beginnings of Work

Beginnings were like those in other primitive or savage lands. Houses had to be built, land cleared, crops planted, roads marked, and all the main lines of missionary work started from the bottom. The difficulties were manifold. It was not easy to establish friendly relations with officials and colonists. The preceding year there was scarcely a white settler in the region of Silinda, but before the mission opened English and Dutch farmers had come in and made a settlement some thirty miles north of the prospective station. Complications as to possession of the mission site, arising from the disputed authority of the Rhodesian or Portuguese governments in the region, involved much trouble and even expense.

It was hard work, also, to gain the confidence and good-will of the natives; they had not had the best of experience with white men. Moreover, they were not accustomed to industry or self-control, but had the savage's habits of idleness, drunkenness, vice, and crime. Grossest forms of polygamy, including the buying and selling of women, were common. The intense superstition of the people, in bondage to witch-doctors and all the tyranny of witchcraft, made it hard to win any genuine interest in Christian ideals and ways. A scourge of rinderpest soon necessitated the killing of all the cattle and made still

heavier the burden of the mission. For goods brought to within even 100 miles six months before could not be secured until some new means of transportation should be obtained.

In spite of these difficulties and the primal struggle to maintain life and health, mission work in all its usual forms was promptly begun. On December 2, 1893, less than two months after the arrival of the party, the mission voted that a day school should be opened on December 11. It was not easy to start this school; parents were suspicious, and when the consent of the chief and the parents was obtained it appeared that the children did not care to attend. But a few were drawn into the school, and when the time for the exhibition came it happened in Africa, as in the rest of the world, that parents were proud to see what their children could do, and the future of the school was assured. The second station was opened in 1895, at Chikore, twenty miles west of Silinda, Mr. Wilder being assigned to open work on this new frontier.

Little by little the situation grew easier; the confidence of government officials was won; many of the colonists became friendly; some permanent buildings and equipment were secured; the work of the pioneers became more the regular tasks of missionaries. The further record, therefore, belongs to a later chapter describing the progress of the period in all the African missions.

Shansi

The roots of the Shansi Mission run back to Oberlin, where, in the year 1879–80, a dozen students in the theological seminary proposed to Prof. Judson Smith, their honored teacher in church history, that they should go under his leadership to establish a mission in China. It did not come out quite as they had planned. But from this interview grew the "Oberlin Band," and when the American Board determined the following year (1881) to organize the Shansi Mission, one of that band, Rev. Martin L. Stimson, and his wife were the pioneers

to go to the field. Other members followed until, in 1900, the force numbered sixteen; and, as Dr. Smith in 1884 succeeded Dr. Means as foreign secretary, and the China missions then came under his care, he did become virtually the leader of his former pupils.

The province of Shansi, lying to the west of the imperial province of Chi-li and separated from it by mountain ranges, is one of the interior districts of China, a highland country, 3000 feet above sea-level, in large part mountainous, but with broad and fertile valleys between the ranges. Its area is about that of Minnesota, 82,000 square miles; like Minnesota, too, it is a rich wheat country, while in the mountains are great beds of unmined ore, the coal alone representing fabulous wealth. It has a population of 12,000,000, but even so, is not so densely settled as other provinces of China. The people are unusually well-to-do, according to Chinese standards, having a higher grade of homes and a more adequate living than many of their countrymen. A thrifty commercial people, they are noted for their intelligence and enterprise; a large proportion of the bankers of China come from this province of Shansi.

Beginning the Work

The first station was opened at Tai-yuan-fu, the capital of the province, but in the interests of mission comity the work was soon transferred to Tai-ku and a second station begun at Fen-cho-fu. Both these cities lie to the south of the capital in a large and thickly settled district where no other society is working. The missionaries were at once struck with the superior character of the villages compared with those they had seen in the rest of China. It was noticeable, also, that many of the temples were neglected and decaying; idols were covered with dust, broken, or lying on the ground. In the cities they were better maintained than in the country; visiting several temples, the missionaries found not a single worshiper.

But this loss of faith in the old way did not betoken a zeal

for the new. These thrifty people were money worshipers and customarily indifferent to other appeals. Furthermore, the province was fearfully addicted to opium; seventy-five per cent of the people were judged to be users of the drug. The missionaries were compelled to open refuges where they could exercise, not only physical care and relief, but the benefit of Christian support in the effort to break off the habit. Although there were not a few lapses, yet many conspicuous cures were effected such as the native quacks could not show. Soon it was necessary to charge an admission fee to provide for the expense of this enlarging work, with the result that a better class of patients was secured and insincere applicants were driven away. The ministry of these opium refuges thus formed one of the most effective ways of preaching the gospel in Shansi.

The touring of the region was also an important part of the early evangelistic effort, opportunity being found in connection with the characteristic village and town fairs to gain a hearing for the new gospel. And here, as elsewhere in China, the street chapel was successful for opening acquaintance. It was slow work, however, in this interior province to get any serious attention to the truth. A crowd was easily gathered in places where often no Westerner had been seen until the missionary came, but the cry, "Here comes the foreign devil," was frequently raised, and sometimes with evident ill-feeling. However, by patience, straightforwardness, and kindness, prejudices were gradually overcome. When a little boy in Tai-ku fell from his house, Mr. Price took over some simple remedies and dressed the wounds each day until they healed. The wealthy neighbor, "lord of wealth," as he was called, who had scarcely spoken to the missionaries before, was now quite willing that some of his household should visit them daily. As the household consisted of not less than twenty people, a considerable increase of friends was made by this one event.

In those days it was worth much to the waiting missionaries

to find here and there a life clearly transformed by the gospel. One such convert, in 1889, became a true helper at Fen-cho-fu.

An Early Disciple

A Christian tract had drifted into his hand during boyhood days and had awakened a desire to learn more about Jesus. Though his parents approved, they could give him no help. Years afterward the young man heard the gospel preached at the American Mission chapel at Peking, and later applied for baptism. On his return to Shansi, Mr. Stimson gave him a course of training and found in him a true helper and an eloquent preacher. And he bore the test of a changed life; whereas before he had the characteristic greed of his people, he became notably generous, his charities going out on every side and involving real self-denial.

With the opening of chapels and the starting of schools, this mission also passed from the era of beginnings into that of normal growth; its record thereafter belongs to the general story of the China missions in this period.

South China

As the Shansi Mission can be traced back to the influence of Oberlin Seminary, so the South China Mission had for its progenitor the American Missionary Association. The work of this society among the Chinese on the Pacific coast had been so successful that in the '70s there was a company of devoted Chinese Christians from Kwangtung province urging it to establish a mission in their homeland that would help those returning both to keep true to their new faith and to conduct missionary work among their countrymen. The proposal to undertake work in this province the Association passed on to the American Board. So when it became possible, with the Otis and Swett legacies, to enter new fields, the Board voted in 1882 to reenter Kwangtung with what was at first called the Hong Kong Mission, but was afterward named the South China Mission.

Where Home and Foreign Met

The new enterprise in this province, the earliest field of the

Board's work in China, was at first somewhat tentative, the object being definitely to safeguard and utilize the results of mission work in California. The first missionary, Dr. C. R. Hager, who had labored among the Chinese in and around San Francisco, was located at Hong Kong, where for eight years he was the only missionary on the field. The endeavor was to keep in close touch with the returning Chinese and through them to reach out into the country districts adjoining. At once an evening school was opened where English was taught after the manner of the schools for the Chinese in San Francisco.

The Mission's Method

The method of advance in this mission was simple. Some acquaintance being made in the villages and cities round about, upon a visit from the missionary, meetings were held; next, a site for regular services was secured; an available teacher or preacher was put in charge, and thus a new outstation was formed. The system involved much touring and patient seed sowing; the missionary was especially dependent upon the support of the people on the field, as the Board hesitated to enter strongly into a region which it had given over to others.

With such slight equipment, advance was made; in some respects the gains were notably rapid and strong. At length in Hong Kong a large building was secured for mission purposes, providing for the missionary's home, the church, schools, and business office of the mission, all at a cost of several thousand dollars, the funds being raised almost entirely on the ground. In 1893, with the arrival of Rev. and Mrs. C. A. Nelson, the city of Canton was also occupied and the business center of the mission was transferred to that city. These two stations are all that have been occupied. Nevertheless, the mission, slightly fed by funds from the homeland, except by contributions from Chinese in America, became firmly established and efficient, so that it too passed out of the experimental stage to find its place among the substantial missions of the Board in the Celestial Empire.

Northern Japan

In 1883 the Board took over from an English society its mission work in the important city of Niigata, the only open port on the west coast of Japan. This enterprise was given the name of the Northern Japan Mission, mainly that its support might be drawn from that part of the Otis fund which had been set aside to found new missions. The region was indeed remote from the other locations of the Board in the empire at that time, as was also that of Sendai in northeastern Japan, which became the second station in this mission. Yet the character of the work to be done here was practically the same as that in the rest of Japan, and, as there was no abiding reason for maintaining the two names, in 1891 the artificial division was abandoned and Japan became again a single mission field of the Board. From the first, the story of missionary effort in Niigata and its region is so like what was going on elsewhere in the land that the report of its progress may be included with the rest.

An Artificial Division

Northern Mexico

When occasion arose for expanding the Board's work in Mexico, in 1882, a new mission was organized for the same reason as in northern Japan, and the enterprise in the state of Chihuahua was called the Northern Mexico Mission. The first station of the mission was in the city of Chihuahua, situated on the Mexican Central Railway, 225 miles south of El Paso on the Rio Grande, a three days' journey by rail from St. Louis. Recognizing the new era that was opening before the young republic, the American Board seized upon this important center, nearest to and in close touch with the United States.

Another Temporary Distinction

Upon opening work there, Rev. and Mrs. James D. Eaton, who were the founders of this mission, discovered a situation full of promise. The Roman Catholic Church, which had been

the exclusive religious organization in this city for generations, had characteristically kept the people in ignorance and had been satisfied to secure their outward allegiance. The old Church had now been deprived of her immense estates, neither priests nor sisters of charity being allowed to wear the dress of their orders on the street, and the traditional and grossly superstitious rites, involving ghastly exhibitions, being confined to the church buildings.

A system of public schools had been introduced, with 2000 pupils already under instruction; a public library had been founded; and enterprising business men were eager to learn the English language. The mayor of the city, a man of distinguished ability and intelligence, was ruling with firmness, but with kindness. The time was opportune for the introduction of evangelical Christianity. Though the mass of people were still desperately superstitious and prejudiced, a good number were ready to listen, while some of the more enlightened adherents of the Roman Catholic Church welcomed the mission as likely to stimulate and elevate their own communion. Some converts were quickly won. Within four years (in 1886) enough had been baptized to organize a church, which soon attained good size and prosperity with a pastor of its own. Outstations were opened; educational work was undertaken; the life of a full-fledged mission was soon under way.

But in Mexico, as in Japan, the work of the two sections was practically the same. There was no sound reason for maintaining permanently the two organizations, so that in 1891, after a decade of work, when the period of beginnings was over, the Western and Northern Mexican Missions were combined. The story of the progress in the north will be told with that of Western Mexico in a later chapter.

Chapter XX

THE FARTHER EAST

Japan

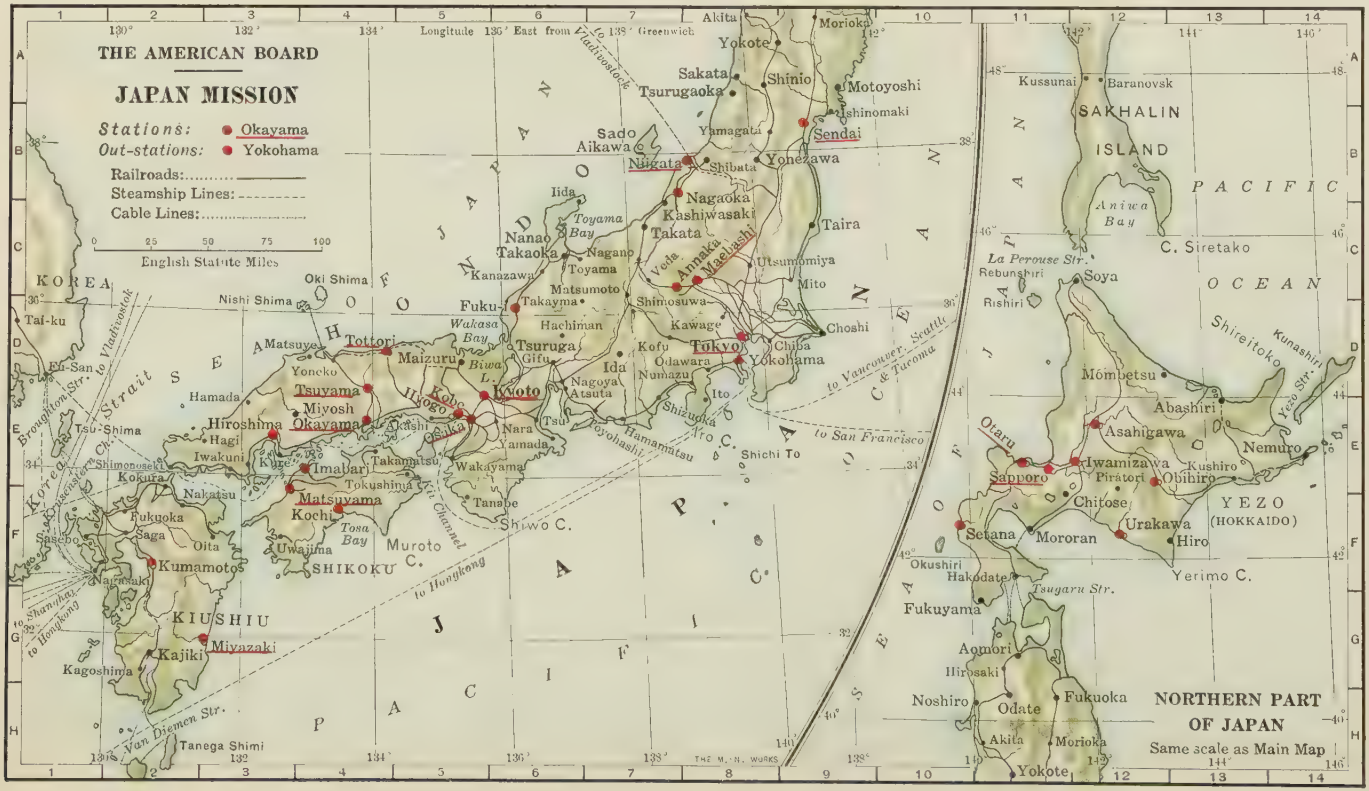
The opening years of this period were marked by phenomenal advance in all missionary work in Japan. The second conference of Protestant missionaries, held in Osaka, in 1883, was a meeting of deep spiritual power. At the convention of Japanese churches in Tokyo, the following month, the kindling religious enthusiasm was fanned into flame. Indeed, revival conditions were already manifest in some large cities. Upon the graduation of the first class from the Kyoto Training School, as the Doshisha was then called, its fifteen young men had been sent out to attempt evangelistic work among their countrymen. Thus the way was prepared for a yet more vigorous attack whenever the churches should be ready for advance; that time had now come.

Years of Swift Increase to 1888

The delegates went back from the convention fired with a new ambition to lead their churches to larger service. In cities like Osaka, Niigata, and Kyoto, there soon appeared revival scenes; everywhere the churches became filled with attentive congregations; as the months went on the movement toward Christianity grew in extent and power. A crisis seemed to have come in the religious history of Japan.

An important factor in this evangelistic work was the services or mass meetings held in the bare and barn-like but commodious theaters. In them thousands could gather, little families or companies occupying separate stalls on the floor, often bringing their lunches and making a day of it. All classes of society were represented, from the coolie to the priest and the *samurai*; ladies had a

Theater Services


THE AMERICAN BOARD
JAPAN MISSION
Stations: Okayama
Out-stations: Yokohama
Railroads:
Steamship Lines:
Cable Lines:
0 25 50 75 100
English Statute Miles
Longitude 135° East from Greenwich
JAPAN SEA
PACIFIC OCEAN
KOREA
Strait of Korea
Broughton Str.
Van Diemen Str.
to Vladivostock
to Hongkong
to Vancouver, Seattle, Tacoma
to San Francisco
Akita
Morioka
Yokote
Sakata
Tsurugaoka
Shinio
Motoyoshi
Ishinomaki
Sendai
Sado
Aikawa
Niigata
Yamagata
Shibata
Yonezawa
Nagaoka
Kashiwasaki
Takata
Taira
Iida
Toyama Bay
Nanao
Takaoka
Nagano
Toyama
Kanazawa
Matsumoto
Takayama
Annaka
Maebashi
Utsunomiya
Mito
Oki Shima
Nishi Shima
Fuku-i
Hachiman
Shimosuwa
Kawage
Choshi
Taf-ku
Matsuye
Tottori
Wukasa Bay
Tsuruga
Gifu
Kofu
Tokyo
Chiba
Yokohama
En-San
Yoneko
Maizuru
Biwa L.
Kyoto
Idu
Nagoya
Atsuta
Odawara
Numazu
Ito
Hamada
Tsuyama
Kobe
Osaka
Miyosh
Okayama
Hiroshima
Tsu-Shima
Hagi
Iwakuni
Shimonoseki
Kure
Imabari
Takamatsu
Wakayama
Nara
Yamada
Tsu
Hamamatsu
Shizuoka
Shichi To
Kokura
Nakatsu
Tokushima
Matsuyama
Kochi
Tanabe
Fukuoka
Saga
Oita
Uwajima
Tosa Bay
Muroto C.
Shiwo C.
Kumamoto
Nagasaki
SHIKOKU
KIUSHIU
Miyazaki
Kajiki
Kagoshima
Tanega Shimi
Yedo Bay
Shiwo C.
Shichi To
THE M.-N. WORKS
SAKHALIN ISLAND
Kussunai
Baranovsk
Aniwa Bay
C. Siretako
La Perouse Str.
Rebunshiri
Rishiri
Soya
OCEAN
Shireitoko
Kunashiri
Yedo Str.
Mombetsu
Abashiri
Asahigawa
Nemuro
Otaru
Sapporo
Iwamizawa
Kushiro
Piratori
Obihiro
YEZO (HOKKAIDO)
Chitose
Urakawa
Setana
Mororan
Hiro
Okushiri
Hakodate
Yerimo C.
Tsugaru Str.
Fukuyama
Aomori
Hirosaki
Noshiro
Odate
Fukuoka
Akita
Morioka
Yokote
NORTHERN PART OF JAPAN
Same scale as Main Map

gallery to themselves; public officials were assigned a box near the stage. Missionaries and Christian Japanese were the speakers, one following another as the hours passed; short intermissions were allowed for the shifting of the audience, an exchange of thoughts, and perhaps a smoke. The speakers were freely applauded, as well as the singers from the training-school who were grouped about the cabinet organ. The influence of these meetings was immense.

An Awakened Empire

Thus the fire spread until the word "revival" was everywhere coming to be familiar to Japanese Christians. In the schools, also, earnest inquirers were appearing in such numbers as almost to absorb attention. The Doshisha enjoyed a memorable awakening, in which the students gathered by classes for prayer and confession, from which they went out to preach Christ to others.

The growth in the churches was remarkable. Between April, 1883, and 1884, the *Kumi-ai* churches increased sixty-eight per cent, and during the following year fifty-three per cent. By 1889 the Home Missionary Society was conducting regular work at forty-six different points in seventeen provinces of the empire. Besides what was done in public ways the quiet influence of Christian lives and homes and the spread of the gospel by the printed Word were constantly extending the knowledge of Christianity. When the government in 1884 ended the official patronage of the Shinto and Buddhist religions, thus separating Church and State, a great gain was made for the missionary cause.

Still Opposition and Interference

The missionaries, however, were not yet allowed to work without opposition or persecution. The enmity of the priesthood increased as they saw their own power and privileges waning. Sometimes violence was attempted; threats were more numerous. A letter to the Kyoto missionaries shows the temper of the attack:

"To the four American Barbarians; Davis, Gordon, Learned,

and Greene; We speak to you who have come with words that are sweet in the mouth but a sword in the heart, bad priests, American Barbarians, four robbers. You have come from a far country with the evil religion of Christ and as slaves of the Japanese robber Neesima. With bad teaching you are gradually deceiving the people; but we know your hearts, and hence we shall soon with Japanese swords inflict the punishment of heaven upon you. Japan being truly a flourishing, excellent country, in ancient times when Buddhism first came to Japan, those who brought it were killed; in the same way you must be killed. But we do not want to defile the sacred soil of Japan with your abominable blood; for this reason we wait two weeks and you must leave Kyoto and go to your country; if not, the little robbers of the Doshisha School, and all the believers of this way in the city, will be killed; hence, take your families and go quickly.

Patriots in the Peaceful City; Believers in Shinto."

Buddhist priests attempted to follow the methods of the Christians by holding mass meetings and prompting speakers to challenge the claims of Christianity and to extol those of Buddhism. Some educated men, like Mr. Fukuzawa, set themselves by book and lecture to drive Christianity out of Japan. But in spite of all opposition, direct or adroit, Christianity spread. The demands on the missionaries were almost overwhelming. Whereas in 1880 the Board had but four stations in the empire, by 1890 it had nine, some of them opened with special promise. From the central group of stations at the head of the inland sea, the work broadened over the empire. The beginning at Sendai, the second station in northern Japan, indicates the encouragement that Christianity was receiving. A wealthy citizen, for a number of years Japanese consul in New York, backed by the cordial appeal of the people of the place, offered to open a school that might grow into a college if the Board would only furnish the head teachers for ten years. The city officials and repre-

sentative citizens were present at the opening of the school, and uttered no word of dissent when its Christian character was affirmed.

Allied Lines of Work

While direct evangelism was being pressed through the activity both of missionaries and native Christians, associated lines of work were fast developing. Other branches of missionary activity, such as the educational and the medical, had become established departments. Publication was now organized as a field of native effort; the formation, in 1882, of the *Fukuin-sha*, or Japanese Publishing Society, gave to the mission an important ally.

A ministry to prisoners became prominent. In several of the prisons Christians were appointed as teachers of morality, virtually chaplains, and for some time much freedom was allowed them in teaching Christianity. As many of the inmates were political prisoners, drawn from the higher ranks of society, and afterward to become influential men in the changed times, the importance of this opportunity to reach them is evident. At Matsuyama the new warden was an influential Christian. In the Hokkaido, where prisoners from all parts of Japan were massed, there were at one time Christian men as chaplains in all five of the long-term prisons.

A great variety of philanthropic and social activities, inspired by Christian feeling, were undertaken, some of them upon private initiative. In 1887 Miss Howe opened the Glory Kindergarten for training kindergartners in Kobe, whose graduates were at once in great demand, not only in Christian kindergartens, but in those maintained by the government. Wives of missionaries and unmarried ladies of the mission also started kindergartens in other cities, which became centers of peculiar and formative influence.

The nurses' training-schools, such as the one begun by Dr. Berry in 1887, night schools like Miss Judson's in Matsuyama, Mr. Omoto's Factory Girls' Home in the same city, and Miss Adams' settlement work at Hanabatake, a slum quarter of

Okayama, were characteristic forms of special work, originating in these years, and of each of which there is enough to be told to fill more than one chapter.

The most famous of these expansions of missionary work is the Okayama Orphanage, founded by Mr. Ishii Juji. Though independently started and maintained, this orphanage has been closely associated with the work of the American Board, Mr. Ishii being a member of a *Kumi-ai* church. Beginning in an old Buddhist temple, with three boys in his care, Mr. Ishii maintained his asylum on the same principle of faith as did his example, George Muller, and with remarkable success. Dr. Pettee, who from the first was his adviser and loyal helper, has been the means of interesting friends in other countries in this great orphanage, now grown to care for 550 children. In 1904 the emperor and empress contributed a grant of $1000 to the orphanage, the first Christian institution to be thus assisted.

Another special line of applied Christianity in these vital times was the movement to abolish licensed prostitution. The crusade, first of agitation and then of legal effort, involving a public uprising against conditions too terrible to relate, was inspired by Christians, though many others joined in it.

The Climax Reached

So by the year 1888 the work of the American Board Mission, as of all the missions in Japan, was in full flower. There seemed no limit to the influence the missionaries could exert; every form of effort appeared throbbing with life and progress.

The prospects of the Doshisha, so closely allied with the mission and crowning its educational enterprise in Japan, were very bright. In all departments there were now 900 students, eighty in the theological department alone; no more could be cared for. Even in so conservative a city as Kyoto the school had by this time won its place; the time seemed ripe for advance. Mr. Neesima, who had been laying his plans and presenting his appeals unfalteringly during the

years of persecution, in 1888 issued another appeal, published simultaneously in twenty leading newspapers of Japan, for funds to make his school the Christian university that had long been his dream. Large gifts followed from influential Japanese, counts and viscounts; from a prefectural assembly; from Hon. J. N. Harris of New London, Connecticut, already a generous supporter of the school, and who now gave $100,000 for the establishment of a scientific department. A new constitution provided that the financial management of the institution should be entirely in the hands of the Japanese board of trustees.

The leaven of Christianity was reaching men of influence in the empire. Dr. Greene reported that thirty students of the university were avowed Christians; in the membership of a single *Kumi-ai* church were a judge of the Supreme Court, a professor in the Imperial University, three government secretaries, and members of at least two noble families. Christians were in some cases high officers of prefectural legislatures. Five out of the forty members in the provincial assembly of Joshu, in 1885, were Protestant Christians, and three of them were on the standing committee of five; important measures of social reform had been carried through the assembly by the efforts of these Christian public men.

The Reaction in the Next Decade

An alarming and temporarily disastrous revulsion of feeling toward Christianity suddenly became widespread through the empire. For some time there had been apprehensions among the missionaries that the growth was more swift than sure. While much of the quick acceptance of Christianity was genuine, much of it also was fictitious. It was a part of Japan's wholesale adoption of foreign things. Her people put on the Western religion as they did European clothes. An impelling purpose of the "boom" years is disclosed in Mr. Fukuzawa's advice. Though disbelieving Christianity, and at one time attacking it, at length he urged that Japan should profess the new faith, what-

ever might be her real opinion of it, in order to gain standing among Christian nations. That argument counted.

A movement to a considerable extent so superficial could not fail to meet with reaction. The year 1889 witnessed its outbreak. This was the epochal year when the Japanese had their initiation into self-government in the elections for the first national parliament. The new constitution affirmed full religious liberty, but the growing sense of national importance revolted at the rapid adoption of Western ideas. Anti-foreign feeling became very strong. Important treaties that were just on the point of adoption were indefinitely postponed. A noisy revival of Buddhism and Shintoism filled the air. "Japan for the Japanese" was the slogan.

In this general revolt the Japanese Christians were caught, not only through patriotism, but through a spirit of religious independence; they began to fear they had followed the missionaries too easily. The first stage of Christian experience having passed, something of the early enthusiasm had gone with it; churches as a whole were less earnest in the new life than in years before. The theological controversies then disturbing the churches that maintained the Board unsettled also the alert and mercurial Japanese. With them it was even more a time of questioning and doubt; for they had a morbid fear of being left in the belief of something that was old.

There was never any danger that Christianity would be entirely abandoned, but there was an intense desire to remake it in Japan. The temper was not an easy one to deal with or pleasant to experience. The missionaries had a rather painful and testing time. Even to those who best understood the Japanese nature, and who sympathized with it, the situation looked dark in the early '90s. The facts were indisputable that church services were poorly attended, self-support was increasingly difficult, unhappy frictions were rife, and missionaries and native Christians were in many cases growing apart.

Altogether there was a distinctly lowered tone to Christianity in the empire, with a loss of prestige and power on the part of the Church. The annual report of 1892 declares that instead of the missionary in Japan holding a reaping hook, Neesima was nearer right when he said, "I have a plow in my hands." The question of concern was as to the fidelity of the Church, and whether, after oscillations of faith, she would settle down to a vital gospel.

At length relations became somewhat strained between the *Kumi-ai* churches and the mission. The Japanese were restive of anything that looked like direction or control. Some were even disposed to say that the time had come for the missionaries to withdraw. Professing gratitude to American Christians for the aid rendered, they declared that they could thereafter largely dispense with it. This was not the uniform or prevailing opinion. Indeed, there was no intense or general ill-feeling toward the missionaries; only an insistent desire to get control into native hands.

And with this desire the missionaries were in sympathy. From the beginning they had encouraged the Japanese in the spirit of self-reliance; every church was self-governing; the *Kumi-ai* Missionary Society was independent of foreign control, save in one particular; missionaries were never members of national or local conferences, except rarely when sent as delegates by some church. The point of disagreement came over the claim of the Japanese that the funds contributed by the Board to the work of the Missionary Society should be surrendered unreservedly to be administered by them. This the missionaries, in accordance with the established policy of the Board, could not allow. All were glad, therefore, when in 1905, in place of an unsatisfactory arrangement, whereby a joint commission of foreigners and Japanese managed these funds, the *Kumi-ai* Missionary Society decided, at the suggestion of the mission, to depend on Japanese contributions, and proceeded to maintain the work which it sought to direct.

A situation, tense for a time, gradually relaxed in the general improvement of conditions until it was forgotten as a bygone incident.

Meanwhile real if covert influence against missionary work was exerted by the government. Both common soldiers and officers who showed themselves favorable to Christianity were discriminated against; Christian judges were debarred from promotion; teachers were discharged simply for their religious views. Such persecution was felt in many places and was openly approved by the press. Private schools were everywhere discouraged, not without some reason, as there were evidently too many of them; yet the government opposition was especially directed to Christian schools. And it interfered sadly with Christian work. Schools in many places were interrupted or limited. Serious injury was done to the Board's educational work, particularly for girls; two schools of the Board, in Sendai and Niigata, were virtually compelled to close.

Official Opposition

The changed situation as regards education was felt most keenly in the Doshisha. In 1890 Joseph Neesima died, worn out by the unremitting labor and anxieties with which he had wrought for the establishment of his dear Christian university. Four years after his death difficulties arose in the school. The theological controversies of the day were inevitably felt in the Doshisha, and one of the leading teachers not only adopted new views in extreme form, but bitterly criticized those who held the old views. It seemed to most of the missionaries impossible to work in cooperation with such a teacher.

The Doshisha Trouble

In connection with this difficulty and various other problems of the mission, the Board, in 1895, sent a deputation consisting of Secretary Barton, Hon. W. P. Ellison, Rev. James G. Johnson, D.D., and Rev. A. H. Bradford, D.D., to study the condition of the mission and advise as to future policy, especially in relation to the Doshisha. This deputation performed its task

in a spirit of generosity and good-will, but failing to come to a satisfactory agreement with the Japanese managers of the school, who were aroused to maintain what they regarded as their due independence, it advised the withdrawal of financial aid from the school at the end of the following year.

Meanwhile, the trustees anticipated this action by declaring that they would carry on the school without aid from the Board either in men or money, although at the same time they requested the missionary teachers to remain in the school as private individuals. This being of course impossible, the foreign teachers withdrew in July, 1896, and the trustees were thrown upon their own resources. In order to obtain privileges given to schools recognized by the government, without which they had no hope of being able to carry on the Doshisha, in 1897 the trustees took out of the constitution the unchangeable article that the ethics taught there should be based upon Christianity; at least they restricted this article to the theological department, hoping that the remainder of the school, thus being left non-religious, would receive the same privileges as government schools. Their action was met with indignation by many of the alumni and by other Christians in the *Kumi-ai* churches; a strong protest appeared in the press.

The Prudential Committee at once engaged counsel to represent it in the effort to recover the trust funds which it was claimed were thus being perverted. This effort, in which the mission and the *Kumi-ai* churches joined, was at length successful. Count Okuma, who took an intense interest in the matter, saw at once and was able to make other men in high office see, that Japan was not a nation to be trusted by the other powers if its laws were not able to safeguard funds bestowed for definite purposes or to protect the rights of foreigners having interests in the country. In December, 1898, the trustees of the Doshisha generously resigned to relieve the situation, a new Board was elected, and a new constitution adopted, reaffirming the Christian character of

the school. Thereupon the way was open for a gradual reorganization of the Doshisha, bringing to it once more the loyal support of the alumni and the great body of the *Kumi-ai* churches, the cooperation of the missionaries of the Board, and the recovery of its prestige and influence.

During these years of depression and controversy there had yet been substantial if slower growth in the Japan Mission.

Growth Under Difficulty

Shut off from much of the preaching and teaching which had formerly been open to them, the missionaries were now able to enter upon different lines of work and to visit new places; there was more touring among weak churches and outstations than could be attempted before; one-half the missionary force were then engaged in evangelistic work, a little over one-third in educational, the rest in allied forms of Christian service. The preparation of an effective Christian literature was always in the thought of this mission; now it was yet more vigorously pushed. Treatises, text-books, and commentaries, original works and translations, appeared in rapid succession from one or another of the missionaries, and notably from a group at Tokyo, Doctors Learned, Davis, Gordon, Cary, and Albrecht. During these years, also, new churches were formed, new stations begun; so that by 1899 there had been located twelve stations in large and important centers of commercial and political life from Sapporo to Miyazaki, a distance of 1000 miles. The Hokkaido was now occupied; the new treaties of 1894–95 opened the entire country to the missionary.

The war with China in 1894 proved of advantage to the missionaries in Japan. Christian Japanese could now show that they were not deficient in patriotism. Permission was given to carry the gospel to the soldiers, and native Japanese Christians went as chaplains to the seat of war. The Red Cross Society made its symbol familiar to and respected by multitudes of Japanese. This sign, which not many years before had been trampled on by Japanese, was now watched

for with eager eyes, and opened the way for nurses and missionary ladies to tell its story. Missionaries were able to render help in the military headquarters at Horoshima.

In spite of all distractions, considerable additions to the churches came in these years. Kobe College for Girls, notwithstanding the fact that the period for women's education had not yet fully come, was doing splendid work, whose fruit was to appear in the brighter years afterward. The Hokkaido, that northern island, fast settling with hardy colonists, proved notably responsive to effort. The experiences of the missionaries, touring among these people, were like those of pioneer missionaries in the western states of this land.

The indirect influence of Christianity during these lean years was far beyond its numerical strength. Buddhism was spurred to new energy by its example. Some of the coarser and grosser forms connected with the life of Shintoism were either suppressed or concealed out of respect to the higher ideals which Christianity had stirred in the land. Another striking testimony appeared in the parliament of 1890; out of 300 members, composing the lower house, not less than twelve, including the Speaker, were Protestant Christians; six of them members of churches connected with the American Board Mission. It was apparent that in spite of discouragements and difficulties Christianity had already become a strong force in the land.

The Reawakening

As the second conference of Protestant missionaries in Japan, held at Osaka, in 1883, was the immediate occasion of that swift increase which culminated in 1888, so it was the third of these conferences, in Tokyo, in October, 1900, that opened the era of recovery after the intervening years of depression. The hopes which one and another missionary had built upon some event of local importance, during the last years of the nineteenth century, did not materialize as a general movement until the beginning of the twentieth. But at this conference the various impulses

which had been stirring seemed to converge. It gave emphatic approval of various measures looking toward advance, and especially of union efforts. But the particular service which this conference rendered, as events proved, was its endorsement of a plan of the Japanese Evangelical Alliance for a special evangelistic campaign throughout the empire during the opening year of the new century, which was thereupon undertaken. First of all, a Sunday was set apart in February for preaching on the one topic, "Our Land for Christ." Preparatory meetings then followed; the active work was from April to July. Cities were systematically visited, beginning with Tokyo, the capital, where over 5000 names had been enrolled of earnest seekers after the truth. Methods new to Christian work in Japan were introduced, such as a parade of the streets, with the use of handbills and posters, not without creating prejudice in some quarters, but with the effect of drawing large congregations and compelling attention. During this campaign over 20,000 were enrolled as converts or as earnest inquirers after the truth. The permanent results are hardly to be measured by these figures, as the novel methods used produced some evanescent enthusiasm; not all who were touched were deeply moved. Yet a new day had dawned for the gospel in Japan. Christians were encouraged; pastors were brought back to more direct evangelistic preaching; a warmer religious life throbbed in the churches.

The Forward Movement inspired many new forms of religious work like that of the Bible Teaching Band in Okayama, of which Mr. Ishii was the originator, with its motto, "One worker, one hearer, one gospel." In various parts of the empire, as at Sendai, the churches were commissioning bands of workers to meet the calls from outlying places, sometimes as far as 100 miles away. This new impulse to evangelism did not die out with the year, but settled into a definite policy of church work. In 1903, when the great National Exhibition was held in Osaka, a building just outside the entrance was

used for services, in the conduct of which missionaries and Japanese Christians of all denominations united. Of the 4,000,000 who visited this exhibition it was estimated that not less than one-sixteenth came under the influence of these evangelistic meetings.

Change in Government Attitude

The Japanese government was now more kindly disposed toward Christianity. Thoughtful and high-minded leaders of the nation began to be disturbed over a moral lack in their new educational system, intellectually so strong. The native religions had become inefficient; some impulse was needed to redeem life from irresponsibility or despair. Moreover, foreigners had now secured the right to hold real estate and the mission became incorporated under the laws of Japan. Relations were more cordial between the Educational Department and the schools associated with the mission; restrictions, severe even so late as 1899, were greatly relaxed in 1903.

Effect of Russian War

Japan's war with Russia, in 1904, like that with China before, resulted in good to the missionary enterprise. Japanese officials were quick to see that this conflict was likely to be represented as a warfare between a Christian nation and one anti-Christian. It was important to demonstrate that Japan was hospitable to Christianity, at least as one of the religions of the land. The course of this war also gave yet fuller chance for the Christians in Japan to show their loyalty to the nation and their allegiance to their Lord. Pastors and members of *Kumi-ai* churches, with the missionaries, were among those rendering devoted service on the field or in barracks and hospitals at home. Dr. De Forest went, with the emperor's own commission, as a special worker among the soldiers at the front. The outcome of the war made Japan still more tolerant and even cordial toward Christianity. As she took her place in the sisterhood of great nations, she was almost compelled to accord to Christianity a place and privilege consonant with its position in

that world with whose life she was henceforth to be in full touch.

Readjustment for Advance

It was now time for a readjustment of the mission to conform to its achievement. From being a foreign organization, attempting to propagate a strange religion among a people indifferent if not hostile, it had become an ally, stimulating Christianity as a living and growing force in the land. The various departments of work which it had instituted one after the other were almost entirely transferred to the *Kumi-ai* churches or the Christian community. Medical work, publication, even the educational institutions, had been gradually passed over until they were largely under Japanese management, with missionaries assisting as teachers and instructors or serving on boards of direction. Aside from the Woman's Bible Training School, some kindergartens, and one or two night schools, practically everything in the field of education was out of the missionaries' hands.

Their main task was now to be once more what it had been at the beginning, evangelism in the broad sense of the word. By aiding the *Kumi-ai* churches in publishing the gospel more widely and systematically; in service as religious teachers in schools of various grades; in editorial and literary work for the native publication society; in promoting various forms of social and philanthropic service, and by such private influence as they might quietly and effectively contribute to the Christian life of the land, the missionaries were henceforth to find their sufficient sphere. Perhaps the greatest contribution of the Japan Mission, not only to the Christianizing of that empire, but to the art of modern missions, will be found in its developing of the principle and method of systematic cooperation. The success of this mission in adapting itself to the sensitive national spirit of Japan, and the serviceableness of its missionaries in the evangelization of the land, are evidenced by the fact that the present appeal to the American Board

to continue its work there comes primarily from the Japanese themselves, voiced by such men as Messrs. Ebina, Miyagawa, and Harada, whose visits to this country have shown the ability and Christian devotion of the men leading the *Kumi-ai* churches to-day.

In 1905 a formal understanding was had between the mission and the churches, by which the former was relieved within three years from all aid to dependent *Kumi-ai* churches, the native missionary society assuming that responsibility. Thirty of these churches were thus transferred to the care of the Japanese, there being 102 churches in all and eleven preaching places at the beginning of 1906, besides some companies of Christians on the way to becoming fully organized churches. So the *Kumi-ai* Missionary Society, which had been receiving from the American Board three times as much as from its own people, now undertook to maintain its work from native gifts. The gratifying result was a large increase in funds, in spite of the rather demoralized condition of the churches; the receipts leaped at once to more than 300 per cent above the highest mark of any year preceding. Thenceforth there was no official relation between the mission and the churches, each working independently of the other, but in close cooperation and friendship.

When the jubilee of Protestant missions in Japan was celebrated in October, 1909, the joy of the time was not simply over the half-century's effort of faith, but as well over the victory of faith which had been won. It could not be reported that Japan was yet Christian in any real sense; 30,000,000, or three-fifths of its population, now scarcely know more than the name of Christianity; whole provinces have no Christian churches and few, if any, disciples. But Christian thoughts and ideas are abroad in the land; splendid examples of Christian character and faith are manifest; careful Japanese observers have declared that at least one million of their countrymen not church-members are seeking to order their lives by the

New Testament. The student body was never so accessible; the Doshisha and other Christian schools are flourishing; respect for Christianity and regard for missions are unprecedented. The *Japan Mail*, commenting on the jubilee, said of the missionaries: "No other body of men have made so thorough and competent a study of Japanese affairs, and no other Europeans or Americans can claim even an approximately intimate knowledge of Japanese character." What a missionary, returning from a tour through Joshu, reported of that province may be as confidently said of the whole empire, "Indeed, Christianity in Joshu is rooted; it has become indigenous."

China

The Time for Advance

In 1880 the Board's undertaking in China, then limited to two fields, Foochow and North China, was hardly beyond the preparatory stage. Dr. Williams, whose death occurred in 1884 after eight years in the homeland, could testify that in his forty-three years in the empire he had witnessed immense and unimagined progress. Yet even his eye was bent on the future rather than the past; shortly before his death he declared, "God is going to do a work in China within the next few years that will astonish his Church."

Judging by surface indications, the period did not open brilliantly. At Foochow there was some discouragement that so few additions to the churches had been received; mission work seemed to be stationary. In North China congregations were irregular; most of the converts were very ignorant; they were scattered among the villages and apt to feel that once received into the church they had been secured against all danger. Yet advance was being made, the zeal and purpose of the missionaries never flagged, and here and there shining witnesses left no doubt that the Chinese could be made thoroughly loyal to Jesus Christ. A native Christian physician in

Capital of Province
Prefecture City
Sub Prefecture City
Other Cities and Places
Longitude East from Greenwich
HUNAN
KIANGSI
FUKIEN
KWANGSI
KWANGTUNG
Wukang
Hengchowfu
Hengshan
Sinning
Chalingchow
Lingshien
Leiyang
Yungchowfu
Yunghing
Chuanchow
Hingning
Kwei yangchow
Chenchow
Taochow
Linwu
Kweilin
Yanfa
Namyung
Linchow
Shiuchow
Lienshan
Fuchwan
Pinglo
Yangshan
Yungyün
Waitsap
Linpingchow
Hopinghsien
Lungchun
Changlok
Kaying
Changning
Anfu
Lienhwa
Yungsin
Yungfeng
Kianfu
Kwangchang
Lungchian
Wanan
Ningtu
Shihcheng
Kanchow Ki
Shangyu
Chungyi
Nananfu
Hweichang
Sinfeng
Shuikin
Yihwang
Kienchangfu
Shaowu
Sincheng Ki
Shunchang
Yangkou
Kienninghsien
Ninghwa
Yungan
Tingchowfu
Liencheng
Lungyenchow
Wuping
Shanghang
Yungting
Chenping Tung
Changchowfu
Tatpuhsien
Changpu
Yunsiao
Chaochowfu
Kityang
Wukingfu
Nyenhangli
Hoyüin
Tsungfa
Lungmoonyun
Fukang
Wuchow
Szewui
Mongkong
Takhing
Samshui
Canton
Waichow
Tungkun
Lukfung
Hwelaihsien
Puning
Swatow
Shuhing
Hoksnan
Sanhing
Junghsien
Paklow
Lotungchow
Cheung Sha
Kongmoon
Sunwui
Hoiping
Yanping
Sunning
Yeungchun
Sunyi
Kwong-Hoi
Hoi In Kai
Kochow
Heungshan
Mirs Bay
Victoria
Macao (Portu.)
Hongkong (British)
Kienningfu
Yenpingfu
Kutien
Santah
Ningteh
Shahsien
Mintsinghsien
Lienkong
Foochow
Pagoda Anchorage
Inghok
Changlo
Futing
Funingfu
Funing Bay
Luyuenhsien
Sharp Peak
Futsing
Changpinghsien
Hinghwa
Tehwa
Yungchun
Chuanchowfu
Changtai
Amoy
Chu shan (Haitan I.)
Tamsui
Kelung
Taihoku
Taichu
Tokatsukutsu
Pescadores
Bird I.
Fisher I.
Penoe I.
Ponghutau
Islands
Formosa
(Taiwan)
Anping
Taikan
Takow
Samasana I.
C. Nansha
Fu-kien or Formosa Strait
to American Ports
to Shanghai
to Nagasaki
Kan kiang
Fuho
Min kiang
Tsiu kiang
Tatchin Shan
Han kiang
Tao kiang
Kwangtung Canal
Nan-shan
Pi kiang or North R.
Hwang shan
Lo kiang
Siang kiang
Lui ho
Yangtze Kiang
Canal
Si kiang or West R.
Pei kiang or North R.
Tung Kiang or East R.
TROPIC OF CANCER
CHINA SEA
The American Board
FOOCHOW and SOUTH CHINA
MISSIONS
Stations:
Out-stations:
Railroads: in operation
proposed
Cable Lines:
Steamship Lines:
0 10 20 30 40 50 100
English Statute Miles
THE M.-N. WORKS

the new district of Shao-wu told the story of the cross with such effect as to win many disciples in his village; the first visit of a missionary there was for the purpose of organizing a church. The character and service of such men as Pastor Hou, at Pang-Chuang, and the two Pastors Meng at Pao-ting-fu offset a host of dubious and disappointing cases.

Broadening Lines of Work

All lines of mission effort were now utilized. Street chapels, not to be confounded with the meeting houses in mission compounds where the native Christians assembled, but set in the market places where passers-by might be attracted to come in, were abundantly effective for the wide preaching of the gospel.

In no field of the Board has medical work been a stronger factor than in China, where it was early established at almost every station. In 1886 there were six trained physicians, three men and three women, in the North China Mission alone, and two others in Foochow and Shansi. Prominent officials consulted them and even came to the hospitals for treatment, often showing their appreciation by large contributions. Opium refuges now became part of the equipment of the Board's medical work in all these missions, particularly in the provinces of Shansi and Fukien. These refuges were often overcrowded by the number who flocked to them for help. In a year at the city station in Foochow more than 900 were thus reached and some remarkable cures effected. In one instance the smokers left their favorite opium den in a body and applied for healing; then the keeper of the dive, finding his custom gone, was led himself to seek a cure. The experiences of the missionaries with these wretched victims of opium, the awful struggles which they witnessed, and the way in which they were able to bring many out of their bondage of shame into a new life in Christ Jesus, form an impressive chapter in the story of missionary labors and successes.

Other departments of work were equally alert. The Board's recovered educational policy was marked in this mission by

the development of common and middle-grade schools, the growth of the training-school at Tung-chou, which was to become the North China College in 1893, and by the growth of the Bridgman school for girls in Peking; a similar enterprise in this line was manifest in Foochow. Literary work was being pushed at Peking, where Messrs. Goodrich and Sheffield were giving half their time to Bible translation, the former also preparing Sunday-school lessons and translating hymns, while Dr. Sheffield was revising a work on theology.

The planting and equipping of new outstations and, at length, even of stations, was one result of the prospecting tours which were a feature of the time. North China missionaries were active in those explorations in Shansi, which led to the opening of the mission in that province. Later in the decade Messrs. Chapin and Smith made one tour of 800 miles through Chi-li and Honan, visiting thirty different walled cities and everywhere finding friendliness to foreigners and opportunities far beyond the possibilities of acceptance. The great province of Shangtung was entered in 1880, first at Pang-Chuang and six years later at Lintsing.

By the close of the decade the progress in every line was manifest. By this time imperial edicts, describing missionaries as teachers of virtue and enjoining the people to welcome and live with them as guests, were helping to break down prejudice. A native agency was also forthcoming. The eight first graduates from the theological seminary in Tung-chou, in 1885, were at once licensed as evangelists, greatly reenforcing the few native helpers so far available. The same year the Bridgman school at Peking graduated six Christian girls, who, in their way, were to render as valued service. The benevolence of the native churches was also a substantial aid in the development of the work. In the Foochow Mission there were now nine organized churches, boarding and day schools, a hospital for men, in charge of Dr. Whitney, and another for women and children, under Dr. Woodhull's care. This form

of woman's work for woman was a new thing in China and at once popular. The very day after her arrival Dr. Woodhull was called on for professional services and the demand never slackened.

China's inglorious war with Japan was another shock to her immobile self-esteem. Humbled by its revelations, China became more considerate of those forces of the West which she recognized had helped in the upbuilding of Japan. The year 1893 had been marked in many ways in the history of the China mission; most of all by a deep revival of religion, appearing first at Peking and Tung-chou, and spreading to Tientsin and other points. Also in that year North China College was formally organized and its first buildings erected. The influence of the religious awakening was felt particularly in the institutions at Tung-chou, as also in the Bridgman school in Peking, where the girls had just shown their enfranchisement from burdensome traditions by the unbinding of their feet. Native pastors were greatly stimulated just as they began to assume all the duties of the pastoral office. This was also the banner year so far in the additions to the churches, and schools showed larger attendance than ever before, although payment of tuition was now required in many of them, as in all the schools of Pang-Chuang. Valued reenforcements had come; there was a stir of expectancy everywhere.

Effect of War with Japan (1894–95)

In the port cities and near the capital the war news produced a great impression. At Tung-chou, in the very path of the war, the missionaries loyally continued at their work with quietness and courage. Their behavior, in such contrast with the selfishness and venality of the mass of the people, was an object lesson, not only to the Christians, but to all the Chinese, and called forth the gratitude of the officials.

All forms of mission work were thus hastened. In North China the station classes, especially those for women, increased rapidly in number and size; Miss Russell in the outstations of

Peking, Miss Porter and Miss Wyckoff in Pang-Chuang, Miss Morrill in the vicinity of Pao-ting-fu, and Miss Andrews and Miss Evans in Tung-chou, all found a new welcome in Chinese homes. A generous gift made possible the endowment of North China College and a chapel at Peking; another gift established a hospital at Pang-Chuang. The schools were now systematically developed from the kindergarten to Gordon Theological Seminary.

In fact, the North China Mission was more thoroughly organized than most of the missions of the Board. Its churches were becoming strong and self-reliant; its native pastorate, initiated in 1893, was more than doubled during 1898. The work of these native pastors was responsible, and it was generally well maintained. They visited the outstations twice a year, administered baptism and the communion, received persons on probation, and stimulated contributions. Church members over twenty years of age and in good standing were given certificates bearing a foreign stamp and renewable annually. North China College and Gordon Theological Seminary were turning out preachers and Christian workers of high grade and in increasing numbers. Many of the scholars in the lower, no less than in the higher grade schools showed conspicuous ability and devotion. One convert, a blacksmith, nineteen years old, who had never been to school, mastered the primer in three days, and in three days more the Chinese reader, the creed, and the covenant. Over the Gospel of John he exclaimed, "The more I read this, the hotter my heart becomes."

At Foochow, as in North China, the pace was quickening. A new attentiveness was seen; entire villages came, asking for teachers; they offered support, and the opening of temples for schools and for public worship, a new thing in the empire, but soon to become common. This oldest mission of the Board in China was now quite beyond the stage of beginnings. In 1899 the laborers could report, "The story

of this field for the past three years reads like successive chapters in the Acts of the Apostles." The gain in church membership during 1899 was more than the total number of members in the mission seven years before. Nine of the churches were self-supporting, some of them having branches and mission enterprises of their own; the people were assuming an even larger share of the cost of their children's education. Chapels and schools were filled to overflowing; the seventy preaching places had increased to 105, and instead of thirty-nine churches there were now fifty-nine. At the interior stations of Shao-wu alone there were 5000 inquirers, with 1500 more reported in places beyond, never yet visited by a missionary. The movement toward Christianity was gaining momentum. A theological school with twenty-four students failed to provide men as rapidly as new locations were opened.

In Shansi it was still the time of seed sowing; with small outward results, but with vast patience and industry on the part of a depleted and harassed mission. South China had a strong church center at Hong Kong and educational work was also developing far beyond what had been intended for this mission.

In 1898 a deputation, consisting of Secretary Judson Smith, Col. C. A. Hopkins of the Prudential Committee, and President Edward D. Eaton of Beloit, the first representatives of the Board to inspect its work in China during the sixty-eight years since it was begun, visited one after another these four missions. They reported that they saw little to criticize or to reverse; much over which to wonder and rejoice. There was need of more adequate equipment in many lines, and they felt the importance of developing yet more determinedly the native agency. The educational work of the mission, in particular at Tung-chou and Foochow, called forth their admiration.

When missionary work, not only under the American Board, but on all the mission fields of China, was thus exhilarating in its progress, a storm of persecution broke over a large

portion of the empire, unmatched in the history of modern missions. The American Board had never endured such a blow. Though sudden in its outbreak, the storm had been slowly gathering. The *coup d'état* by which the empress dowager seized the reins of government from the hands of the emperor, upon his sweeping edicts of reform in 1898, encouraged reactionary plottings. The Legations seemed unable to read the signs of the time. Many of the missionaries, who lived closer to the people, could feel the subtle changes going on beneath the surface, and warned vainly of the danger ahead. Following local disturbances in various quarters in 1898–99, more violent outbreaks revealed a mysterious sect, bound by religious and patriotic oaths. Novitiates practised a mixed regimen of athletics, military drill, and hypnotism, after which they claimed no sword could cut them, no bullet pierce their body, no soldiers prevail against them. After what were called demonstrations of their invulnerability, the fear and fascination of them spread widely. Their title, "Boxers," which out of several names came to be accepted, expresses the idea suggested by their common Chinese name, "Fists of righteous harmony"; by force these fanatics sought to reinstate the ancient customs.

The Boxers

The governor of Shangtung at that time, Yü Hsien, gave his official support to these bands, which soon became riotous mobs, destroying property, beating Christians, threatening all foreigners and spreading terror and want wherever they made their raids. The work at both the Board's stations in Shangtung, Pang-Chuang and Lintsing, was interrupted, as many villages were looted and Christians robbed of all their possessions. Forced out of Shangtung upon a change of governors, the Boxers went northward into Chi-li, adding to their numbers and their fury as they went. High officials were still encouraging them. At length it appeared that the empress dowager herself was the patroness of their order, attaching their supposed superhuman

Their Backing

power and religious sanction to her purpose to wipe from China all foreign life and influence. The animating spirit of the Boxers was anti-foreign; anti-Christian, in part, but not primarily or markedly anti-missionary. Railroad engineers and other advance agents of civilization were even more cordially hated.

With their coming into the imperial province, the stations at Pao-ting-fu, Tientsin, Peking, Tung-chou, and Kalgan were threatened. The Embassies at Peking now bestirred themselves to make inquiries and to send out warnings, but it was too late. In June of 1900 the tempest broke.

The Massacres

When the Boxers fell upon Tung-chou they slew with the sword more than half its church members, the rest, with all who were associated with the mission, abandoning their homes and fleeing to hiding-places. All the buildings of the station were despoiled and demolished, not one brick being left upon another; the college campus was plowed and sowed with corn. The annual meeting of the American Board's mission was held that June in the city of Tung-chou. As it broke up on June 5 some of the members were able to make their way back to Peking, while three, two men and a woman, a physician, pushed their way to Kalgan, where they arrived safely four days later, to find themselves surrounded by a mob, their dwellings threatened, and their only temporary refuge the *yamen*. Unable to stay there, they were compelled to attempt the perilous trip through Mongolia, across the Gobi desert, by which, after almost overwhelming dangers and anxieties, they arrived safely in Europe.

The missionaries bound for Tientsin, finding the river route unsafe, delayed for more favorable news from Peking. But by the 7th it became necessary to risk flight from Tung-chou, and Dr. Ament, who came in late at night with a train of Peking carts, no guard having been furnished him, piloted the company of twenty-four Americans, with a considerable number of native Christians, safely over the twelve miles to

the capital. A few hours later such a journey would have been impossible, as it might indeed have been then had not the *taotai* of Tung-chou put secret guards along the way.

Once in Peking, the Americans went first to the compound of the Methodist Mission. As the danger increased, all were driven to the common shelter of foreigners in the British Legation. The story of this retreat to the Legation, with but a few moments in which to snatch the most necessary articles, followed by a pathetic procession filing into quarters whence no one knew whether they would ever come out alive, makes a stirring chapter in China's missionary history. Here they stayed, men, women, and children, missionaries and Christian Chinese, from June 20 to August 14, crowded together, on short rations, keeping incessant watch, counseling continually as to better measures of defense, seeing the sky lurid at night, with the fires destroying foreign buildings, including their loved mission premises, and hearing the cry of the mob surging against the wall, "Kill, kill, kill!"

The bravery, cheerfulness, and faith of the missionaries in this stress won the admiration of the diplomats and soldiers as they waited together for the allied armies to force their way in. After the lifting of the siege, United States Minister Conger sent an expression of thanks to the missionaries for their aid and for that of the Chinese Christians to whom he believed the preservation of all lives was due. About all the responsible news obtainable as to the progress of the army came through the reports of some devoted Christian natives serving as spies.

While, within the walls of Peking, this company waited for the army of relief, the Boxers were ravaging the country outside, venting their fury upon mission stations and all associated with them. Thousands of native Christians in all the centers, including Peking and its outstations, were horribly slain, men, women, and children alike; others were driven into hiding, many to be hunted out like rats in their holes.

Kalgan and Pao-ting-fu were devastated; later Lintsing also. At Tientsin, the center of the fiercest conflict between the Chinese and the army of the allies, the slaughter of Christians was not quite so sweeping as at Peking.

Pao-ting-fu suffered heaviest of all, as, after being threatened and terrorized for weeks and seeing the outstations, one after another, demolished, with the slaughter of Christian Chinese, while local authorities evaded or disclaimed responsibility, suddenly all the missionaries in the city, including the three of the American Board, were ruthlessly slain, their bodies being dismembered and burned. The heroism of Horace Pitkin, in protecting as long as possible Miss Gould and Miss Morrill, and the splendid devotion of Pastor Meng, are points of light in the dark scene. Pastor Meng, being absent when the Boxers attacked Pao-ting-fu, insisted against every protest on returning to help the missionaries there, and, upon marvelously reaching the city, remained with them undaunted till, two days before the rest were slain, he and his wife and all but one of his five children were put to death.

Massacre in Shansi

It was natural that this carnival of fanatic hate should reach its climax amid the intenser superstition and ignorance of the interior provinces. So Shansi suffered most in the Boxer outbreak. The mission of the American Board was absolutely wiped out; every person connected with it was put to death, no help being able to come in and flight being impossible after the necessity for it was made sure. Nearly half the native Christians went down with the missionaries. The mission premises at Taiku were razed to the ground, the government confiscating those at Fen-cho-fu. The merciless Yü Hsien, who had been governor of Shangtung when the Boxers began their outrages, was now governor of Shansi, and was once more able to give the marauders his sympathy and protection. Seven years after that July 31, 1900, which saw the slaughter at Taiku, there was brought to a meeting by the martyrs' graves, Miss Susan

Bird's diary, which had been found for sale in a second-hand shop. And there was read the pathetic record of the time when the little company waited behind the feeble barrier of the compound, not knowing what a day might bring forth, whether it should be death or escape, but, learning at last, as the journal says, that "all the bad reports seemed to be true and all the good ones false." The entries ceased on July 19, twelve days before the terrible end, a mute suggestion of what men and women endured who then laid down their lives for the gospel.

The missions to the south, though disturbed and losing some property, yet suffered comparatively little, as the provinces they occupied were able to prevent the Boxers' full attack.

Collapse at Last of the Boxer Movement

When the allied armies broke into Peking and the court fled 1000 miles into the interior, the illusions of the Boxers' invulnerability and of China's easy supremacy over all other nations disappeared like dew. It was clear even to China that she could not safely defy the rest of the world or disregard solemn treaties. Before a year had elapsed her statesmen and even the empress dowager herself had decided to adopt a saner policy; they would seek the advantage of living on good terms with those with whom they must live on some terms.

With the assurance of indemnities, which were duly paid, the work of reestablishment was only a question of time. Now the havoc which had been wrought became yet more apparent. Of the Peking church and its branches, 170 members were known to have been killed; many others were missing; in one of the outstation churches fifty-three out of sixty-five members were slain. Dr. Dennis estimates that in these massacres there were put to death not less than 188 Protestant missionaries and their children, and forty-four of Roman Catholic connection; several thousand native Christians, including both Protestants and Catholics, perished in the same way.

Inasmuch as in many cases these hunted disciples could have escaped the butchery by a word or sign, the sincerity of their faith and their capacity for self-sacrifice are apparent. It was inevitable that in such a reign of terror many should recant or evade; the wonder is at the multitude that endured even unto death, and at the no less heroic souls who in countless hiding-places in the land held true during the months of want and danger.

Reconstruction

The work of reconstruction was begun so soon as order was established at the capital. Herein Dr. Ament in Peking proved himself a wise and effective leader. Through all the region round about, with tireless patience and devotion, he restored refugees to their villages and aided them in rebuilding their homes. The testimony of all with whom he had to deal in the difficult and perplexing negotiations of the time, — officials, the Christians whose claims he pressed, and those upon whom he pressed them, — was a sufficient answer to such criticisms of ignorance or of injustice as were passed upon him on this side of the water.

Rebuilding was soon begun and missionary work resumed. Services were maintained almost at once in Peking, Tientsin, and Pao-ting-fu; somewhat later, at Pang-Chuang, Lintsing, Tung-chou, and Kalgan. It was found possible to enlarge the mission compound both at Peking and Pao-ting-fu; at Tung-chou a more ample site was secured, and missionary residences were soon erected and a part of College Hall, sufficient to house the students while beginning the work again. At the end of three years the college premises were in better order than before the Boxer trouble. At Pang-Chuang the buildings had been untouched, but the Christians were somewhat demoralized with the long unsettled conditions and the element of time was needed to restore courage and hope. The impressive fact was that the missionaries found a welcome wherever they went. The hatred which the Boxers had so suddenly evoked had as suddenly vanished. It was easier

than before to get access to the people and to secure respectful consideration from officials and men of influence.

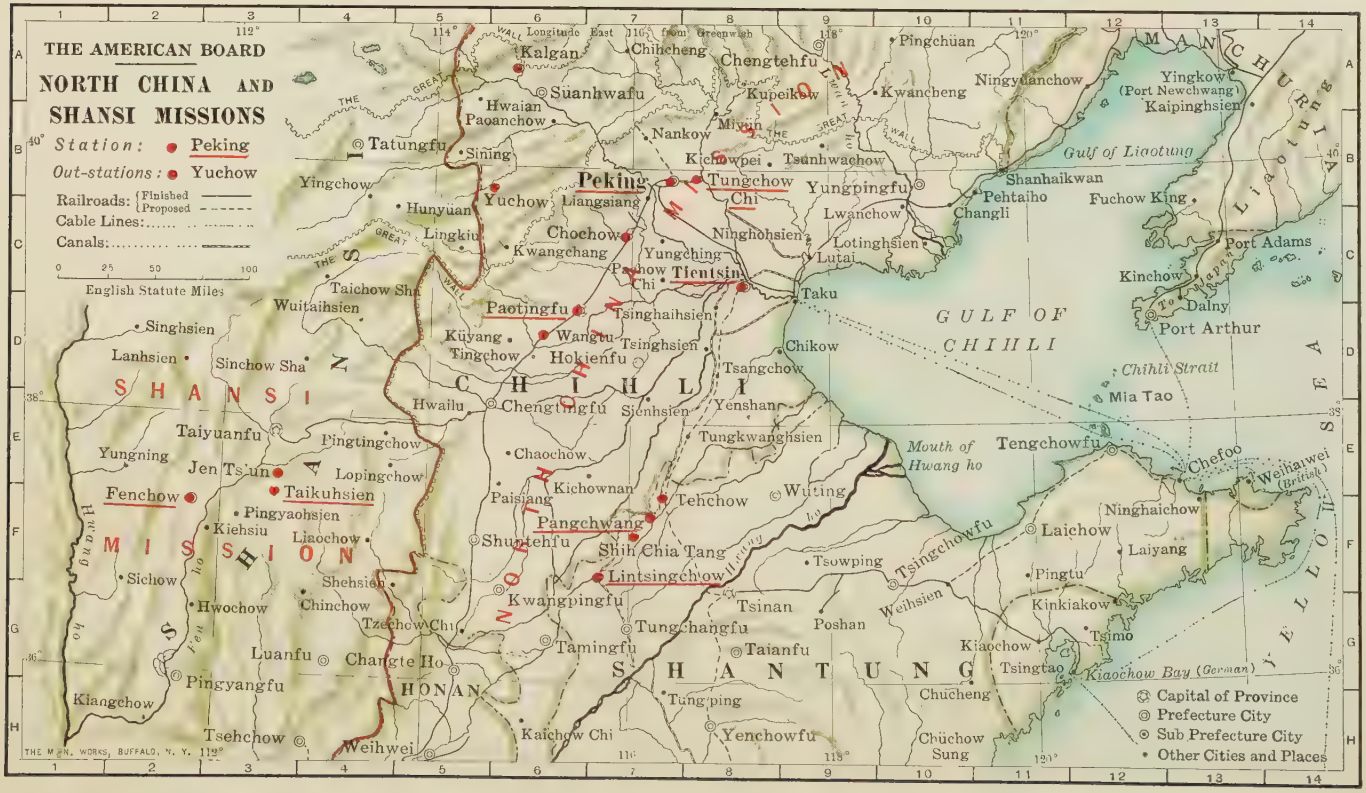
Shansi, bereaved of all its missionaries who were on the ground, and more remote from the center of reconstruction at Peking, was naturally somewhat slower in recovery. But Dr. Atwood, whose absence from the country during the massacres left him the only surviving member of this mission, visited the field by 1902, recovered the remains of his associates and the church members, and gave them honorable burial, with the Chinese authorities in attendance, expressing their sorrow for what had been done. With reparation for material losses, the mission was better provided with buildings and grounds than ever before. Native leaders were able to resume missionary work, and the coming of new missionaries was eagerly desired. The railroad, already half way completed from Pao-ting-fu to Taiku, was gradually making an easier access to Shansi.

Instead of extirpating the Board's mission in China the Boxer movement really established it on a firmer footing. During the years since, in common with other missions in the country, it has developed at an astonishing rate, and in an era when there is being wrought practically the reorganization of the empire.

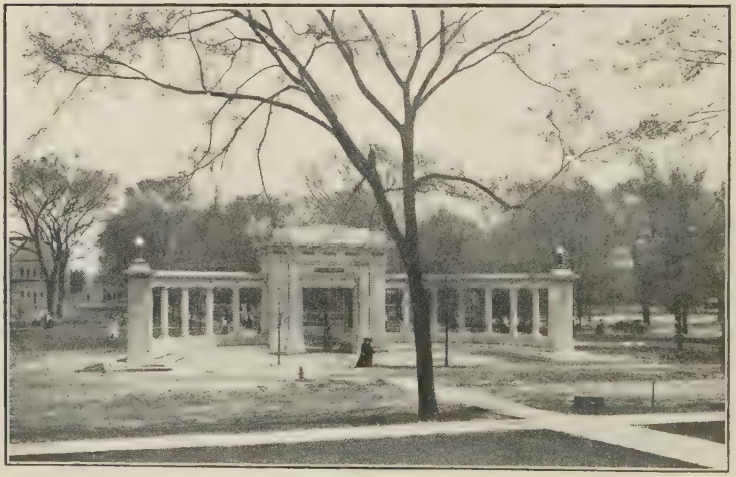
A Decade of Marvelous Advance

Five years after the Boxers were rioting over Chi-li the viceroy of that imperial province had established over 5000 schools of primary and secondary grade; a sudden and surprising increase, reacting strongly on mission schools and enabling them to furnish teachers and leaders in educational lines for the new China.

In many ways a transformation has been wrought in the empire. In Tientsin the newspapers jumped from three to twenty-three in number within four years in the first of the decade. A decree commanding parents not to bind the feet of their daughters has already accomplished its purpose and set the new fashion in the empire. In like manner an anti-opium decree, thought to be a mere form of words when it


THE AMERICAN BOARD
NORTH CHINA AND SHANSI MISSIONS
Station: Peking
Out-stations: Yuchow
Railroads: Finished Proposed
Cable Lines:
Canals:
0 25 50 100
English Statute Miles
Longitude East from Greenwich
Kalgan
Chihcheng
Chengtehfu
Pingchüan
Ningyüanchow
Yingkow (Port Newchwang)
Kaipinghsien
Süanhwafu
Hwaian
Paoanchow
Kupeikow
Kwancheng
Miyün
Nankow
Tatungfu
Sining
Kichowpei
Tsunhwachow
Gulf of Liaotung
Shanhaikwan
Yingchow
Peking
Tungchow Chi
Yungpingfu
Pehtaiho
Changli
Fuchow King
Hunyüan
Yuchow
Liangsiang
Lwanchow
Lingkiu
Chochow
Ninghohsien
Lotinghsien
Port Adams
Kwangchang
Yungching
Lutai
Kinchow
Pachow Chi
Tientsin
Taku
Taichow Sha
Wuitaihsien
Paotingfu
Tsinghaihsien
Dalny
Port Arthur
Singhsien
Küyang
Wangtu
Tsinghsien
GULF OF CHIHLI
Lanhsien
Sinchow Sha
Tingchow
Hokienfu
Chikow
Tsangchow
Chihli Strait
SHANSI
CHIHLI
Hwailu
Chengtingfu
Sienhsien
Yenshan
Mia Tao
Taiyuanfu
Pingtingchow
Tungkwanghsien
Mouth of Hwang ho
Tengchowfu
Yungning
Chaochow
Chefoo
Jen Ts'un
Lopingchow
Weihaiwei (British)
Fenchow
Taikuhsien
Kichownan
Wuting
Paisiang
Tehchow
Ninghaichow
Pingyaohsien
Pangchwang
Kiehsiu
Liaochow
Shuntehfu
Shih Chia Tang
Laichow
Laiyang
MISSION
Tsingchowfu
Tsowping
Sichow
Shehsien
Lintsingchow
Pingtu
Hwochow
Chinchow
Kwangpingfu
Tsinan
Weihsien
Kinkiakow
Tzechow Chi
Tungchangfu
Poshan
Tsimo
Luanfu
Changte Ho
Tamingfu
Taianfu
Kiaochow
Tsingtao
Kiaochow Bay (German)
Pingyangfu
HONAN
SHANTUNG
Chucheng
Kiangchow
Tung'ping
Tsehchow
Weihwei
Kaichow Chi
Yenchowfu
Chüchow Sung
Capital of Province
Prefecture City
Sub Prefecture City
Other Cities and Places
THE MAN. WORKS, BUFFALO, N. Y.

CHURCH AND MARTYR CEMETERY, PAO-TING-FU



MEMORIAL ARCH, OBERLIN COLLEGE

TWO BOXER MEMORIALS

appeared in 1896, has already revolutionized the situation in some of the cities and provinces. In Shansi, frightfully cursed with opium when the missionaries entered it, one who traveled widely through its territory in 1909 saw not a single field of poppies; everywhere wheat was taking its place.

And in this new awakening, China is in increasing degree tolerant if not cordial to Christian work. A new favor and regard have been often shown to the missionaries, even by officials and representative people in the cities as well as by country folk. In particular, the return by the United States of the surplus of indemnity funds paid by China after the massacres has added to the prestige of America, and so of American missions. It is no wonder that the reorganization has been swift. In less than three years after the Boxers' devastation mission schools and seminaries in Chi-li had nearly regained their former numbers; the hospitals were again thronged; churches were reestablished with Christian leaders, the church at Pao-ting-fu having for its new pastor a younger brother of that Mr. Meng who laid down his life in the effort to defend the missionaries.

By 1905 Mr. and Mrs. Corbin had arrived in Taiku, the first missionaries to settle anew in the Shansi field. Thereupon the work began to develop in that interior province quite as rapidly as in those stations nearer the capital. The years since have shown the eagerness of many Chinese of that province to secure whatever blessings Christianity has to bestow. Teachers in government schools advise their scholars to go to the mission church, which unfortunately is already overcrowded. The hearts of the missionaries are divided between exultation over the opportunity and dismay at the inadequate equipment for so great an hour. The organization at Oberlin of the Shansi Memorial Association, in 1907, links the work of this mission yet more closely with the college with which from the first it has been peculiarly associated and promises to it a larger and yet more loyal support.

In the south the same quickened conditions have appeared. When Foochow Mission, in 1907, celebrated its jubilee, it could look out with great satisfaction on the growth that had been made. The native Christians were alert and aggressive. Churches and chapels were numbered by the hundred, with pastors, some of them remarkable men, coming forth from the schools and colleges to man them. The colleges for men and for girls are among the best that China can show and constitute a force of immense significance in this enterprising province of Fukien. In 1908 the doing away of idol processions and idol celebrations released the Christians from a nagging persecution.

The South China Mission also is astir. The Ruth Norton Girls' School at Canton has come into great favor; more than 100 pupils, many of them from influential families, desiring to enter, have had to be turned away in the later years. A new church, erected in Hong Kong without aid from the Board, is becoming a center of religious life and activity. The plant for the mission at Canton, erected in 1901, has amply provided for the needs of the station there. The celebration of the Morrison centennial in that city, in 1907, was a three days' convocation which brought together the largest gathering of Protestants ever seen in the city, if not in all China. The huge bamboo shelter built on the river bank, with seats for 3000, was altogether insufficient for the representative assembly.

Here, as elsewhere, temples are being suffered to fall into disrepair, and the people, convinced of the futility of the temple services and ways, have grown bold to cast out the idols into the street, sometimes even sweeping them into holes by the roadside.

Signs of a great opportunity appear in all the provinces where the Board has missions. Near Lintsing recently, in a large region comprising one whole county and portions of several others, inquirers came by the hundred, eager for missionary instruction, and ready to follow the Word as they

learned it. Seven new outstations were opened, and tours made by the missionary reached as many as fifteen villages at a time. The sincerity of the movement was evidenced by the number of changed lives in which idolatry, gambling, and the use of opium were abandoned under the constraint of the new way.

The deputation of 1907, consisting of Prof. Edward C. Moore, D.D., of the Prudential Committee, and Secretary Barton, after protracted investigation of the several missions with a view to advising upon readjustments required by the new times, were most impressed with the size and influence to which the Board's work in China had grown in a few swift years.

Union Movements

It was natural that those who had been brought close together in the suffering and strain of massacre days and in the siege of Peking should find it easier thereafter to plan for cooperative work. And the great conference at Shanghai, in 1907, marking the centenary of Morrison's beginning of mission work in China, gave opportunity for careful study of the situation and impetus to the planning of united effort. The size and scope of this conference, in which were gathered nearly 500 appointed delegates, representing fifty-one organizations doing mission work in China, was an object lesson, not only to the Chinese, but to the whole Christian world, that Christianity has fairly undertaken the religious conquest of this empire. From this conference the missionaries went back to their several fields, not only with a fresh determination to do each his own part, but with a new sense of the common task.

The union work in which the American Board is most significantly associated at present has Peking for its center. Here several higher institutions of learning have been combined in a simple plan, by which each Board provides the plant and equipment for the institution it owns, while all unite in supplying teachers, running expenses being divided among the

missions according to the number of students each furnishes. In this united way a group of four schools is now in operation: the North China Union Arts College, in the suburb of Tungchou, built by the American Board; the North China Union Medical College, built by the London Missionary Society; the North China Union Theological College, built by the American Presbyterian Mission; the Union Woman's College, built by the American Board. The American Methodist Mission joins in the plan, so far as the Union Medical College is concerned, and the North China Woman's Union Medical College, to be built and equipped by the Methodist Woman's Board, is already ratified by the Board of Managers in China. This arrangement, inaugurated in 1904, has worked smoothly and gives encouragement that such combinations in the interests of economy and efficiency can be made elsewhere in the empire. Indeed, their beginnings are already to be found in other of the Board's Chinese missions.

Chapter XXI

THE NEARER EAST

By 1880 the officers of the Board were thinking that they might soon close mission work among the Armenians. Other races were calling for attention: ambitious Bulgarians, Greeks in Asia Minor, Arabs in Mesopotamia, and everywhere Turks, now better understood, and for whom one-third of the missionaries and the native agency were prepared to labor if the way should open. Evangelical Christianity was thoroughly acclimated and vigorous; there were nearly 100 churches, with over 6000 members, and thirty-nine schools of higher learning up to college grade; including the students at Robert College, at least 1000 young men were securing advanced education. More Christian women were laboring for their sex in Turkey than in any other field of the Board.

Attempt at Withdrawal

In spite of this growth the hope of withdrawing from the Armenians was not soon to be fulfilled. The effort to press responsibility and self-support upon the evangelical churches, in order to set free missionary forces for other races, produced some misunderstandings and complaints. At the same time the rising spirit of independence among these churches led them to claim for their organizations control of mission funds to be expended for their benefit. There was friction between the native pastors and the mission, and some division of opinion among the missionaries themselves. At last an important conference was held at Constantinople in May, 1883, composed of representatives of the four Turkish missions and of the churches, and a deputation from the Prudential Com-

mittee, together with a special committee appointed by the Board itself. For weeks preceding, both on the field and in the homeland, prayer was offered for this conference, which was felt to be of critical importance. And before its sessions began there occurred such a religious quickening as had never been known in the Turkish missions; it covered all the field of Asiatic Turkey, particularly the Central Turkey Mission, and was manifest also at Samokov. The gracious influence continued and increased after the conference with memorable results. Here, again, the work for women by women was notable; at Harpoot crowds of women thronged about Miss Bush and Miss Seymour to hear the gospel, and missionaries at other stations had similar experiences.

When the conference met, it found a new spirit of self-denial and evangelistic zeal that entirely relieved the situation. Attendance upon the sessions was felt to be a religious experience of highest value. Judgments were more unanimous than had been thought possible; on the one hand, it was recognized that American Christians could not attempt to meet all the needs of Armenian churches, pastors, and institutions; at the same time, as the situation was studied on the ground, it was seen that these oppressed evangelical communities could not become quickly independent of foreign aid. The conference had only to strengthen and encourage movements already widely begun and to formulate such principles as should safeguard the rights and interests of all concerned; viz., that the mission should administer all funds received from the Board, while the contributions of the native churches should be under their direction. Strained relations were relieved, and the clouds which, as they gathered, seemed so portentous, passed safely over. The policy then outlined became generally adopted throughout the Board's missions; though as the spirit of cooperation developed, it was to be somewhat modified in operation, as particularly in the Central Turkey Mission.

The Turkish government now began to show renewed hos-

THE AMERICAN BOARD
ASIATIC TURKEY
including
EASTERN, CENTRAL AND WESTERN
TURKEY MISSIONS
Stations: Harpoot
Out-stations: Kessab
Railroads, finished:
proposed:
Steamship Lines:
Cable Lines:
English Statute Miles
Longitude East from Greenwich
THE MATTHEWS-NORTHRUP WORKS, BUFFALO, N. Y.
BLACK SEA
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
TURKEY
TRANS-CAUCASIA
ASIA MINOR
WESTERN TURKEY MISSION
EASTERN TURKEY MISSION
CENTRAL TURKEY MISSION
Mesopotamia
Armenia
Kurdistan
Syria
Cyprus
Gulf of Adalia
Taurus Mts.
Anti-Taurus
Salt Desert
Lake Van
Bosporus
Sea-of-Marmora
Dardanelles
Sakaria
Kizil Irmak
Tuz Tcholli
Euphrates
Western Euphrates
Eastern Euphrates
Tigris
Adrianople
Constantinople
Scutari
Rodosto
Gallipolis
Imbros
Kale
Sultanieh
Bigha
Balikesri
Aivalik
Mytilene
Bergama
Ak Hissar
Manisa
Smyrna
Chios
Samos
Nikaria
Kos
Rhodes
Karpathos
Aidin
Nazilli
Denizli
Milas
Mughla
Elmaly
Adalia
Bourdour
Isparta
Alasher
Ushak
Simav
Kutaia
Eskishehr
Afion
Kara Hissar
Akshehr
Konia
Erekli
Karaman
Mut
Mersine
Tarsus
Adana
Missis
Kars
Sis
Osmaniyeh
Aintab
Killis
Alexandretta
Antioch
Aleppo
Kessab
Latakia
Hama
Homs
Tripoli
Nicosia
Larnaka
Ineboli
Sinope
Zafaranboli
Kastamouni
Boli
Adabazar
Bardezag
Mudania
Brousa
Baibazar
Angora
Tchangri
Samsoon
Marsovan
Amasia
Tchorum
Sile
Tocat
Enderes
Sivas
Yozgat
Kirshehr
Nevsher
Akserai
Cesarea
Kaisarieh
Talas
Nigdeh
Gorun
Albistan
Malatia
Hadjin
Zeitoon
Adiaman
Marash
Birejik
Oorfa
Ordou
Tireboli
Trebizond
Rizeh
Kara-hissar
Erzingan
Erzroom
Alashgerd
Khanoos
Kemakh
Divrig
Egin
Arabkir
Harpoot
Palu
Itchme
Temran
Gernik
Moush
Bitlis
Van
Farkin
Sert
Diarbekir
Redvan
Mardin
Midyat
Mosul
Batum
Akhaltikh
Kars

tility. The slightest extension of work outside the Christian communities was resented; in some places churches and schoolhouses could not be built. Here and there violence was felt. A storm of persecution broke in 1886 at Marash, and, although the authorities under pressure awarded tardy damages, the incident remained as a warning to those who should exercise their freedom. By the censorship of the press at Constantinople, and the arrest and imprisonment of teachers for alleged disloyalty, mission work was continually harassed. Messrs. Knapp and Raynolds, traveling in the remoter parts of Eastern Turkey, in 1884, were attacked and without redress, though the United States government protested. The times were full of disorder throughout the interior. Bands of Kurdish robbers were sweeping down upon cities and villages, often acting as *Hamidieh* or the appointed police of Sultan Abdul Hamid II; at the same time the coming of revolutionary immigrants from south Russia into western Turkey spread terror through the region.

Fresh Obstacles

Covert attacks of Armenian Roman Catholics upon Protestant mission work, and a painful, though fortunately temporary, violation of mission comity in two of the Board's stations were other interferences that made heavier the task.

Distresses of still another sort came to hinder the Armenian churches in the assumption of full care of work for their people. The specter of famine stalked over wide districts of the empire, again and again, during the '80s. In Eastern Turkey, in 1880, and in Central Turkey, in 1887–88, the failure of crops was so general that mission work was of necessity turned quite largely to famine relief. Gifts from America and Europe, amounting, in 1888, to $31,000, were then dispensed by the missionaries. The people were left in desperate plight; the tendency to emigration increased; self-support was for a time, at least, out of the question; the wretchedness of the Armenian people was almost universal; the outlook for their material welfare seemed hopeless.

Adversity made the people more approachable and responsive. Here, also, famine relief worked immeasurable benefit to the mission, as it impressed not only the evangelical communities, but the people of all religions and races. When it was understood that help was given to all sects alike without conditions there was great astonishment. Green-turbaned Moslems called down Heaven's richest blessing on the Protestants; the churches were filled with new listeners, eager to hear the teachings of this wonderful religion. In many quarters the wall of prejudice began to give way; in some villages the Gregorian churches were thrown open to missionaries and earnest requests came for evangelical preachers and teachers. The need of competent men for such openings was desperate.

Growth Notwithstanding

Fresh stimulus came to the schools and the opportunity of the Bible readers was extended. Sixteen Bible women in the Harpoot field, with over 500 scholars, most of them Gregorians, were a sign of the times. Revivals, deep and strong, blessed many sections; at Aintab, in 1888, for six weeks all other interests were forgotten. Gregorians helped to fill the churches; the voice of prayer could be heard in homes as one walked by them. Hundreds were soon added to the city churches, including entire families; it was estimated that 1000 were thus won to Christ in the limits of the Central Turkey Mission. Many Gregorians were reached, though without publicly joining the Protestant community. Soon the same influence was felt in Eastern and Western Turkey. A home missionary society was formed during the revival at Aintab, and also societies for strengthening the Christian life among young people. The alienations, so disturbing in 1883, had now entirely subsided, cooperation between missionaries and native workers was once more cordial and effective; the new loyalty and determination that the gospel should win its way were exhilarating.

At Constantinople the success of the evangelical work in

Gedik Pasha was prompting a similar attempt in Haskeuy. The Home for Girls had developed into the American College for Girls, and with a corresponding lift in its requirements. The varied activities of this central station included influential weekly and monthly papers, sent all over the empire, and a careful evangelistic work for Greeks. The Greek Evangelical Alliance indeed had its center then at Smyrna and its chief field of labor within the limits of that station; yet it was recognized that Constantinople was in a real sense the headquarters for this as for all the missionary work in the empire.

The educational work for both sexes and all races was now of central importance in upbuilding the evangelical faith. In all the missions the system of schools was practically complete, from the day schools in the several outstations to the colleges and theological seminaries. And there was no more conscientious class of helpers than the hard-working teachers of the village schools who were shedding far and wide the intellectual and spiritual light which they had themselves found in the higher institutions of learning.

Advance in European Turkey

In the European section of the Turkish missions, also, the era of advance had come. The first fifteen years of its life had been mainly a preparation. The war period, from 1875–78, which resulted in constituting Bulgaria an autonomous though tributary principality, opened a new life to that eager nation and to missionary work for it. For a time the Board's stations were under three distinct governments, Bulgaria, eastern Roumelia, and Macedonia. This last district, whose very right to its name was in constant dispute between Turks and Greeks, and Albania, just dawning upon the missionary horizon, kept the missionaries of those regions in turmoil and sometimes in danger.

During the decade from 1877–87 the missionary advance among the Bulgarians was rapid, judged by such tokens as increase in numbers, contributions of native Christians, the

appearance of able native leaders, and the development of the Bulgarian Evangelical Society. Two chief obstacles were national jealousy, which prompted the Bulgarians to accept nothing that seemed to discredit their state Church, and the tide of infidelity and irreligion which came in with the new political freedom. Yet men high in the counsels of the government admitted their indebtedness to the mission schools and to Robert College. When a new church edifice was dedicated in Sofia, the capital of Bulgaria, in 1888, one of the large audience was H.R.H. Prince Ferdinand, who, on leaving, presented the church with 500 francs as a token of good-will, an incident in marked contrast with the opposition of only a few years before.

Steady work in the mission was hindered by deadly feuds between the races, resulting in frequent outbreaks not only in the mountains of Macedonia, but even in the more civilized cities and country districts. The rebellion of 1885, which changed eastern Roumelia to southern Bulgaria, for a time interrupted work in Philippopolis, then overrun with war. Pastors and teachers, however, remained faithful to their posts and the missionaries were alert to win every advantage. In 1896, when war broke out between Turks and Greeks, Salonica and Monastir were centers of activity, and missionary work was again disturbed. Undiscouraged by such turbulent scenes and times, efforts were promptly renewed to develop a generation able to serve the cause of freedom more wisely. The great need was of Christian leadership among the Bulgarians. Attention was turned in the '90s to the better equipment of the Samokov Institute, and of the schools in general, in which lay so largely the destiny of the land. The burden occasioned by the Board's financial distress was heavy; especial cause for sorrow and shame was the fact that the mission paper, *Zornitza*, begun in 1871 and ever since a messenger of light through that gloomy land, had to be suspended for lack of funds.

Meanwhile on the Asiatic side of the Bosphorus the sky grew darker. The horror of plague once more befell. Close upon the cholera in many sections came famine; in Eastern Turkey, in 1893–94, famine relief again had to be undertaken. Serious fires added to the burden; one at Marsovan was plainly incendiary and apparently the work of Turkish officials. While in European Turkey civil and religious liberty were gaining ground, in Asia oppression and persecution were strengthening.

Lowering Clouds

Marsovan was the storm center in the Western Turkey Mission. Anatolia College suffered the brunt of the attack; in 1893 two teachers were arrested and imprisoned and the institution was kept in close watch by the officials. Even families and former friends looked with suspicion on each other. The Ottoman government seemed determined to cripple the schools and churches. Legal rights were openly violated in spite of missionary and diplomatic remonstrances. Through all, the steadfastness of the missionaries, their prudence, patience, and devotion were worthy of full praise. At length, in 1895, a *firman* was secured, authorizing the rebuilding of the girls' school that had been burned, and allowing another building for Anatolia College, which now became a chartered institution under the laws of Massachusetts, with an *irade* or imperial charter granted in Constantinople. The imprisoned native teachers were released on condition of withdrawal from the empire. Order was not at once restored, but the mission felt that its course had been justified. In the midst of a storm, such as they had never encountered before, the missionaries, as one of them said, could only "stand in the teeth of the gale and outride it or go down."

In Central Turkey, too, though the political situation was far from comfortable, and though the poverty of the people and the weakness of the government were depressing, yet the missionaries escaped serious embarrassment and were able to help the Christian population and to lead them even in such

impoverished times, under stress of necessity, to a larger measure of self-support.

In Eastern Turkey the situation was alarming. Far from the centers of travel, it was an inviting field for the blow both of the rebel and the despot. Van was a hotbed of sedition. Erzroom and Bitlis, brought into deplorable condition by famine, were now subjected to such oppression and terrorizing by the government as were almost unbearable. Christians were compelled to speak in enigmas and to talk in whispers. The missionaries, restricted somewhat in touring, found abundant need and opportunity in the cities.

A conspicuous event of the year 1894 was the massacre of Armenians in the district of Sassoun. To this lonely and mountainous region in the Bitlis field soldiers from all but one of the cities where there were mission stations were sent to take part in the slaughter. The knowledge and terror of this act traveled fast and far. Suspected by Turkish officials and Armenian revolutionists, the missionaries were threatened by both parties. Famine and cholera and the general terror following the massacres taxed the resources of the mission, especially in Bitlis. Yet new doors opened. Officials in the old Gregorian Church now recognized the sincere good-will of the American missionaries and came to them for advice and help.

A Carnival of Blood and Fire

The closing months of 1895 brought to the missions in Asiatic Turkey experiences recalling those of the early Christian church on these very fields. The first outbreak was at Constantinople on September 30, when a procession of Armenians was attacked on their way to the Sublime Porte to present a petition. Panic ensued; shops were closed; the alarm spread. Four days later similar scenes were enacted at Ak Hissar and without punishment. In less than a week Trebizond was filled with bloodshed, fire, and pillage. Five weeks later Sivas was visited, where it was estimated that 3300 Christians were

slain, 5000 houses looted, 200 burned, and over 2000 shops robbed. Three days after, at noon, the blow struck Marsovan, and within three hours the Armenian community had been reduced to poverty, the markets robbed and destroyed, and hundreds of the people slain. Here the mission premises were efficiently protected, but three of the outstations suffered more severely than the city. At Cæsarea, where assurances of safety had been received, the massacre lasted for three days. Nicomedia, Broosa, and Smyrna escaped outbreak; the other stations of the mission shared in the general disturbance. It was clearly an organized plot to wipe out the Armenians; the orders came from the capital and were traceable to the sultan's palace.

At once relief work was imperative. The mission force at Constantinople became a distributing agency for the funds which poured in from Europe and America, $500,000 being dispensed by them besides what was distributed through the Red Cross agency. The missionaries in the interior stations were also engrossed in rendering relief.

In Central Turkey nearly the entire field of the mission was involved in the storm of murder and hate. At Oorfa no less than 6000 were slaughtered in two days, beginning December 28, nearly half the number being burned in the large Gregorian church, to which they had fled, and which was set on fire after kerosene had been sprinkled on people, mattings, and whatever was combustible. At Marash the mission premises were invaded, the theological seminary building robbed and then burned, and two students fatally wounded. Six places in the Aintab field were visited; out of a population of 43,000 Armenians, 9500 were slain. For weeks afterward the mission hospitals were crowded with the wounded and dying. Zeitoon, in the mountains, was the only point where there was successful armed resistance. Relief work in this mission, too, was absorbing.

Eastern Turkey suffered most of all. Bitlis was attacked

on October 26 and for a long time the lives of the missionaries there were in jeopardy. Erzroom came next. Then the tide swept across the Harpoot plain, engulfing cities and villages in its path, until it reached Harpoot November 11. Here mission premises were sacked, and all but four of the buildings burned. The missionaries themselves, including the veteran Dr. Wheeler, who, too feeble to walk, was carried by the little company as they fled from their burning houses, were repeatedly fired upon, but all escaped physical injury. Mardin, attacked a little before Harpoot, successfully repulsed the invaders. Van, the last place of all in this mission to suffer, was visited the following June, when the Armenian revolutionists brought upon themselves the consequences of the disorders they had provoked.

The glory of these terrible weeks was the Christian loyalty, both of the missionaries and the Armenians. The test of martyrdom was unflinchingly faced by multitudes of men and women, young and old, who firmly refused to recant. The pastors set a noble example, as in Sivas, where one was caught in the market when the massacre began, and for four hours was imprisoned with his people, awaiting death. "When the soldiers found them, at a later hour, they instantly called upon the pastor to accept Islam. He refused, and they struck him; when he still refused upon a second demand, they smote him again. Then, when for the third time they offered him his life if he would deny his faith, he replied, like Polycarp of old, 'I not only believe the Christian faith, but I have taught it to others; I cannot deny it. If for this you wish to kill me, I am ready.' And with this word he fell, pierced by the rifle balls of his foes." The missionaries were impressed also with the loyalty of the Armenians in the Gregorian Church, and felt that there must be something real to them in the Christianity to which they thus clung even at the cost of their lives.

Not a missionary forsook his post or wavered at it. One figure, that of Miss Corinna Shattuck, may stand for all.

Alone in charge of the station at Oorfa, and disdaining to use a permit to leave for Aintab, which was granted her just before the bloody work began, this frail woman remained as a tower of defense to her distracted people. The special guards assigned to protect her house obeyed her as if she were a queen, and fought back the mob through a frightful Saturday and Sunday, while the officials sent repeated assurances that no harm should come to her. Meanwhile her neighbors swarmed in, over walls and past guards, for protection, until on Saturday night 240 people, sixty of them men, crowded every room and corner, asking only to remain under her shelter. Realizing her inability to protect the men, the next morning she despatched them secretly with a day's rations to a hiding-place, where she locked them in, herself keeping the key. When in the afternoon Moslem officials inspected her premises, asking Miss Shattuck to appear on the veranda, begging her, with salaams, not to be disturbed, and inquiring if there were any men there, she was able to say honestly, "No, only women and children." So she saved all who had fled to her for refuge.

In the days of panic and distress that followed the slaughter at Oorfa, when all the leading Armenians were either killed, imprisoned, or disabled, the burden of caring for the wounded and the refugees was calmly undertaken by Miss Shattuck, who forgot that she was really an invalid in doing the work of a strong and fearless man. A Gregorian, speaking of those days, said, "If it had not been for Miss Shattuck, we could not have endured the pressure. We should all have turned Moslem."

The Recovery

The missionaries at once attacked their problem of reconstruction. Food to sustain life was first of all to be provided. Within a few days after the massacre there were no less than 2000 refugees in Trebizond alone, begging for bread. The mission compound in Van became an asylum for 15,000 refugees; some relief was given to at least 30,000 in the region about Marash. After the

distribution of bread, the providing of clothing was in order, then the getting of tools and household utensils with which to begin life again. The rebuilding was in itself a huge undertaking. A multitude of homes had been destroyed by fire; villages were practically wiped out, and many large cities laid waste. Some of the finest churches in the Harpoot field had been burned; all but four of the mission buildings had gone up in smoke. Industries, too, had to be devised or renewed and special provision made for the thousands of widows and orphans. There were 250 widows and 800 orphans at the one station of Marsovan; other centers, like Oorfa, Harpoot, and Marash, had twice as many.

To make the situation still harder, the financial condition of the Board prevented it from rendering direct aid and even compelled further retrenchment; it seemed to the burdened missionaries sometimes as if the American churches would complete the extermination which the cruel Turk had begun. But other avenues of help were mercifully opened. The American Red Cross society rendered splendid and prolonged service; likewise the Armenian Relief Committee of America, organized largely through the efforts of Rev. Frederick D. Greene, whose book on the Armenian massacres had set the shocking facts before the world. Representatives of the Mennonite Church of America and of German friends of missions came on errands of relief, which proved to be beginnings of permanent service, as the former undertook the care of an orphanage at Hadjin, and the latter opened similar institutions at several centers where the overtaxed missionaries were glad to turn work into their hands. An orphanage was opened at Sivas by the Swiss. Large sums were at length forwarded to the missionaries for relief, most of which was administered by giving employment to the needy. More than $400,000 was distributed in this way in the Eastern Turkey Mission alone. Prominent assistants in the relief work were Professor and Mrs. J. Rendel Harris, of Cambridge, England, who came

as representatives of the Society of Friends and remained for some time to give the cheer of their presence and help in many of the mission stations; also Mr. Leopold Favre, of Geneva, and Lady Anderson, of Dublin, though the latter did not visit the country.

A pathetic figure everywhere in the desolated land was the orphan child, homeless and helpless. The missionaries were fairly compelled to undertake the care of these little ones, whose numbers were appalling. Soon at each of the mission stations, as in many of the larger towns, orphan homes were opened. About 2000 children were thus provided for in the Eastern Turkey Mission alone; 1000 at Harpoot. Similar orphanages were instituted in many places in Central Turkey also, such as Oorfa, Aintab, Marash, and Hadjin. The American Armenian Relief Committee, well organized, with Miss Emily C. Wheeler, daughter of Dr. Wheeler, of Harpoot, and herself long a missionary there, as its secretary, now definitely undertook the continued support of many of these orphanages, later broadening its field to render similar service to orphans in India.

A New Department

The expense of these orphanages was kept down by the provision of some forms of work, through which the children could earn a part of their own support. At Oorfa, in 1897, sixty-five girls were employed in stocking making, thirty in felt embroidery, 300 in spinning and weaving, and 200 in silk needlework. This experiment with industrial work as a feature of self-help was so successful that it was introduced into many of the high schools and colleges of the land.

The events of the next decade show how providential was the commitment of these thousands of orphans during their impressionable and formative years to the sole care of Christian missionaries. Thus a great company of young men and women were made ready for the new day soon to dawn.

More than five years passed before the Board's claim of indemnity, amounting to about $100,000, was granted. At

last, in 1901, the money was paid over to the United States government to be distributed to the several claimants. Stations like Harpoot and Marash were thus supplied with funds for rebuilding. But the attitude of the Turkish government was not humble or apologetic at the time of the massacres; it rather uttered absurd charges of sedition against some of the missionaries, notably Rev. George P. Knapp and Dr. H. N. Barnum. Open threats were made against the lives of others. Mr. Knapp was taken under arrest from Bitlis to Alexandretta and bundled out of the country with "expelled" written across his passport.

Indemnity at Last

During these times new respect and affection for the missionaries were born in the hearts of Armenians. Desolate and humbled in spirit, they were ready now to listen with eagerness to the gospel of a redeeming Christ. Practically revival conditions began to be recognized in many centers, as in Aintab, where the entire Armenian community insisted on evangelical teaching throughout the year 1897. Out of their bitter poverty the evangelical Armenians still contributed generously for the support of their churches. Small communities, literally in rags, loyally began to raise funds to maintain preaching services, promising soon to come to self-support. In 1898 four of these stricken churches in outstations, whose names would be unrecognized in America, became self-supporting, and the amount of native contributions in that field was $3400 against grants of $1700 by the Board.

Revival and Encouragement

The Gregorians were also brought into closer relationship with their evangelical brethren and with the missionaries, to whom the Armenian patriarch at Constantinople showed an unusual friendliness. Gregorians and Evangelicals for a time united in services and a new spirit animated many of the Gregorian clergy, so that interchange of visits from one church to the other were not uncommon.

As peace was restored and life took somewhat its usual

course again, this tendency of the Gregorians to unite with the Protestants naturally diminished, but the happy relations then established were never to be altogether broken. In Central Turkey the evangelizing of the ancient Church and its people was most marked; in many sections the closer intercourse has been maintained and the worship and sermon in the Gregorian Church have been so changed as to become substantially evangelical. So marked became this new temper in Aintab and vicinity that it called forth at length a rebuking decree from the patriarch at Constantinople; yet the tendency is several-fold stronger now than then.

Another ominous outbreak occurred in Constantinople in 1896, in which at least 5000 Armenians were slaughtered; but outwardly, at least, peace was soon restored.

With the turn into the twentieth century, the missions in Turkey were again outreaching. The emphasis of missionary labor was now put upon education; evangelistic effort was being committed to the native leaders. In Central Turkey a home missionary society was organized, under the auspices of the Cilicia Union, to bring the churches of that body to self-support and to eke out the inadequate appropriations for the native agency. In Eastern Turkey there was so serious a drain upon native workers through emigration that the force was altogether inadequate to the need. The struggle for permission to rebuild Euphrates College, the delaying of the indemnity, and the terror still resting on the people made it harder here to push reconstruction. In this mission, therefore, the work of touring was maintained with all possible vigor for the supervision and heartening of the depressed communities, Mr. Browne, of Harpoot, spending thirty-two weeks of the year 1900 in such traveling among the churches.

A Time of Advance

In Western Turkey the high schools were crowded with earnest students, and the most hopeful field for evangelical effort was found to be in the colleges and boarding-schools.

By this time the older pupils in the orphanages were being sent forth into permanent homes or to the higher schools, and the value of these institutions was proved. The missionaries doubted if any other form of labor had yielded so large a return.

Van, the old capital of Armenia, now showed a lessening opposition of ecclesiastics and made the most substantial progress of all the stations in Eastern Turkey in the decade following the massacres.

The Balkans Again Aflame

While the Board's missions in Asiatic Turkey were thus ravaged, the fields in European Turkey were not without disturbance. The Græco-Turkish war, in 1897, brought to the clash the unrest and disorder which had been secretly fomented. The three stations under Turkish rule suffered all the hardships of riot, massacre, and war. Salonica, opened as a station only two years before, became an important military post on the Turkish side, while Monastir occupied an uncertain position between the contending forces. Yet missionaries remained at their stations and none of them were disturbed. Mr. Haskell and Dr. House were able to spend at least from two to three months of the year in touring; native evangelists kept at their tasks and the colporters visited at least 120 towns and villages. The diffusion of religious literature proved an important department in this mission, as in their unrest of mind, eagerness for liberty, and comparative seclusion of life these rough mountain people were especially attracted to the printed word. The publication department was at this time, 1898, transferred from Constantinople to Samokov, with the coming of Mr. and Mrs. Thomson, as it was felt that such work should be done on Bulgarian soil. The *Zornitza*, regretfully suspended in 1897 for lack of funds, the mission now felt compelled to resume, even on an unstable financial basis, so necessary was it to the work.

The removal of the publication department to Samokov

THE AMERICAN BOARD
EUROPEAN TURKEY
MISSION
Stations:..... Salonica
Out-stations:.. Uskub
Railroads:.....
0 25 50 100
English Statute Miles
THE M.-N. WORKS, BUFFALO, N. Y.
MONTENEGRO
SERVIA
BULGARIA
Eastern Rumelia
ALBANIA
GREECE
ASIA MINOR
Balkan Mts.
Rhodope Mts.
Othrys Mts.
Pindus Mts.
AEGEAN SEA
IONIAN SEA
BLACK SEA
SEA OF MARMORA
Nikshidsh
Cattaro
Podgoritza
Cétinje
Antivari
Dulcigno
Bojana
Drin
Mitrovitza
Ipek
Prishtina
Diakova
Skutari
Prisrend
Kumanovo
Kostendil
Uskub
Kalkandele
Koprili
Dibra
Tirana
Durresi
Krushevo
Elbasan
Ochrida
Prilip
Monastir
Bitolia
Ostrovo
Vodena
Berat
Kortcha
Avlona
Kastoria
Ergeri
Konitsa
Corfu
Janina
Espirus
Trikala
Arta
Prevesa
Leukas
Leskovatz
Vranja
Orchanie
Sofia
Samokov
Ikhtiman
Tatar Pazardjik
Bansko
Strumnitza
Melnik
Serres
Drama
Xenidshe
Salonica
Veria
Olympus
Kalambaka
Larissa
Thessaly
Volos
Pharsalos
Lamia
Atalante
Skopelos
Skyros
Euboea
Panagurishte
Karlovo
Kazanlik
Philippopolis
Merichleri
Chaskovo
Trojan
Greenwich
Longitude East from
Rilo Mt.
Struma R.
Vardar R.
Gulf of Orfano
Gulf Salonica
Gulf Volo
Gulf Arta
Chalcidice
Mt. Athos
Lemnos
Imbros
Samothrace
Thasos
Dede Agatch
Enos
Gallipoli
Dardanelles
Gulf of Saros
Keshan
Rodosto
Airobol
Demotika
Adrianople
Kirk Kilisseh
Midia
Bosphorus
Constantinople
Corlu
Skutari
Artaki
Marmora I.
Brousa
Kale Sultanieh
C. Baba
Mytilene
C. Emineh
Misivri
Bourgas
Yamboul
Eski Sagra

left Elias Riggs the sole representative of this mission at Constantinople, to give his remaining years to the revision of the Bulgarian Bible Dictionary and other editorial work. At length, in 1901, after sixty-seven years of service and with but one furlough in America, his life work was completed, unmatched, it is believed, among all missionary societies of the world, both for the length of consecutive service and for the marvelous literary ability it displayed. "He had a respectable knowledge of something like twenty languages, and a scholarly knowledge of twelve. He took a most important part in the preparation of three influential versions of the Holy Scriptures; viz., Armenian, Bulgarian, and Turkish. He was also the sweet singer for the evangelical communities of at least three nationalities, the Bulgarian, Armenian, and Greek. The number of hymns which he translated or wrote in the Bulgarian language reached the remarkable number of 478." With all his abilities and attainments Dr. Riggs was distinguished among his missionary associates for his humility and saintly Christian character.

Capture of Miss Stone

While the missionaries were pursuing their quiet but vigorous tasks of spreading the evangel over these turbulent lands and training in church and school the little companies who ventured to defy the prejudice and superstition of their fellows, an event happened which brought them for a time into conspicuous notice. In the mountains of Macedonia, near the Bulgarian border, on September 3, 1901, a brigand band fell upon a group of Christian workers and carried off for ransom Miss Ellen M. Stone and Madam Tsilka, the wife of a Bulgarian preacher. The sum first demanded was $110,000, which was finally reduced to $68,200, upon payment of which the captives, after 172 days of hardship and anxiety beyond words to describe, were set free on February 23, 1902.

Immediately upon the capture, the entire mission force set itself to discover the whereabouts of the prisoners and to effect

their release. The United States government came to their aid. Negotiations with the brigands, who, it soon came to be suspected and afterward to be known, were not mere robbers, but revolutionary leaders, were prolonged, difficult, and even hazardous. At length the way was opened for passing over the ransom, contributed in part by Miss Stone's family and friends and in part by churches and individuals in response to appeal. It was due to the courage and skill of Dr. House, Mr. Peet, and Mr. Garguilo, chief dragoman of the United States Legation, that the actual transfer of the money was safely and secretly effected; thereupon they waited in agonizing suspense for the brigands to fulfil their part of the bargain. This was so circuitously done that several days, perhaps even a week or more, elapsed before Miss Stone and Mrs. Tsilka, with the baby Elencha, born during the captivity, were left under cover of the night three miles outside the city of Strumnitza, into which they were brought early on a Sunday morning, to be welcomed and cared for by friends.

A Stormy Field

Race hatreds and the spirit of political rebellion grew fiercer. The Russian consul was shot at Monastir, the center of revolutionary disorder, and though the missionaries suffered no personal violence, the mission, like all else in the land, seemed to be resting on the crater of a volcano. The possibility of touring in Macedonia was greatly reduced. Organized bands patrolled the country, and wherever the missionaries went they saw the signs of murder and heard the stories of feuds between Greek and Turk and Bulgarian. In response to calls for relief for those who had been left without home, food, or clothing, funds for that purpose were forwarded from this country through the generous leadership of the *Christian Herald* and distributed by the missionaries. At Salonica and Monastir much time was given to the distribution of this relief.

Notwithstanding all the confusion and distraction of mind which such scenes involved, the work of the mission was

maintained and in some ways strengthened during these years. Especially in the lines of education and publication the field was open. The institutions at Samokov increased their equipment and multiplied their efficiency. New educational undertakings, like Miss Clark's famous kindergarten at Sofia, and the Agricultural and Theological Institute founded by Dr. House at Salonica, the latter soon to be developed into an independent institution, with its board of American trustees and supporters, widened the service of the mission to the youth of all races. Churches grew stronger in outward as in inner life. The church at Philippopolis in 1900 erected a substantial and attractive stone edifice, symbol of the influence which it was coming to exert in the city. The call for better trained preachers and teachers was everywhere being heard.

The Albanians, who had been reached somewhat by colporters going out from Monastir, now had an organized church at Kortcha, with a native pastor, Mr. Sinas, who had translated the Scriptures into the Albanian language. The eagerness of many of the leaders of the race to secure missionaries, though rather a patriotic than a religious aspiration, was significant. An Albanian *bey* went so far as to offer, in 1899, the free use of a room in his house for a school if the mission would furnish a Christian teacher. Thence came the only school for girls in the country in which the vernacular was used, and the sole missionary school for Albanian boys was also planted in Kortcha. The girls' boarding-school, conducted by Miss Kyrias, herself an Albanian and a graduate of the American College for Girls at Constantinople, at once made a place for itself, with five boarders the first year, and all its teachers Albanians.

An Empire of Misery

Still injustice and oppression bore down on the wretched peoples of Turkey until there was no basis either of peace or prosperity upon which to build. The exodus to America was constant, and from the Balkan country as well as from Eastern Turkey. Taxes became heavier

and government troops forced them from the people till they were stripped of their small possessions; when there was no longer money to be got from them, their household and farm utensils were taken and even bedding and necessary furniture. Fear of the Turk was universal, and no Armenian dared tell his troubles save in deepest secrecy to some trusted missionary.

Again the influence of the missionaries increased amid the general misery. Their grit and devotion called forth the admiration even of those who had little interest in their work. Many thought they would withdraw after the massacres of 1895 and were correspondingly impressed by their staying. Two Turks, discussing the advisability of burning certain mission premises in Eastern Turkey, were overheard to say: "Burn every building they possess and they will not leave the country. They are here to stay."

The Educational Advance

There could now be reported 370 common schools in the empire, forty-four high schools, eight colleges, one normal school, and five divinity schools, with over 21,000 studying in all these institutions. In Western Turkey the Bithynia High School, which a few years before had erected large and supposedly ample buildings, was now planning for another. Anatolia College at Marsovan was filled to overflowing; its tuition fees had grown from $3000 in 1897 to $13,000 in 1907. And the growth of the college was as marked in influence as in numbers. Within the same period twenty per cent of the graduates had become preachers and thirty-three per cent teachers. Euphrates College at Harpoot, the only institution of its grade for more than 3,000,000 people, was a veritable lighthouse amid dark and stormy waters. The International College at Smyrna was formally organized in 1901–02. St. Paul's Institute, transferred in 1904 from independent control to the care of the Board, became one of its higher institutions.

Most of the educational work so far was perforce for the

Armenians, though a few Syrians and Jacobites were in the schools. At Mardin, in Eastern Turkey, however, where Arabic was the common language, there were few Armenians. A considerable leaven of other races now brought great joy to the missionaries, who felt that the work of the past was proving itself in the winning of confidence and attention from those who so far had held aloof. At Smyrna the missionaries were giving increasing attention to the Greeks. At Constantinople, during 1903, five services were maintained every Sunday in different parts of the city for Armenians and three for Greek Evangelicals, with one service in Turkish. The evangelical Greeks of Salonica had shown a desire to come under the European Turkey Mission, though no funds were available to aid in so important a venture. The association of Gregorians with the Evangelicals became still more marked in many places, especially in Central Turkey. Children of Gregorians and Greeks were sitting side by side in the schools at most of the stations, and different races mingled in the colleges.

A Broadening Constituency

Sweeping revivals of religion appeared at several centers of this mission, one at Oorfa being the first in its history, and marked a new starting-point in church life. The effect of these revivals, as indeed the strength of all mission work now, was not to be measured by the number of converts or the mere size of the evangelical communities. For results were felt in the Gregorian Church as markedly as in the Evangelical. In the college at Aintab, for example, where, in 1903, every member of the senior class confessed Christ, there were many Gregorians among the converts and the line between them and the Evangelicals was in the college circle scarcely regarded.

The work of these missions, so fast outgrowing the supply of men and money which the Board could provide, was now helped by the bringing to it of other resources. The medical department was often able to maintain itself or to elicit gifts

from new quarters. At Mardin the receipts from patients covered the expense, not only of the dispensary, but of the hospital. A new hospital at Van was secured by the income from private practise. Of seventeen stations in Turkey, nine had missionary physicians in 1906, with well-constructed hospitals planned or already provided. Loyal Armenians, particularly some who had prospered in America, rendered generous aid. One donated a hospital to Diarbekir; another gave a gymnasium to Euphrates College as well as a school building in Arabkir for Armenian girls. Many of these Armenians were debarred from returning personally to help their own people; indeed, the exodus to America continued; in a single day of 1907 forty persons left Harpoot for the United States.

Contributory Forces

As a result of interest roused in Germany by the relief work of its representatives after the massacres, a carefully drawn agreement was made in 1906, by which the Deutsche Hülfsbund began to cooperate with the Board in evangelistic and medical work in some parts of Eastern and Central Turkey.

In 1906 the Turkish government at last made important concessions affecting the property rights of American citizens in the land. The "most favored nation" clause of the treaties was now made operative for the United States; under pressure the same privileges were secured for American citizens and institutions in Turkey as had been granted to those of the other great powers, and to the immense relief and encouragement of the missionaries. It was now possible to erect and own buildings and to escape a multitude of petty annoyances, not only from local officials, but from those higher in office, in the developing of mission plants and enterprises. The new conditions were affirmed in an *irade* from the sultan, ordering the execution of the decision in detail in all American establishments and institutions.

Political Rights Gained

GLIMPSES OF MEDICAL ESTABLISHMENTS IN TURKEY

1 HOSPITAL AT AINTAB
2 IN THE BABIES' WARD, AINTAB
3 DISPENSARY PATIENTS AT TALAS
4 HOSPITAL AND OUT-PATIENTS, SIVAS
5 IN THE OPERATING ROOM, HARPOOT
6 NATIVE NURSES AT MARSOVAN

Then came an immeasurably greater blessing. On July 24, 1908, the sultan suddenly announced the restoration of the constitution of 1876, which meant full civil and religious liberty and parliamentary government. At first the people were stunned; when they began to shout the new words of liberty they hardly knew how to frame them or what they meant. But every quarter of the empire, European and Asiatic, broke forth into celebrations; in streets and squares, in mosques and churches, with addresses by Mohammedan and Christian speakers to audiences of all races. It seemed as if the people might become delirious with joy. Even one of the older missionaries wrote, "If I had boarded a comet and were riding on the cowcatcher around the periphery of the solar system, I could hardly be in more of a whirl than I am with the rush of events."

The Swift and Silent Revolution

Though so sudden and amazing to multitudes, by some the event had been long anticipated. The Young Turk party had been for years patiently laying plans; by the compulsion of its leaders, officers of the imperial army who had the Balkan soldiery behind them, the sultan was forced to make and then to carry out his new decree. But long before the parliament convened in November the nation enjoyed the fruits of the new era. The awful sense of repression and fear was gone. Censorship was removed from the press, which single fact transformed Turkey into a new land where free speech was possible. Barriers between races and religions were for a time entirely broken over. Masses were celebrated in Armenian churches for Mohammedans who had fallen in the cause of liberty, while honors were paid by Moslems to Armenian dead as martyrs dying for their country. Bands of revolutionaries came in from their fastnesses to swell the joyous crowds in the streets and cafés of the cities; political prisoners were released from bondage. Compulsory education was now enjoined, if not at once enforced; courts were required to become impartial tribunals; a fair system of taxes

was promised. The wondering nation looked on with new eyes of hope.

The Mission's Part

To say that this revolution was altogether the result of missionary effort would be absurd; to leave out the mission's part in it would be as unwarranted. Enver Bey, foremost in the Young Turk party, in the course of a conversation with Mr. MacLachlan at Smyrna, warmly commended the service of Americans and American institutions to Turkey, and declared that they had encouraged and inspired his associates and himself in undertaking the movement for reform. Turkish officials congratulated the Armenians upon their greater ability to understand and appropriate the blessings of a free constitutional government because of what they had learned from the missionaries.

And this was as true on one side of the Bosphorus as the other. When the jubilee of evangelical work in European Turkey was celebrated in Sofia in August, 1908, the review of the history showed unmistakably that the influence of the mission on the development of the Bulgarian people had been strong and formative. Careful as were the missionaries not to abet their pupils in revolutionary acts, they could not but sympathize with the Bulgarians in their struggle against the Greek hierarchy. By reviving and uplifting the national literature, and by scattering the Bible and the *Zornitza* over the land, they sowed broadcast the seeds of a rich harvest, while in their schools they prepared many for leadership in the coming time.

Entering Albania

The pleadings of Albanians for missionary teachers in the earlier years has been noted. In 1905 they were made more emphatic when an Albanian *bey* appeared at the Board rooms in Boston, saying that he had come to present in behalf of his people a request for missionaries. Regardless of the Board's declared inability to add a new mission to its financial load, disallowing any difficulty in the establishment of definitely Christian schools among

his people because of Moslem allegiance, he declared his appeal could not be denied; if refused now, it should be repeated. Such a plea was not to be forgotten even if it could not be granted, and when, in 1907, two American ladies offered to furnish funds to found and sustain for five years a mission to the Albanians, the offer was joyfully accepted and the mission begun.

The first missionaries, Rev. and Mrs. P. B. Kennedy, sailed in that year and, after being detained for three months at Salonica by the Turkish government, were at last allowed to go in to Kortcha, where work had already been begun through Miss Kyrias' girls' school and Mr. Tsilka's evangelistic labors. They were thus on the ground when the revolution opened to them, as to all missionaries in Turkey, the freedom of the land. The Ericksons, following a year later, were at once given passports without question. Though meeting with some prejudice and suspicion, and even being driven out from Tirana, where they first located, they found a welcome and a field in the important city of Elbasan, which thus became the new station among the eager and promising Albanians.

The effect of this revolution was to put upon the Board new responsibilities, and to open to it unprecedented opportunities.

A New Challenge

At once all schools, higher and lower, became crowded, Mohammedan youth pressing in with the Armenian. A high Turkish official, speaking to a throng of Armenians on the steps of Euphrates College, at Harpoot, said: "Hitherto only the Armenians have been able to avail themselves of the privileges of this college. We Turks have been forbidden to send our children here. That is all changed now and we will share with you in the enjoyment of what this institution offers to all who come within its doors." New governors even sought advice and help of missionaries and of Armenian leaders in political and educational matters.

At the first general congress ever held by the Albanians in Monastir, November, 1908, and which was called to decide upon an alphabet for their language, the two Albanians repre-

senting the Board in that field, Messrs. Kyrias and Tsilka, were influential members, and the alphabet selected was one which missionaries had helped to create. Conditions varied much with the character of the officials and the temper of different localities, but all over the empire there was a new spirit and a new thrill of enthusiasm in mission work, and in all the affairs of the evangelical communities.

The Counter-Revolution

Whereupon, in April, 1909, appeared almost simultaneously at Constantinople and in the region of Adana and Tarsus in Central Turkey a sudden and terrifying reaction. At the capital it came as a revolt of the soldiers against their officers, in the attempt to overthrow the reform government and to set on foot the wholesale slaughter of Christians throughout the city. In Cilicia there was a succession of furious massacres, designed to exterminate the Armenians, and which did effect the slaughter of thousands, the wiping out of entire villages, the burning of churches, schools, and houses, and a wild flight into hiding of all who escaped sword and fire. It was soon evident that the two events were connected if they were not equally due to the wily and desperate sultan, who was making one supreme effort to recover his lost power, an effort which the Young Turk leaders fortunately stifled. An inciting cause of the attack in Cilicia was the anger and alarm of the Turks over the activity of some Armenian revolutionists.

The immediate concern of missionary interest in this counter-revolution was the tragedy on the plain of Cilicia. Adana was the center of the outbreak, where in the first slaughter two missionaries laid down their lives; one, Rev. D. Miner Rogers, just entering upon a service of great promise for the Board at Hadjin; the other a fellow worker of the Mennonite Church of America, who likewise happened to be in Adana at the time, in attendance upon the annual meeting of the Central Turkey Mission. Of the thirty-five churches connected with this mission a score lost their pastors, many of whom were on

their way to the annual meeting. One group of these travelers was consumed in the burning of the church at Osmaniyeh, where they had sought refuge. Besides these leaders perished some 30,000 Christians of all sects, comparatively few of the attacking Moslems being killed, as, except in the cities, they met with little opposition.

The slaughter was systematically extended. Armed bands took train to Tarsus to reproduce the scenes of Adana, afterward spreading out over the villages of the plain and far up on the Taurus range, in remorseless purpose to kill and destroy. In one village, of ninety families only four married men remained and not more than ten escaped in all; in many cases women and children were carried off for slaves.

In fierceness, though not in extent, this massacre surpassed that of 1895. The atrocity of the tortures devised, the utter disregard of promises, and the fanatic hate which even dashed to pieces infants snatched from their mothers' arms are almost incredible. While the massacres were confined within this comparatively small territory, the terror and disturbance spread through the interior and even beyond. At lonely Hadjin, in the mountains, five missionary women, without a man of their race to defend them, endured one long week of suspense until the siege was lifted that had held them in hourly peril. Afterward it was known that plans had been laid for massacres in many centers; and that they had all wonderfully failed.

Relief was undertaken in the cities even before the fires had cooled. On the day following the first massacre 22,000 people were fed in Adana alone. Competent committees were at once organized in which the missionaries were to the fore, and relief funds began to come in from all over the world. English and American warships, upon arriving, despatched their forces to help restore order and soon a systematic effort to meet the emergency was under way. The Turkish Parliament at once voted £30,000 and despatched its representatives to take control of the situation and execute justice. With

the first moment of opportunity the missionaries began to go out over the plain, searching for those whom they might comfort and help, and systematic tours of relief were undertaken by many of them. The British vice-consul, Major C. H. M. Doughty-Wylie, whose courage and prompt action brought the first voice of authority to stop the slaughter at Adana, expressed his appreciation of the missionaries' service in saying, "The personnel of the American mission has increased, if it were possible, their already high reputation; they work without ceasing."

Signs of Better Days

The months that have passed since these awful events have on the whole increased the courage and hopefulness of those who have been watching the progress of affairs in Turkey. The difficulties in the way of the Young Turk party, allowing them all honesty of purpose and desire, are enormous. Despite the fact that the Sheik ul Islam has declared that constitutional government is in accord with Moslem law and that Christians and Mohammedans are entitled to equal rights under the constitution, there are those who still think it doubtful whether the Turk can deal fairly or live friendly with those of other faiths. On the other hand, the uniform testimony in every part of Turkey is that a wonderful change is being wrought by the new régime. The new *vali* at Adana has commended himself to the missionaries there both by his words and actions. The execution of some fifty Mohammedans, many of them representative men, who were implicated in the massacres, has been a reassuring exhibition of Moslem justice. And all over the empire the leadership of the schools and higher institutions, the eagerness for their privileges which greater liberty has brought, and the signs of new life and purpose among all races, are to the missionaries a call to yet larger undertakings, with the promise of immensely larger results. It looks to the men on the Board's watch-towers in Turkey as though the morning had indeed come.

Chapter XXII

SOUTHERN ASIA

A Jubilee Indeed

In October, 1881, the Marathi Mission celebrated the rounding out of its first fifty years of organized life. There were now eight stations, seventy-six outstations, twenty-four churches, with numerous allied institutions and lines of work, of which the 1000 native Christians in attendance were the visible witness. The times encouraged some jubilation, inasmuch as there were now signs of a more general movement toward Christianity among the people. The Board's missionaries had been foremost in relief work during the famines of 1877–79, which afflicted west as well as south India. They were now reaping their reward in a new responsiveness to their message. The times of calamity have ever been harvest times on mission fields, as wretched peoples, realizing over against the powerlessness of their trusted gods the kindness of these ministers of a foreign religion, have come for help in the deeper needs of their hearts to those who have relieved their bodily distresses. Such an extraordinary movement toward Christianity was witnessed at the opening of this period both in the Marathi and Madura Missions, and to both, with the joy of large accessions, came an increase of task in making sincere and intelligent Christians out of impressed but undisciplined disciples. The progress in spiritual perception or even in moral aspiration was still slow. Many would listen, read if they were able, and forsake their idols; while the highest motives were not yet controlling. The burden of their thoughts was often for food and raiment; the desire for education was largely from worldly ambition. Even

so, the school became the doorway into a new life; it gave chance to waken and guide the higher purpose.

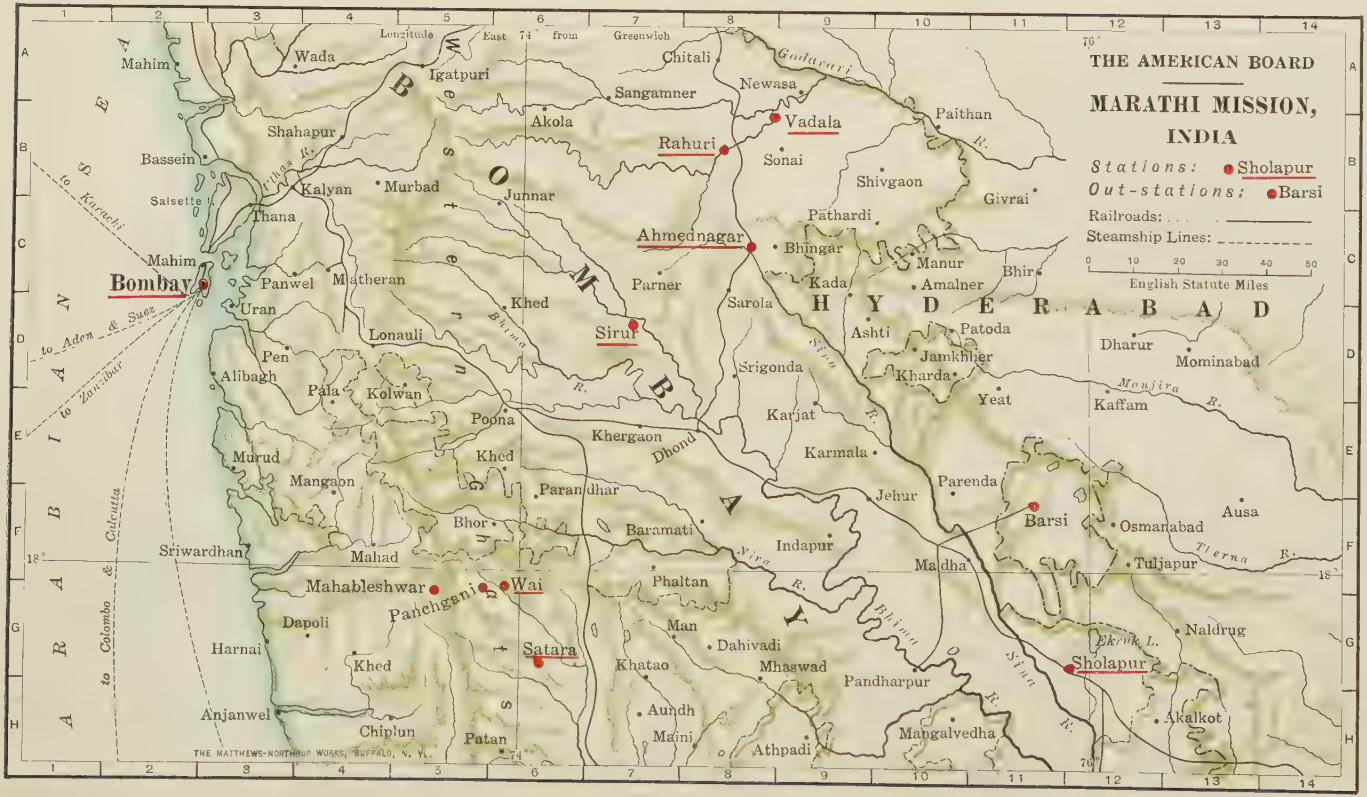
The time had now come for the educational department of the mission to be still further developed. The Indian government was cordial to the mission schools for the natives and disposed to render substantial aid to such as met its advancing standards of instruction. Considerable grants had been secured by many of the Board's schools, and so far without embarrassment; to hold them it was necessary to readjust and unify. By 1887 the high school at Ahmednagar, with its 290 students, mostly of high caste, was allied with the University of Bombay and duly opened as a college; at the same time, in the Madura Mission, the school at Pasumalai, with 253 pupils, was raised to the rank of a college, and a little later (1893) Jaffna College, with 135 students, was allied to the University of Calcutta and its standard raised.

The Era of Educational Growth

Tributary to these higher institutions were many secondary and boarding-schools, which drew to themselves the pick of the youth, not only from the stations, but from the whole field of the mission; underneath all were those local centers of light and impulse, the village schools.

Institutions for special training were devised to meet particular needs, such as normal schools for girls and English schools for Hindu boys, like the one founded and supported by Dr. Palmer at Madura, in which over 200 Hindu boys, among them many Brahmans, were studying the Bible daily. Industrial education was under way in the manual training school at Vadala and in the industrial school at Sirur. The latter received a grant of 6000 rupees ($2000) in 1888, and Lord Ray, governor of the Bombay presidency, wrote to Mr. Winsor that for this pioneer work he had "indisputable title to the support of the public and the friendly assistance of the government."

In the conduct of all these schools the missionaries rejoiced


THE AMERICAN BOARD
MARATHI MISSION,
INDIA
Stations: Sholapur
Out-stations: Barsi
Railroads:
Steamship Lines:
0 10 20 30 40 50
English Statute Miles
Longitude East 74° from Greenwich
Bombay
Mahim
Wada
Igatpuri
Chitali
Godavari R.
Newasa
Sangamner
Akola
Vadala
Paithan
Rahuri
Sonai
Shahapur
Bassein
Kalyan
Murbad
Junnar
Shivgaon
Givrai
Salsette I.
Thana
Pathardi
Ahmednagar
Bhingar
Manur
Bhir
Panwel
Matheran
Parner
Kada
Amalner
Uran
Khed
Sarola
Bhima R.
Sirur
Ashti
Patoda
Lonauli
Pen
Srigonda
Jamkhher
Dharur
Mominabad
Alibagh
Pala
Kolwan
Kharda
Yeat
Manjira R.
Kaffam
Poona
Karjat
Khergaon
Dhond
Murud
Karmala
Mangaon
Parandhar
Jehur
Parenda
Barsi
Ausa
Bhor
Baramati
Osmanabad
Sriwardhan
Mahad
Indapur
Tuljapur
Mahableshwar
Wai
Phaltan
Madha
Panchgani
Dapoli
Man
Naldrug
Harnai
Satara
Dahivadi
Ekruk L.
Khed
Khatao
Mhaswad
Sholapur
Pandharpur
Anjanwel
Aundh
Akalkot
Chiplun
Maini
Mangalvedha
Patan
Athpadi
THE MATTHEWS-NORTHRUP WORKS, BUFFALO, N. Y.
to Karachi
to Aden & Suez
to Zanzibar
to Colombo & Calcutta
ARABIAN SEA
BOMBAY
HYDERABAD

to feel that they were maintaining an evangelistic agency of the most enduring type. A missionary from India, visiting his brethren in Ceylon, declared, "I think that in Jaffna you will Christianize the people through your schools."

Religious Development of the Fields

The presence of these educational institutions in the great centers compelled attention; the quiet but leavening influence upon Indian life of their graduates and of the Christians trained in the churches was overcoming prejudice, while the service of the missionaries to the lowliest in the land won the approval of leading Brahmans and of local officials. Way was opened for private interviews and even public addresses, stimulating thought on Christianity and civilization. The message of such Christian teachers as Dr. J. Henry Barrows and President Charles Cuthbert Hall broke down barriers and increased the zeal and aspiration of the native church, while in Ceylon before the close of the century all the eighteen churches had become self-supporting, except the two youngest, and all but two had ordained pastors. In the Marathi field, notwithstanding its poverty, more rapid progress was being made toward self-support.

New lines of religious expression and culture were being devised. The Christian Endeavor Society proved most congenial to Indian soil and developed the evangelistic spirit. The tone of many churches was altogether changed by it, and the missionaries rejoiced to find that the idea of working for others was coming to be recognized in native Christianity. In the Madura district and, indeed, beyond it, Dr. John P. Jones was a leader in promoting this new agency; at one time president of the Society for India, it was in part for his service to the empire in this way that he received a medal from the Crown. In Madura, also, the Pasumalai Press was putting forth a semi-monthly Tamil newspaper, the *True News*, which Dr. George T. Washburn founded in 1870 and edited for twenty-six years, turning it over to the mission in 1896, together

with the printing establishment he had acquired. The Madura Evangelical Society and the Widows' Aid Society indicate other new lines of Christian service. In the Marathi Mission the Chapin Home in 1885 opened its doors to Hindu women driven forth from their homes as they became Christians, and to those who wished to prepare for self-support.

Other undertakings indicate the enlargement of the time. A Young Men's Home, begun by Dr. Abbott, was at once successful as a Christian domicile for young men exposed to the pitfalls of Bombay as they came to the city for employment; a native Indian Christian, Dr. Keskar, established at Sholapur a leper asylum that became a shining example to the amazed Hindus. Though the victims of that loathsome disease could not be cured, it was found that much might be done to mitigate their suffering, employ and divert their minds, and comfort their hearts through the knowledge of Him who had shown himself the Saviour also of the lepers. The work of Bible women was everywhere pressed as of prime value, perhaps receiving special emphasis in Ceylon.

Famine and Plague Again

The plague broke out again in Bombay in 1897 and soon spread to the mainland, where famine already was rife. So virulent and sweeping became this scourge that stern measures were required. Riots broke out in Bombay; business was for a time paralyzed. Schools at Ahmednagar, Sholapur, and elsewhere were closed and the pupils sent outside to segregation camps. The strain on the missionaries' strength and sympathies was intense; yet few cases of plague appeared in mission compounds and no lives were there lost. The natives wonderingly said, "Did your God give you a charmed life that you dare to walk our plague-stricken streets?"

Three years of plague culminated in 1900 in a year of yet more terrible famine. Relief funds of $121,000, raised by the *Congregationalist* and the *Advance*, were distributed by the missionaries; it was for them a year of unprecedented care,

but also of opportunity; a committee in India dispensed over $200,000 sent from the *Christian Herald* relief fund. As a recognition of his service as secretary of this committee, Dr. R. A. Hume received in 1900 the gold medal of the Kaisar-i-hind order. This same year, at the request of the collector of Ahmednagar, Dr. Ballantine went to that city and stayed there for four months, fighting the plague which had broken out again. The amount and character of the services thus rendered to the stricken region are almost beyond calculation. The records show that the American mission took in more than 2845 orphans; distributed seed rice to 24,665 small farmers; assisted 1650 others to obtain oxen to plow their land. Unfortunately the financial stringency of the American Board just then compelled a reduction in appropriations, adding seriously to the burden of the time.

As in periods of catastrophe before, the progress of Christianity was now marked. It was a time to be careful in testing new converts and in preparation for church membership. Yet, with all caution in this matter, during the year 1900 more than three times as many persons united with the churches of the Marathi Mission as had been received in any preceding year. At the same time there was evident a mass movement toward Christianity among the out-caste Mangs. Their religion was mainly worship of the cholera goddess, inspired by deadly fear. In 1901 the Mangs of 175 villages in the Vadala district sent in a petition that they be received into the Christian Church. This did not mean that they were all Christian at heart, or even understood the meaning of the word "Christian"; but it did mean that a multitude of people felt the insufficiency of their own religion and, caught by a vision of something better, were groping after it.

A legacy from plague and famine in the Marathi field was a host of orphans; 3299 of them could be counted in 1902 as having come under the care of the missionaries, a heavy tax on already overburdened men and women. The founding of

orphans' homes naturally led to a development of industrial training; out of that grew a new appreciation of the value of such education to India and of the possibility of making it largely self-supporting. Various trades were taught, as at Sholapur, where Mr. Gates formed classes in carpentry, simple masonry, and rug and lace weaving. Similar lines of work were undertaken at Ahmednagar, where there was organized, under the care of Rev. James Smith, the School of Industrial Arts, named from its founder, Sir D. M. Petit, a Hindu baronet. Asked what was made in the workshops of this school with more than 250 scholars, Mr. Smith replied, "Men"; the goods sold were the by-products. At the Industrial Exhibition held at Madras this school, exhibiting in three departments, took the prize in each. New forms of industrial help were devised, as in the case of Mrs. Abbott's industries for widows in Bombay, and particularly through Mr. Churchill's distinguished service, not only as superintendent of these lines, but in inventing new machines. His improved hand loom, usable in the homes of the people, has brought him high praise from the government and a prophecy that this machine will be to India what the spinning-jenny has been to America.

Enlarging Industrial Work

The quickened growth of the churches and the increasing calls for Christian teaching from all parts of these fields brought new and heavier responsibilities on the missionary and native leaders. In southern India the need of preachers and teachers was far greater than could be met. The policy of the Madura Mission to receive as adherents all who turned from Hinduism and applied for Christian teaching had brought into the mission's care many village congregations composed of clusters of families not yet ready to be organized into a church. To them were assigned catechists to teach the children, to visit and preach in surrounding villages, and on Sundays and in the mid-week meetings to lead the village congregation in its worship.

Christian Culture

The task of Christian training under such conditions is very great: the most primary things are to be taught, the elements of morality as well as religion gone over again and again, year in and year out. The simple and oftentimes inexperienced catechist has to be physician in sickness, spiritual adviser, judge, and defender. All desired results are not immediately secured, yet this is the way to instil Christianity into the life of the people. The amount of such work throughout the Madura Mission grew to be enormous. The field of evangelism, also, had become wide open and so, if possible, more appealing. In 1902 Mr. Eddy visited 1200 villages in various parts of the district, finding the people poor and ignorant indeed, yet remarkably responsive and faithful, and many of the native helpers, all things considered, doing splendid work. A Native Evangelical Society, which so early as 1846 sought to unite the Christians of the eight stations in supporting catechists among their countrymen, in 1885 renewed its purpose to undertake this work, besides providing for the support of pastors, and has since maintained a permanent itinerating agency to reach non-Christians, which visits different stations to work for limited periods. The students of the theological seminary at Pasumalai also make an annual tour with their instructors for the purpose of conducting evangelistic work while getting close to the life of the people.

In the Marathi Mission, also, the class of adherents to Christianity is clearly defined. Those who desire to become Christians, but have not yet been taught its simplest truths, are admitted to a covenant after the pattern of one long used in Madura, which pledges them to renounce the Hindu religious practises, to remain under regular Christian instruction, to observe the Sabbath as a day of worship, to make some contribution every week to a Christian church, to use all possible influence against early and irregular marriages, and to follow Christian customs with reference to burial of the dead. In this field, also, has evangelistic work developed in connection

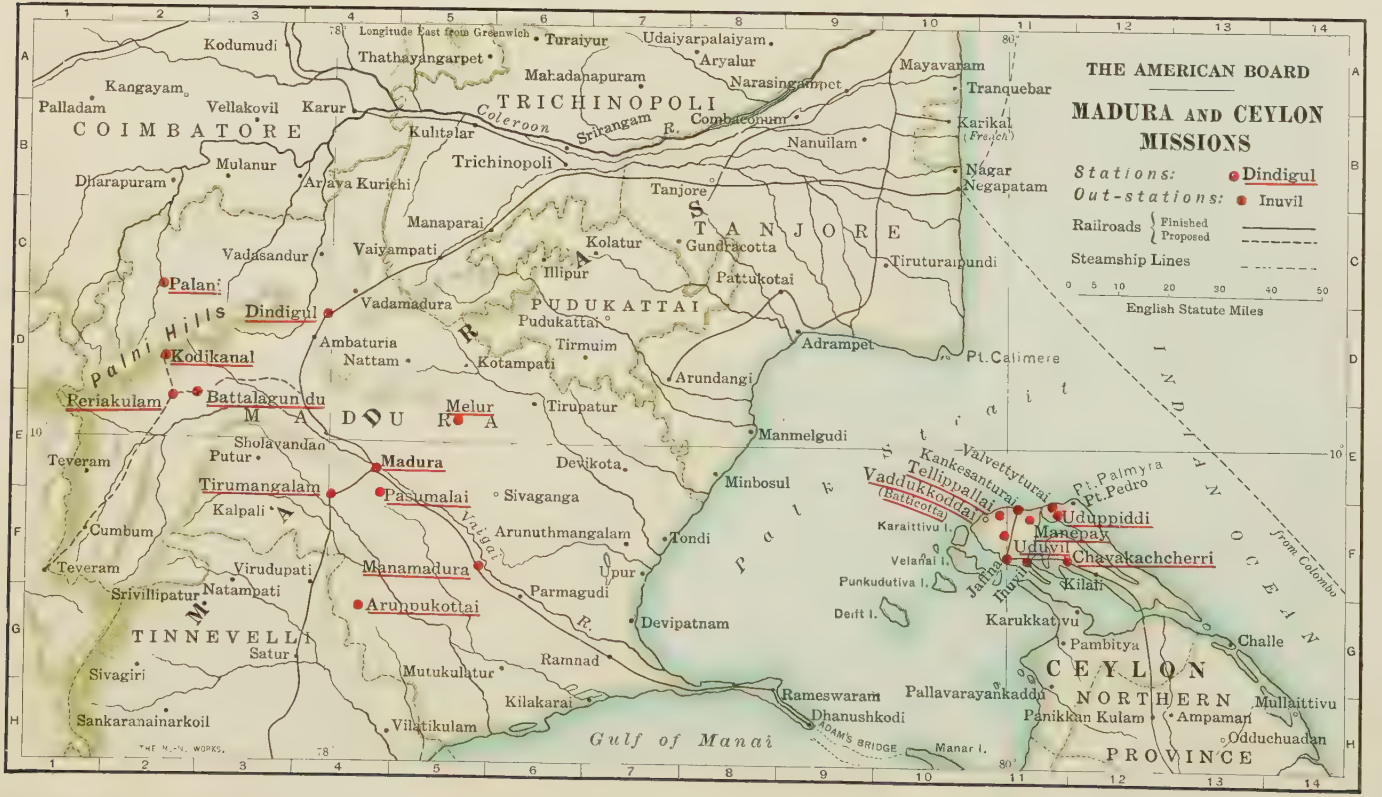
with the ministry in relief camps, in house to house visitation, street preaching, and the labors of more than 100 Bible women.

The compact mission in Ceylon is an example of intensive farming, having eighteen churches with more than 2000 members, four boarding-schools, 136 village schools, with more than 10,000 pupils, two hospitals, an industrial plant and printing establishment, native contributions amounting to more than $8000 — all of which suggests a well-tilled field. Evangelistic work here can now be carried on by the native churches, in some cases the supervision of missionaries being merely nominal.

The Deputation of 1902

Every station of these missions was visited in 1902 by a deputation, composed of Rev. J. F. Loba, D.D., Mr. William F. Whittemore, and Secretary Barton. Their careful survey emphasized the contrast between the years of beginning and the present era of results. In place of two unwelcome missionaries struggling to get a doubtful foothold in Bombay, the deputation looked upon three established missions, located in large and developed stations, and housed in commodious buildings, holding titles to all property, esteemed by government officials and favored with every privilege and grant which they could bestow, while respected and trusted by masses of the people, and winning more surely every year the regard of the higher classes of native society. As they went about Bombay, Ahmednagar, or Madura, or passed from one to another of the closely grouped stations in Ceylon, the deputation was profoundly impressed with the substantial quality of the work being done and the size, variety, and strength of the institutions through which it was wrought.

In every department of mission activity progress was now more rapid. Within the last few years in the Marathi Mission alone there had been great increase in church membership; nearly 1100 were added to the churches the year before the deputation's visit. New calls for missionary work were com-


THE AMERICAN BOARD
MADURA AND CEYLON MISSIONS
Stations: Dindigul
Out-stations: Inuvil
Railroads Finished Proposed
Steamship Lines
0 5 10 20 30 40 50
English Statute Miles
Longitude East from Greenwich
Kodumudi
Thathayangarpet
Turaiyur
Udaiyarpalaiyam
Aryalur
Mahadanapuram
Narasingampet
Mayavaram
Tranquebar
Kangayam
Palladam
Vellakovil
Karur
COIMBATORE
TRICHINOPOLI
Coleroon R.
Srirangam
Combaconum
Karikal (French)
Kulitalar
Nanuilam
Mulanur
Trichinopoli
Nagar
Negapatam
Dharapuram
Arava Kurichi
Tanjore
Manaparai
TANJORE
Vadasandur
Vaiyampati
Kolatur
Gundracotta
Tiruturaipundi
Illipur
Pattukotai
Palani
Dindigul
Vadamadura
PUDUKATTAI
Pudukattai
Palni Hills
Ambaturia
Tirmuim
Adrampet
Kodikanal
Nattam
Kotampati
Pt. Calimere
Arundangi
Periakulam
Battalagundu
MADURA
Melur
Tirupatur
Manmelgudi
Sholavandan
Teveram
Putur
Madura
Devikota
Minbosul
Tirumangalam
Pasumalai
Sivaganga
Kalpali
Cumbum
Arunuthmangalam
Tondi
Teveram
Virudupati
Manamadura
Upur
Srivillipatur
Natampati
Parmagudi
Aruppukottai
Devipatnam
TINNEVELLI
Satur
Ramnad
Sivagiri
Mutukulatur
Kilakarai
Rameswaram
Sankaranainarkoil
Vilatikulam
Dhanushkodi
ADAM'S BRIDGE
Manar I.
Gulf of Manai
Palk Strait
Valvettyturai
Kankesanturai
Tellippallai
Vaddukkoddai (Batticotta)
Pt. Palmyra
Pt. Pedro
Uduppiddi
Karaittivu I.
Manepay
Uduvil
Velanai I.
Chavakachcherri
Punkudutiva I.
Jaffna
Inuvil
Kilali
Delft I.
Karukkativu
Pambitya
Challe
CEYLON
Pallavarayankaddu
NORTHERN PROVINCE
Mullaittivu
Panikkan Kulam
Ampaman
Odduchuadan
INDIAN OCEAN
from Colombo
THE M.-N. WORKS.

ing from every quarter; the resources of the native agency were being pushed to the utmost. In Madura, in the field around the Aruppokottai station, there were no less than 120 separate villages in which Christians were to be found. The four pastors in that district were almost crushed with the responsibilities of their task. In the three fields missionaries were residing at twenty-five different centers, native Christians and other workers at more than 900 other places. Already there were more than 12,000 church members in the missions and over 30,000 who had broken with their old faiths to join the Christian communities. With the missionary force, comprising now nearly 100 men and women, were associated 1500 trained native workers. The principle of self-support, earnestly pressed in this mission, was now producing substantial and increasing results. By 1909 it could be reported that nine evangelists, several school teachers, and Bible women, besides all the pastors, were supported by native contributions, which amounted to 18,537 rupees, or over $6000.

A complete system of education was articulated, from the village schools, sometimes under a tree or in a thatched shed, to the college and professional school, besides other special institutions to meet local needs, in all making a list of educational agencies almost bewildering to the inspectors. Of evangelistic as well as educational benefit, these schools had come to be a social force also, opening new doors, breaking down barriers, and broadening the field of the mission. One boarding-school was visited in which pupils from eighteen different castes were enrolled, dwelling, eating, and studying together, an object lesson to the people of all that region. A fresh outbreak of caste prejudice in the Uduvil (Oodooville) Girls' School in Ceylon at this time was so well handled that it resulted in a real revival through which the school blessed the community. The confidence which the governments both of India and Ceylon felt in the mission schools was evidenced to the deputation by the fact that grants then being made to these schools

amounted to $26,000, far more than the Board itself was contributing toward their support. Indeed, the government grants and the fees of the pupils were now larger by some $8000 than the total appropriations of the Board for the general work of these three missions.

The important and expanding medical department was practically new in these later years. It was not until 1904 that an equipped hospital appeared in the Marathi Mission, though Dr. Norris at Bombay and Dr. Ballantine at Rahuri had conducted medical work without hospitals in the '70s, and Dr. Julia Bissell had made the beginnings of a hospital for women at Ahmednagar in 1894. In Madura and Ceylon the medical work had developed earlier, until they had large and finely equipped hospitals; the Albert Victor, at Madura, under Dr. Van Allen, being a gift outright from wealthy Hindus, several of whom had been his patients, while the McLeod Hospital for Women and Children at Inuvil, Ceylon, came through funds raised by the Misses Leitch from friends in England and America.

The task of preparing and publishing vernacular Christian literature was stimulated by a growing demand for it; the several mission papers, the *Dnyanodaya* and the *Balbodhmewa*, or children's paper, in the Marathi field; the *True News* and *Joyful News* in Madura, and the *Christian Witness* in Ceylon, all had an assured and widening circulation throughout their fields; the output of the press was more than doubled in one year. The Marathi Mission now maintained no press, but made use of local publishing houses, but the printing plant in Ceylon, which had been turned over to private hands, was taken over again by the mission and attached to the industrial department of the Tellippallai (Tillipalli) school.

The first decade of the twentieth century has witnessed some new and significant movements in Indian life and thought, supposed to betoken the stir of a national feeling. The mixture of races in India and the division of her people into sects and

castes make it difficult to define any clear national spirit, though the formation and continuance of an Indian National Congress point in that direction. Criticisms of the British government and a demand for the control of India by her people may easily be explained and discounted, but the fact remains that there is a real if sometimes vague unrest among the more ambitious and educated classes which in some quarters seems to be also sifting down among the masses. It makes this a serious though hopeful time for India, and one that calls for alertness and adaptation on the part of all missionary workers and the native church. Such adaptation is being earnestly sought. Already this stir of new life is bringing gains to missionary work. New mass movements toward Christianity are occurring, as among the large and substantial farming class in the Marathi Mission and from the robber caste in other sections. Proud Brahmans are reading the Bible and studying with confessed admiration the life of Christ. Educated Hindus actually have formed themselves into societies to carry out social and moral reforms that they admit are based on Christian teaching. Missionary institutions are openly admired, patronized, and even imitated. In that most bigoted and sacred city of Wai a missionary of the American Board has been associated with Brahmans both as counselor and administrator of public affairs. There are indications that a host of India's higher classes are being more or less consciously influenced by the Christian gospel. The new spirit brings its own difficulties. Sometimes it fosters insubordinate and revolutionary temper among students; again, reaction to the ancient faith and worship is adjudged to be a part of patriotism. Yet on the whole the unrest of the time in India (it is not much felt in Ceylon) is an advantage to the missionary as giving him a new approach.

The Stir of a New India

The government continues to help the cultural and humanitarian features of missionary work, but it has raised the standard of requirements for the higher institutions of learning

and has conditioned its grants thereupon; schools and colleges of the missions have been forced to seek enlarged equipment and to make some readjustments. In Madura the college has been moved from Pasumalai into the city of Madura, where a new and adequate building has been erected, and where it greatly needs now a fuller support that it may meet the requirements of a college of its grade. High schools, normal schools, and industrial departments, together with the theological school, remain at Pasumalai, the high school in Madura being kept as directly tributary to the college. Jaffna College has made an advance in grade with the change of its affiliation from Calcutta University to the University of Madras.

Under the spur of the new times a fresh aggressiveness has come both to the mission and the native church. New edifices, like the First Church in Bombay and the First in Ahmednagar, open more inviting doors to the passers-by in those cities. Missionaries, native pastors, and Christian leaders are showing new determination to get outside their localities and communities and to evangelize their entire fields. The villages are being sought with new enthusiasm, and stereopticon and song services are being used throughout this field to win audiences and to sow the seed of the gospel.

To give greater efficiency to the churches and to stimulate their pastors and members to assume more responsibility, the Madura Mission has within a year undertaken such a reshaping of church polity as combines more closely, under direction of the District Conference, the church life of the mission. Similar proposals are now made for the Marathi Mission, in the hope that more and more the oversight and direction of church life and extension shall pass from the missionaries to the native church.

A notable sign of the times, in harmony with what is transpiring in other mission fields, are various attempts at union or cooperation between missionary societies and the native churches on their fields. The United Church of South India

MADURA'S DIAMOND JUBILEE

THE MARCH OF THE BANNERS OF THE YEARS — THE NEW COLLEGE BUILDING — A SECTION OF THE ANNIVERSARY COMPANY

has recently been formed by the union of Presbyterian and Congregational churches, the latter representing the missions of the London Missionary Society and the American Board. It seeks to embody the best features which the experience of the several missions has devised. This Union, one of the earliest and most significant of all the attempts at such combination, is setting an example to others, and is regarded as only a beginning; yet in 1908 it included 108 churches, with 140,000 Christians. A union theological college is now assured at Bangalore, in which the London Missionary Society, the United Free Church of Scotland, the English Wesleyans, and the Dutch Reformed missions are to join, and in which it is expected that the Board's Madura Mission will cooperate as fast as arrangements can be made. A scheme of federation is also proposed in the region of the Marathi Mission, where consolidation does not yet seem feasible. In Ceylon, without organic union, the missionary societies at work in the neighborhood of Jaffna have joined in evangelistic services, and the Church Missionary Society and the Wesleyans, with the American Board mission forces, are seeking with utmost goodwill and comity to serve all the interests of their close-lying fields.

Chapter XXIII

SOUTHERN AND CENTRAL AFRICA

A Jubilee Survey

The Zulu Mission celebrated its jubilee in 1885. The contrast with 1835 was sufficiently impressive. That wild land of Natal which the pioneers entered was now a prosperous English colony. Even so far inland as the capital, Pietermaritzburg, were all the accompaniments of civilization: churches, schools, banks, and libraries. Yet the pressing in to the colony not only of foreigners, but of Zulus from other districts, made the number of heathen in Natal even greater than in the earlier years, and there were still broad stretches of almost unmitigated paganism. On the field the American Board had developed its Zulu Mission into a force of twenty-six men and women, located at nine stations, in a territory stretching 150 miles from north to south, with no station more than fifty miles from the sea, and most of them within ten or twelve miles of the coast. The labors of this missionary force, with the 137 native leaders, were directed upon fifteen churches, with nearly 800 members; forty-one common schools and four schools of higher grade, in which, all told, there were nearly 2000 under instruction.

Two recent events added to the rejoicing at this jubilee: one was the exploration of a new field to the north, where the native churches and native leaders were preparing to undertake the evangelization of their own people. The other inspiring event was the publication in 1883 of the complete Zulu Bible, a task to which Mr. Pixley had devoted great labor, both in the translation of the books of the Old Testament and the revision of the whole. Thus was given to the Zulu-speaking people the entire Bible within fifty years from the

THE AMERICAN BOARD
SOUTH AFRICAN MISSION
ZULU and RHODESIAN BRANCHES
Stations: Umzumbe
Out-stations: Mapumulo
Railroads:
Cable Lines:
Steamship Lines:
0 50 100 150
English Statute Miles
Longitude 32° East from Greenwich
SOUTHERN RHODESIA
TRANSVAAL
ORANGE RIVER COLONY
BASUTO LAND
CAPE COLONY
NATAL
ZULU LAND
SWAZI LAND
MOZAMBIQUE
PORTUGUESE EAST AFRICA
INDIAN OCEAN
TROPIC OF CAPRICORN
Salisbury
New Umtali
Massikessi
Chimoio
Makaia
Mapanda
UMTALI
Gwelo
Inyati
Selukwe
Gutus
Malindela
Zimuto
Pamoshano
Melsetter
Beira
Sofala
Bulawayo
Victoria
Morgenster
Harawi
Chikore
Panga
Ft. Belingwe
Zimbabye (ruins)
Mt. Silinda
Chibababa's Kraal
Thibi
Ishingewekwe
Capo Capo
Sicuco
Nicholson
Nuaneti
Impanda
Mapeia
Salungu
Maklutsi
Tuli
Matibis
Inkoman
Simba
Sikonjane
Imboban
Middledrift
Gertrugsberg
Shahalate
Matelri
Tsenan
Zoutpans Berg
Georgenholtz
Blauberg
Elim
Tsakoma
Kouroulene
Mazibi
Shikwela
Malitzi
Kreuzburg
Inguana
Mashishi
Pietersburg
Mokumba
Waterberg
Makapaanaspoort
Olifants
Kambane
Inhambane
Maganges
Nuatsu
Pilgrims Rest
Neu Halle
Lydenburg
Chikhoumbane
Pretoria
Belfast
Delagoa Bay
Middelburg
Barberton
Engonyameni
Lourenco Marques
Johannesburg
Bethal
Embabaan
Heidelberg
Ermelo
Standerton
Piet Retief
Umtambeka
Grootvlei
Volksrust
Ingwawoma
Wakkerstroom
Pongola
Utrecht
Ekulangeni
Newcastle
Vryheid
Harrismith
Bethlehem
Dundee
Somkele
Ladysmith
Eshowe
Springfield
Weenen
Greytown
Umsunduze
Mapumulo
Noodsberg
Tugela R.
Impolweni
Pietermaritzburg
Esidumbini
Grootville (Jimvati)
Lindley (Inanda)
Riverside
Table Mt.
Itafamasi
Durban
Clydesdale
Adams (Amanzimtoti)
Imfume
Umtwalume
Ifafa
Umzumbe
North Shepstone
Zambesi R.
R. Shangani
R. Sabi
R. Busi
R. Nuanetzi
R. Bubye
R. Shashi
R. Sabi
R. Limpopo
R. Magalaqueen
R. Letaba
R. Olifants
R. Shengani
R. Komati
R. Usutu
THE M.-N WORKS

time the missionaries found them, naked and savage, with an unwritten language so intricate that it was long before they could find any key to it.

A Slow Transformation

Yet the situation was not unqualifiedly joyous even in the days of jubilee. There were genuine Christian lives and homes at all the stations, yet, with bright exceptions, the tone of life was low even on the Mission Reserves. There was little family government, little self-control, no strong moral sense, and a prevailing and disastrous belief in witchcraft. In some cases it seemed to the missionaries that the churches were hardly ready yet for pastors, not knowing or appreciating what were their duties, and so what should be their qualifications, regarding the pastor more as a petty chief than as a religious teacher. The Zulus, too, were naturally indolent; their wants were easily satisfied, and they could contemplate with little concern the incoming of Indian coolies to take the place of their own people who did not like to work.

The colonial government, which had formed its native code years before, when it was not strong enough to enforce English law, still dealt with the Zulus by laws which legalized many practises most adverse to the gospel. Some of the native chiefs, alarmed lest Christianity should weaken their power, were now actively working against the mission, and Roman Catholic priests renewed their opposition as they saw the Protestants winning a measure of success. To add to the burden, to the mission's cry for reenforcement the answer came from America, "Retrench!"

Fresh Plans and Efforts

Yet the missionaries never wavered. The results achieved at Lovedale by Dr. Stewart stimulated the desire to attempt more in education, particularly in industrial lines. New buildings were somehow secured at Inanda and Umzumbe, and by 1895 these higher institutions, including the reopened Amanzimtoti Seminary, were providing larger facilities for training a new and more mobile

generation of Christian leaders. Such devotion and unwavering faith were bound to have their reward. At length came widespread and genuine revivals of religion; the one which visited five stations in 1892 marked the beginning of a new era. The membership of the churches had increased nearly threefold by 1900, while the force of native helpers had grown from 168 to 397. By 1894 the eighteen churches of the mission had attained full self-support and the Native Missionary Society, formed in 1860, was now taking full oversight of all the churches in its field and the provision of its ministry. The publication of a new Zulu hymn book and a reader, added to the current edition of the Scriptures, furnished the beginnings of Zulu literature and a stimulus for the aspirations of the people, while the opening of a mission to the far north and new and urgent calls from fields nearer by were also putting a helpful pressure upon the growing life of the Christian communities.

It was recognized by all that God had a far-reaching purpose to accomplish through this mission to the Zulus and that the time had come for advance. As natives were flocking by hundreds and thousands from all directions to such rising inland towns as Johannesburg, Pretoria, and Kimberley, these places became strategic points to occupy; the gospel, if preached there, would be carried to kraals and districts unreached by any other means. In 1894 Mr. Goodenough began work in Johannesburg, securing a little chapel as a location. The Zulus were delighted at having someone come to them who could speak their language; the opportunity was at once found to be needy and full of promise.

Other Signs of Growth

Other signs of growth and improvement were being manifested, such as increasing habits of industry stimulated by the expanding wants of the people, the impulse of the natives themselves to carry the gospel to points yet unreached, the diminishing need of foreign supervision in the mission, the better work of teachers as a result of more careful training in the higher schools, and the

opening of some new lines of work, like the home for native girls at Durban, and the dispensary, and small building used for hospital purposes at Amanzimtoti. Continued revivals, notably in 1897, produced some remarkable transformations in individual character and in the Christian zeal of the churches. It was apparent that the Zulu who had seemed so stolid, carnal, and indolent was at last awaking to a new sense of capacity and ambition. The missionaries remarked with delight characteristic signs of the times: a Zulu actually traveling afoot while his wife rode the horse he led; a troop from a mission school making a concert tour and finding appreciative native audiences; one mission school challenging another forty miles away to a match game of football. And there were more important indications of the same awakening. The Zulu was now becoming desirous of assuming responsibility and self-direction in church affairs, in educational matters, and in political life. Church councils, conferences, teachers' institutes, and political societies, all new things among the Zulus, were significant and hopeful facts.

Dangers of Independence

This growing spirit of self-reliance produced fresh perplexities and difficulties. As in other mission fields, so at last in Africa, the native Christians began to claim the right to manage their own institutions. The mission recognized with joy the new situation and prepared to meet it. Yet it was impossible to approve or to permit all the hasty schemes of independence which were then pressed and for which the people were clearly unprepared. A temporary alienation of some native leaders followed, and a body of natives, separating themselves from the mission churches, formed what they called the Zulu Congregational Church. The spirit of patience and conciliation shown by the missionaries soon overcame this hasty action; the separatist Church was shortly united again with the churches of the mission under the new name of the African Congregational Church, and mutual trust and good-will were restored.

In the meantime there had been much irritation growing out of the administration of the Reserves which, as has heretofore been said, were given to the American Board by the government in order that the mission "might have a fixed population to labor among, without let or hindrance." The missionaries were obliged to administer this trust by assigning parcels of land to individuals, thus involving themselves in collection of rents and in decisions as to the expenditure of amounts secured from taxes. As the years went on this duty entailed much labor and many perplexities, since the natives believed that the Reserves were given for their use and should be conducted as they individually desired. The friction became serious. The natives demanded that the land should be given them in severalty, a procedure which the government absolutely refused to permit.

As the mission greatly desired to be relieved from the responsibilities of this situation, in 1903 a plan was formed to turn over to the Natal government, under certain fixed conditions, the direct rule of the Mission Reserves. If the government officials had acted considerately under this plan serious trouble might have been avoided, but they failed to handle the matter tactfully. Rather, becoming alarmed at the growing spirit of independence, they began to coerce the natives. Exorbitant rents were charged, native ministers were denied the right to celebrate marriages, and it was declared that a white missionary must reside as superintendent wherever there was a native church. All this resulted badly and the people became still more apprehensive and dissatisfied, while the policy of the government grew more rigid.

What came to be called the Ethiopian Movement was at first nowhere disloyal or inciting to rebellion, but only an assertion of the desire on the part of the natives for larger liberties, responsibilities, and opportunities. At length, as friction increased, this uprising came to seem ominous, not only to officials, but to the watchful missionaries who were in the

delicate and difficult position of trying to mediate between two parties, with the contention of neither of whom they could altogether agree.

The Deputation's Findings

During the year 1903 the Board's first deputation to Africa visited all the stations of the South and East Central Missions. Mr. F. O. Winslow being unable to accept his appointment, this deputation had but two members, Secretary E. E. Strong and Sydney Strong, D.D. Happily Mrs. Sydney Strong was able to accompany the party and to contribute a quick appreciation, sympathy, and woman's tact. Her sudden sickness and death on the homeward voyage enrolled her name among those who have sacrificed their lives for the redemption of Africa.

As they journeyed from place to place, inspecting institutions and communities of the Zulu Mission, the deputation was impressed to find how thoroughly this missionary work was being wrought into the people's life. Self-supporting churches with native pastors were evangelizing each in its own vicinity; the schools, too, had native teachers and were included in the school system of the colony. The missionary spirit of the Zulu church was now very strong and was the best buttress against formal religion and a relapse into heathenism. Their gifts to home and foreign missions put to shame many American churches; the native contributions in the Zulu Mission in 1903, with only twenty-three organized churches and 4000 communicants, were about $8000.

Evangelism was easily developed among the Zulus; men took it for granted that they were to proclaim the gospel that had come to them. Every Sunday at Durban a large company of lay preachers went out to repeat to others what they had that day heard. Similar work was done elsewhere; bands of men and women after the church service would visit the kraals for many miles around. The evangelizing spirit of this people is well shown in the history of Engonyameni, near Delagoa Bay, where the gospel was carried somewhat later by natives

of the place who had been won to Christ at Pretoria, more than 100 miles away. These young men, on returning home, not only announced their conversion and preached the gospel to their people, but with their own hands built chapels until they had erected seven, which became centers of Christian teaching and fellowship. When Mr. Goodenough visited that region in 1905, after the work had been in progress some two or three years, he could hardly trust his eyes, declaring it the most marvelous bit of mission work he had seen in Africa. At the annual meeting of the native churches in 1907, held in Papala, north of the Tugela River, itself typical of the outreaching spirit of the Zulu churches, in response to an appeal from Engonyameni, three Natal preachers, all men of high ability, declared their willingness to go into that fever-infested district.

But the deputation's visit was not simply a joyous inspection of the mission's successes. There were still problems and difficulties concerning which counsel was desired. Some advance in the educational department was imperative if native leaders were to be provided for the expanding enterprise. The churches asked for decisions in regard to polygamy, ecclesiastical polity, and the mutual relations of the mission and the churches. And everywhere the perplexing subject of the Reserves was eagerly discussed. The government flatly refusing to permit the assignment of lands in freehold to the natives, a next best plan was proposed, and to this the people strenuously objected. The deputation and the mission came to be looked upon with some suspicion by the Zulus, because willing to accept conclusions which, though not by any means ideal, were regarded as the best that could be secured. But vigorous protests were made against the requirement that no mission work should be conducted except where a white missionary resided as superintendent, and against the debarring of native ministers from the rights and responsibilities of the pastoral office. It was impossible that the mission

should develop its work if these demands of the government were to be maintained.

If the deputation could not relieve all these troubles and perplexities, it could encourage with its sympathy the burdened missionaries and strengthen the loyalty of the native Christians. It transpired further that, by the courtesies and hospitalities of the time, acquaintance and regard for the mission and its work were increased among outsiders, and some high government officials were led to consider anew their relations to the mission board of a sister nation and its work in their land. More concrete results of these interviews and deliberations began to appear. Educational standards were soon after raised in the high school at Amanzimtoti and in the theological school of the mission, to which Messrs. Ransom and Taylor were assigned. The primary schools now began to receive government grants and a member of the mission was set apart for the general oversight of the educational work, his salary and traveling expenses being met by the government. The medical work of the mission was transferred from Amanzimtoti to Durban.

The Zulu Rebellion

In 1906 an armed rebellion was started, remote from any mission station and under a heathen chief. This wave of rebellion spread into one district, where it touched two or three of the Board's stations. Some non-Christians and a few church members in two stations became involved. The native pastors resisted the uprising manfully. When troops arrived to disperse the rebels it was reported to the governor that the whole population was in rebellion. So it was formally charged at London and announced in the Parliamentary Blue Book that in two of our large mission stations practically all the natives had joined the rebels in the field! The governor of the colony declared that the congregations were beyond control and endangered the government. Afterward these statements were fully disproved. In only two of the twenty-four churches was there

any disloyalty; not one of the twenty-four preachers was found wanting; all the male church members who joined the rebels could be counted on the fingers of two hands. Missionary work was really a support rather than a menace to the government in this native uprising. But for a time it further separated the mission and the Natal government, embittered the natives, and made harder the work. Two stations at Esidumbini and Noodsberg suffered losses and were involved in the sweeping denunciations. It required the missionaries' utmost courage and skill to hold things together, keep steadily at their appointed tasks, and wait for better times. Meanwhile the Board's expanded work on this side of the continent was made a more compact organization by the union of the Zulu and East African Missions, in 1906, as the Zulu and Rhodesian branches of the South African Mission.

The better situation hoped for was not long in coming. A new governor of Natal showed a friendly and conciliatory spirit toward both the natives and the mission. From the first, his utterances inspired confidence and produced a calmer feeling among the Zulus. One by one the more offensive laws were either annulled or relaxed, the Reserve tax being greatly reduced; the natives meanwhile were coming to a fairer attitude towards government control, admitting the justice of a tax if it were not excessive, and proving to the satisfaction of officials their loyal and law-abiding purposes. The missionary situation became once more serene and hopeful. The formation of the British United States of South Africa, in 1909, while it committed the injustice of disqualifying natives from voting, yet opened to them advantages in the field of education and the prospect of a share in the increased prosperity anticipated from the union of the states. The missionaries report in 1910 that the conditions of missionary work are now in every way happy and encouraging. All forces are working together well and with fine promise of results. At the very close of this period the Zulu Branch of the Board's South

INDUSTRIAL FEATURES IN VARIOUS MISSIONS

1 CARPENTER SHOP, AMANZIMTOTI, SOUTH AFRICA
2 CARPENTER SHOP, MARSOVAN, TURKEY
3 SIR D. M. PETIT SCHOOL OF INDUSTRIAL ARTS, AHMEDNAGAR, INDIA
4 UNCOVERING THE KILN, RHODESIA, AFRICA
5 THE LAUNDRY, BOMBAY, INDIA

African Mission is entering into cooperation with the United Free Church of Scotland in the field of education, an arrangement by which the youth of each mission will be educated in the Board's school at Amanzimtoti, while the theological students get their training at the Free Church Seminary at Impolweni, the teaching force being made up from both missions. So South Africa puts itself in line with the world movement toward union on the mission field.

Progress in East Central Africa

Throughout their tour of Gazaland, or Rhodesia, as it was now called, the deputation was impressed with how much had been accomplished by this mission in the decade since its organization, especially as it had never been adequately manned. Despite the huge task of planting this mission in the wilderness, it secured results from the first. At the beginning of the third year of occupation the missionaries could report some thirty persons as having professed their desire to follow Christ, and in 1897 the first church was formed, with sixteen young people as its members. Its officers were from its own number, and from the outset it was pledged to self-support; its first contribution, with a little aid from the mission, amounted to $11.

Industrial Work

While all departments of mission work were undertaken, immediate attention was given to industrial features, which, it was felt, must be an important part of its effort. Soon the natives, to whom all but the rudest tools were a mystery, were at work in the saw-pit upon the logs hewn from the noble forest at Mt. Silinda. Shortly before the deputation's visit Mr. Fuller had arrived, bringing in with him a traction engine sent from this country, with much other valuable apparatus as a gift for the industrial department. The transportation of that engine over the 180 miles of native paths leading from the coast to Mt. Silinda was a herculean task, requiring weeks of time and all the American skill and Christian devotion of Mr. Fuller, who simply would not give up. All the industrial lines took on

new activity. At the sawmill, the brick kiln, and later the carpenter shop, young men were taught to produce building material and some furniture, both for mission use and for sale to the settlers. Later the appearance of a Ndau hymn book marked the operation of a printing press as another feature in the industrial life.

In 1902 a new station was opened at Melsetter, with Miss Gilson in charge of a school for children of Europeans, which the government at length took over in 1910. Among the students arriving at Mt. Silinda in 1906 was a group of young men from Beira, where a station had been opened in 1904 as the Ruth Tracy Strong Mission. Mr. Bunker had secured a residence, was gathering scholars and inquirers about him and making a good start at mission work, when the interference of Portuguese officials became more and more disturbing. Boys were seized, imprisoned, and whipped on false charges, but really because they resorted to the missionary, until they were almost afraid to come, and the situation grew intolerable. Finally, worn out by the conflict, Mr. Bunker felt compelled to withdraw, closing the mission temporarily, but not without definite fruitage in the lives of these young men, who made their way secretly to Mt. Silinda to enter the Christian schools of that freer country.

The Outlook

The wisdom of this mission's location has been abundantly shown. A good land to dwell in, it has proved a fruitful land to till. When, in 1906, scarcely seven years after work was begun at Chikore, the third annual gathering of native Christians convened there, it was an inspiring and rewarding sight for those who founded the mission to see this living church bearing the witness of changed character, offering itself anew to Christ, and responding to the appeals for service. One feature of the occasion was the claiming of the old rain tree, under which sacrifices had been offered by the witch doctor to the rain gods, as henceforth to be one of the possessions of Christ. From this meeting,

and moved by its spirit, the Zulu evangelists set themselves with new determination toward the great Sabi valley lying to the westward, most populous of all the adjacent districts and absolutely dark in its heathenism. The story of the efforts of these evangelists and of young men from the schools who went out at the week-end in one direction and another to visit the heathen kraals, and who thus succeeded in one year in winning scores of such as they themselves had been to follow them in their new way of life, is full of cheer for the Christian conquest of Africa. The Rhodesian Branch of the South African Mission faces a magnificent opportunity, with every assurance of victory if only it shall be worthily equipped and sustained.

In West Africa

Meanwhile the new mission on the west coast was making headway. By 1893, when the East Central Mission was opened, three stations had been formed, reaching a population of 100,000, the language had been reduced to written form, the Scriptures and text-books translated, two self-sustaining mission churches organized, with their own houses of worship and forty-nine communicants; eight common schools opened, with 345 pupils, one-third girls, and a home missionary society organized and at work. The task had been enormous, and the strain severe; of thirty missionaries who had been on the field only one-half were left in Africa.

Life at the Stations

Bailundu, the oldest station, naturally showed a fuller development. A temporary decline had occurred at this station, with some loss of native Christians from the mission, but the defection was overcome, nearly all who had relapsed to heathenism had returned to their Christian habit of life, and congregations were larger than ever. Worship was maintained at several places, native Christians sharing in its conduct. One of the missionaries held services at the king's village, with congregations of 200. A native pastor was able to take entire charge of the Sabbath

services for part of the year. Schools for boys and girls were flourishing, village schools being tributary to those of higher grade at the stations; some of the more advanced pupils in the boys' school had read every book in the Bailundu tongue; the most promising were beginning to be taught English. It was a joy to watch the development both in mind and heart of some of these eager young men just out of savagery.

Chisamba was showing the benefit of the ampler support given to it through the loyalty of the Canadian churches. Under Mr. Currie's leadership, work at this station developed strongly. Organized in 1888, it could report in 1896 that no case of church discipline had occurred, the examination of candidates being entirely in the hands of the church. The calendar of a Sunday at this station showed one meeting following another almost without intermission; in addition to the usual preaching services and Sunday-school classes, there were early morning evangelistic services, conducted by native leaders, and attended by all the young people of the station, while on Sunday afternoons the young men went in bands to the different villages to repeat the message of the day. By the time the new century opened, the church attendance at Chisamba was seldom less than 400, with 100 catechumens under instruction; the witness of renewed lives was everywhere to be found. Some stories, like that of Kanjundu, the Christian chief of Chiyuka, deserve place among the heroic tales of missionary history.

Difficulties with the Portuguese

The growing disposition of the Portuguese to lay firmer hands upon their provinces, together with their jealousy of the missionaries' increasing influence, fomented trouble. Assertion of Portuguese authority over the kingdom of Bailundu was not effected without an attempt at revolt, which, though quickly subdued, occasioned violent deeds and caused a temporary check to the mission, although the missionaries themselves suffered no injury. Yet work went on, increasing in amount and enlarging

in scope. Medical and industrial features soon were added, with the rudest sort of outfit at first, but advancing to better accommodations with the coming of missionaries qualified for these tasks. The industrial department at Bailundu proved its value, as the young men became able to do most of the building and repairs, work in the shops, at the printing press, and in photography. Two new stations were opened, one at Ochileso and the other at Sachikela. The growing disposition of the government to hinder the missionaries showed itself in 1908, when, as Dr. Stover was absent on furlough, notice was given of his expulsion on a trivial and unproved charge. Many traders, also, were showing their dislike to having missionaries about. Persistence and patient effort on the part of Dr. Stover, who remained at Lisbon for a year and a half awaiting decision on his appeal, with the good offices of the United States government through Minister Bryan, brought at last, in January, 1910, an order permitting Dr. Stover's return to the mission. The victory was won, not simply in this particular case, but for all the Angola missionaries and for the security of their interests. Thus on the west as on the east of Africa the Board's missions come to the centenary year with a stronger life and a yet brighter outlook.

Chapter XXIV

ISLANDS OF THE PACIFIC

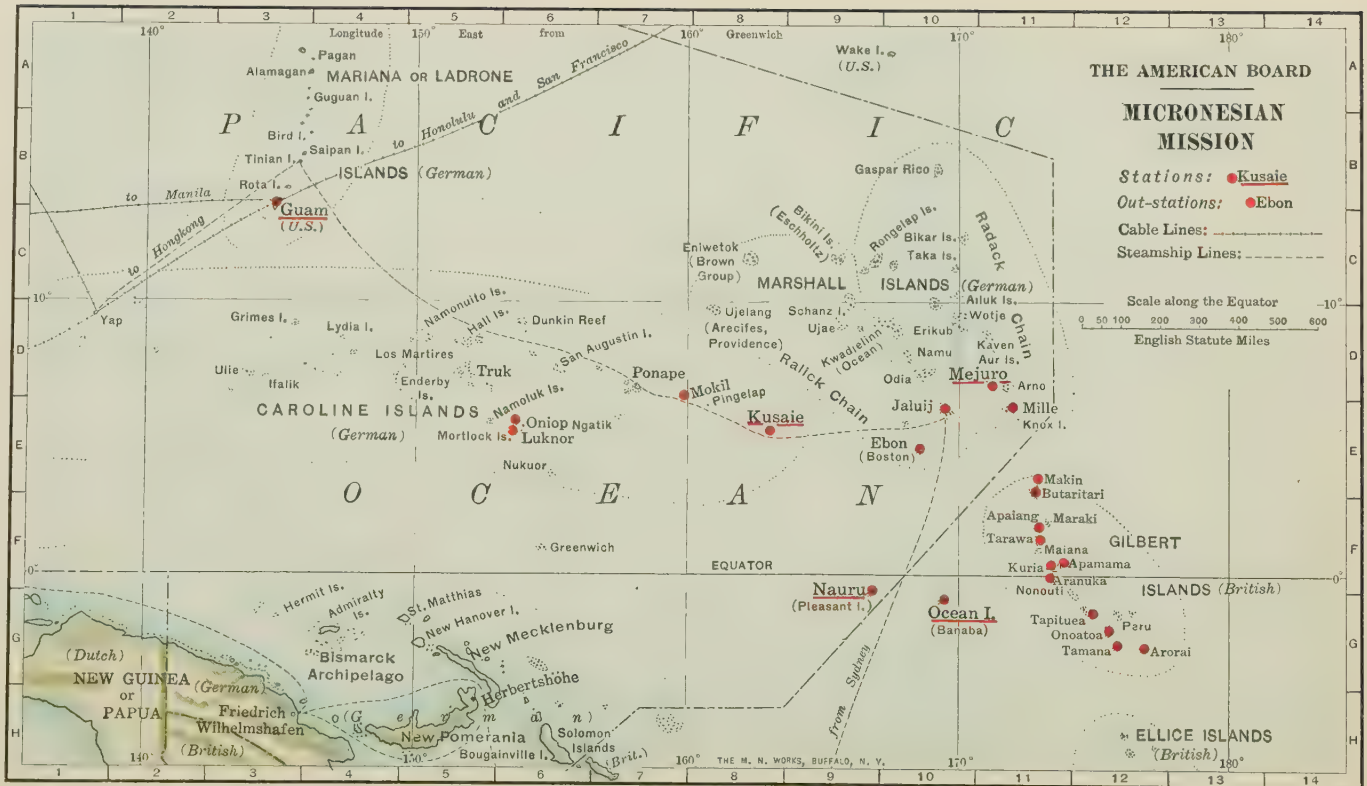
The Islands as Colonial Possessions

It is significant of the change in the map of the world during the last century that within its time four lands where the Board had missions, India and Ceylon, Africa, Micronesia, and the Philippines, became the possessions of Christian powers. In all this transfer of territory none of the fields was more disturbed than Micronesia. As the Pacific Ocean became of larger political and commercial importance, colonial ambitions brought into new and for a time unhappy prominence these "pin-points of creation," as Mr. Doane called the "little islands."

Quiet Years Preceding

Fortunately these disturbances did not come in the first years of this period or until foundations had been somewhat firmly laid. The early '80s saw missionary work in Micronesia progressing quietly along the new lines that had been devised. With the headquarters, including the training-schools, for the Gilbert and Marshall Islands at Kusaie and for the Carolines at Ponape, native pastors and teachers were left more largely in charge of operations in the several groups.

Miss Lillian S. Cathcart, the first unmarried woman to be sent as missionary to Micronesia, came to Kusaie in 1881 and Miss J. E. Fletcher to Ponape the year following; thereupon woman's special effort for woman was fairly under way. The groups of islands were now regarded virtually as separate missions, since in language and customs they were so unlike. In this division of the field Mr. Walkup came to have general supervision of the Gilbert Islands, by the illness and enforced


THE AMERICAN BOARD
MICRONESIAN MISSION
Stations: Kusaie
Out-stations: Ebon
Cable Lines:
Steamship Lines:
Scale along the Equator
0 50 100 200 300 400 500 600
English Statute Miles
Longitude East from Greenwich
P A C I F I C
O C E A N
MARIANA OR LADRONE ISLANDS (German)
Pagan
Alamagan
Guguan I.
Bird I.
Saipan I.
Tinian I.
Rota I.
Guam (U.S.)
to Manila
to Hongkong
to Honolulu and San Francisco
Yap
Grimes I.
Lydia I.
Namonuito Is.
Hall Is.
Dunkin Reef
San Augustin I.
Los Martires
Ulie
Ifalik
Enderby Is.
Truk
Ponape
Namoluk Is.
Oniop
Ngatik
Luknor
Mortlock Is.
CAROLINE ISLANDS (German)
Nukuor
Greenwich
EQUATOR
Wake I. (U.S.)
Gaspar Rico
Eniwetok (Brown Group)
Bikini Is. (Eschholtz)
Rongelap Is.
Bikar Is.
Taka Is.
Radack Chain
MARSHALL ISLANDS (German)
Aluk Is.
Wotje
Ujelang (Arecifes, Providence)
Schanz I.
Ujae
Erikub
Namu
Kwadelinn (Ocean)
Kaven
Aur Is.
Ralick Chain
Odia
Mejuro
Arno
Mokil
Pingelap
Kusaie
Jaluij
Mille
Knox I.
Ebon (Boston)
Makin
Butaritari
Apaiang
Maraki
Tarawa
Maiana
Kuria
Apamama
Aranuka
Nonouti
GILBERT ISLANDS (British)
Nauru (Pleasant I.)
Ocean I. (Banaba)
Tapituea
Onoatoa
Peru
Tamana
Arorai
ELLICE ISLANDS (British)
from Sydney
Hermit Is.
Admiralty Is.
D'Lt. Matthias
New Hanover I.
New Mecklenburg
Bismarck Archipelago
(Dutch)
NEW GUINEA (German)
or
PAPUA
Friedrich Wilhelmshafen
(British)
Herbertshöhe
(Gazelle Peninsula)
New Pomerania
Bougainville I.
Solomon Islands (Brit.)
THE M. N. WORKS, BUFFALO, N. Y.

withdrawal to Honolulu of Mr. Bingham; Dr. Pease of the Marshalls; Messrs. Sturges and Doane of the work at Ponape, with native pastors on Pingelap and Mokil in the eastern Carolines; while in the central Carolines the new enterprise in the Mortlocks and in Truk lagoon was in charge of Mr. Logan, with headquarters at Truk. The annual voyage of the *Morning Star III* from island to island, and group to group, starting at Kusaie, was the one opportunity to transfer scholars and locate teachers, to convey mission supplies, to inspect work, and to bear for a few hours, or at best a few days, the cheer of Christian sympathy. The vicissitudes of storm and current often shortened these visits and sometimes prevented them altogether; there was always apprehension that the vessel might be lost. So, indeed, the third ship, in 1883, was driven on a reef at Kusaie. The fourth *Star*, with auxiliary steam power to save her from these perils, continued in service till 1900, when she was sold to avoid heavy repairs, a schooner being secured to make the tour of the islands in her place in 1903. Number five, a small steamer, was taken out in 1904, but the unexpected cost of her maintenance at length made it seem unwise to keep her in commission, especially as the growth of trade now brought more vessels to these islands. Thus, in 1908, this last *Morning Star* was sent to the United States and sold.

Native Leadership

Both the faithfulness and ability of many of the Christian natives left in charge of islands were remarkable and beautiful to see; Moses and his wife Zippora, after a year of deadly peril at Truk, during which they kept quietly at their task, succeeded in establishing a school and in winning some hearers and inquirers. When the *Star* arrived, in 1880, at Apamama, where another Moses had been the teacher, it was found the time had come to organize a church. The Sunday spent there was a day long to be remembered. After continuous examinations by the missionary through the preceding day and night and up to ten o'clock in the morning,

all went to church, where thirty-one couples were united in Christian marriage, seventy-one candidates for church membership baptized and received, two deacons chosen, and the Lord's Supper celebrated for the first time on the island. The congregation numbered 200, among them the king, who would gladly have joined also "if his fourteen wives had not stood in the way!"

These annual tours revealed many happy surprises. Mr. Rand, comparing the conditions with what he observed on a similar voyage eight years before, noted great gain. On one island, Nonouti, which then was a perfect picture of heathenism, with a rabble in the church so brutal and fierce as never to be forgotten, there was now a quiet, well-behaved company, earnestly listening to the speaker as he preached to them the gospel. It seemed as if it could not be the same race of beings.

A conspicuous witness to the worth of missionary work in these little islands was thrust upon the world's notice in 1882, when five survivors of a party of twelve natives of Apamama were rescued from their cockleshell of a canoe 600 miles from home on the open sea. For six weeks they had been knocked about by the shifting winds of a monsoon, with only a little pulverized banana for food and a small supply of water. "A more devoted band of Christians I never met," said the captain who found them. When first hauled out of their boat, more dead than alive, they joined their leader in giving thanks to the Almighty. The old man of the party had but this word of English to utter, while pointing to himself and then upward, "Me missionary."

The Other Side

The visits of the *Star* disclosed other than cheering conditions. The same year that the church was organized at Apamama, on another of the Gilberts, Tapituea, there were found dreadful conditions of warfare and reaction. The people were raving against missionaries and fighting a religious war, one party professedly Christian and the other heathen. Because the heathen would not

submit to be taught, but chose to dance and carouse, a native Hawaiian teacher called upon his followers to fight the enemies of the Lord. In the battle which ensued hundreds of men, women, and children were indiscriminately slaughtered, their bodies then being burned. The missionaries were continually disappointed and chagrined at seeing individuals and sometimes entire islands, after years of fairly steady growth, suddenly collapse into a wild orgy of heathenism. Yet, taking the years together, it was certain that progress was being made; despite all, there were numerous shining examples of transformed life and steady and disciplined character.

Considering all the situation, the true wonder was that the lapses from Christian life were not greater and that so much was being accomplished with these low and disadvantaged peoples.

In New Locations and in Old

Chiefs and people in islands not yet reached were now calling for teachers. The *Morning Star* was continually besieged with such appeals. Even Polowot, in the western Carolines, whose inhabitants were the fierce robbers and rovers of that part of the ocean, was seeking teachers. Within six years of the start in the Truk lagoon four islands already had churches and schools with native leadership and new locations were opening.

The pressure upon the insufficient missionary force was now very heavy, particularly in providing for the schools where there was utter need of all kinds of instruction. In the training-schools, both for young men and for young women, pupils were taught the care of house and clothing, the preparation of food, and some farm work, the school farm being made not only a means of education, but a source of supply for the table. By 1885 eighty pupils were preparing to help the people of their races, while among the islands some forty day schools, taught by natives, cared for 2500 pupils. In the Gilberts six Hawaiian missionaries, appointed and supported by the Hawaiian Evangelical Association, were taking most

of the pastoral care, with the assistance of twelve native teachers trained in the schools at Kusaie; Mr. Walkup making yearly visits for examination and counsel and to transport pupils to and from the training-school. Of the Gilbert Islands, nine were now organized with Christian institutions; eight of the Marshall Islands were similarly occupied.

The Hawaiian Islands Again

The American Board did not cease its concern for the progress of Christianity in the Sandwich Islands with the transfer of its interests there to the care of the Hawaiian Evangelical Association in 1863. The annual reports still summarized the progress of the year in those islands, and not until 1871 was the mission spoken of as fully graduated. In 1877 the Hawaiian Islands reappear in the story of the year. Hawaii had become the "crossroads of the Pacific"; ships and traders were visiting it in increasing numbers; immigrants were pouring in to become laborers on its sugar plantations. Soon there were more Chinese in the islands than male Hawaiians, and Japanese were fast arriving. The tendency was to crush out both morally and industrially the more indolent and unstable natives. So long as the islands were isolated and life was simple, the means of training established by the missionaries sufficed. If the work of the past was to be safeguarded in the new times it was necessary to reenforce Christian influences. To this end the theological school at Honolulu was remodeled and the name changed to the North Pacific Institute, of which Rev. Charles M. Hyde, D.D., was put in charge. Its aim was to prepare Hawaiians for work in the Gilberts, to train a more adequate ministry for the native churches, and to stimulate Christian life and devotion.

The Board now undertook the partial maintenance of this Institute and, with the same object in view, aided the boarding-school for boys at Hilo while contributing also toward a special mission for the Chinese in the islands, undertaken in 1881 for the Hawaiian Board by Rev. F. W. Damon, son of

the chaplain of the Seaman's Friend Society at Honolulu. A further plan to send out from this country general missionaries, each to take a separate district or island for evangelistic work, was soon abandoned. Some time after the beginning of efforts for the Chinese a missionary was sent to labor among the Japanese, this task falling for a short while into the competent hands of Rev. O. H. Gulick, detailed to it in 1893 from his experience in the Japan Mission.

In stimulating and wisely aiding the native churches of Hawaii, the children of missionaries, many of them engaged in commercial life on the islands and interested in all their best welfare, were coming to bear a large part. Both in counsel and in gift no better or more loyal friends of the American Board, or of the work of evangelizing the island world, have appeared than many of the children and grandchildren of the early missionaries to the Sandwich Islands.

A political revolution, after various shifts, ended in the annexation of Hawaii to the United States in 1898; no longer could it be considered foreign missionary ground. Indeed, one year before that date the Board was able to withdraw the last item of its aid, the grant toward the North Pacific Institute; by 1897 the Hawaiian Islands as a mission field again disappeared from the annual reports of the American Board.

In 1887 Spain and Germany were disputing the ownership of the Carolines. Spain claimed them by right of discovery, but Germany was already ruling in the neighboring Marshall group. When the issue was referred to the Pope as arbitrator, he decided that Spain should have the Carolines, but left the Germans in possession of the Marshalls.

Spanish Oppression, 1887–90

The missionaries could not but be apprehensive, as Spain proceeded to take firmer hold of her now authorized possession. In March, 1887, a man-of-war arrived at Ponape, bringing a governor for the island, six priests, fifty soldiers, and twenty-five convicts. The governor made fair promises, although

requiring that instruction in the schools should now be given in Spanish and that there should be no antagonism to the Roman Catholic Church. Almost immediately, however, the demoralization of the natives was begun by the soldiery and the convicts, who also encroached upon the mission premises and interfered with their affairs. When Mr. Doane ventured to protest, he was promptly arrested and closely confined on board the Spanish man-of-war; after two months' delay he was sent as a prisoner to Manila. Upon prompt action by the United States consul at Manila, the Ponape governor was recalled and a Spanish transport restored Mr. Doane to full rights and privileges on the island. Meanwhile the natives had revolted against the intolerable rule of the tyrant and had nearly annihilated the force sent against them.

The return of Mr. Doane in August, 1887, the coming of a new governor in October and the arrival of a United States vessel, restored order and gave a chance for the reorganization of missionary work. For a time all went well. But later, by a breakdown of Mr. Rand's health, due to the strain of the times, only Miss Palmer and a trader's widow, who was aiding in the mission, were left in charge on the island. Encroachments and outbreaks were renewed. Upon the coming of the *Morning Star* to relieve the ladies, the governor accused them of aiding in resistance to authority, and ordered them off. Work was stopped perforce, and the *Star* took away the schoolgirls belonging in other islands, while Miss Palmer and Mrs. Cole led to a place of safety the Ponape girls whom the governor would not allow to leave the island. The empty mission settlement was immediately bombarded and the buildings fired; Mr. Rand was confined in the Spanish colony; the two women were ordered to leave Ponape. The arrival of a United States warship brought relief, but the station was necessarily desolated, only a few natives being left to hold the ground. One of them, writing to the absent missionaries, told of his weeping among the ashes of the mission church,

where other natives who were wandering about joined him, until quite a number gathered; they began to sing and pray together till everyone broke out crying. "Of the many trying years in the Ponape mission," wrote Mr. Rand, "this has been the most trying."

Not till five years later, in 1895, was an indemnity of $17,000 received for the losses and injury sustained in the two outbreaks of 1887 and 1890.

Meanwhile trial and testing of another sort had come in Truk, where the Logans had been toiling at their lonely and arduous task. In the care of the five stations in this lagoon, besides the oversight of the Mortlock Islands, Mr. Logan was obliged to make long and exposing tours. Much of his traveling had to be done in native canoes, picturesque, indeed, but most uncomfortable; pitching up and down in the trough of the sea, in constant danger of capsizing, with a native boy acting as sliding balance on the outrigger, they involved an experience more exciting than restful. If the voyage lasted over night there was only a low and cramped cabin in which the missionary could lie down on a mat to catch some winks of sleep. Yet the Logans did not quail and, in spite of failing strength, toiled on, examining, counseling, and directing the little communities committed to their charge.

In the Truk Lagoon

Despite many trials of patience and disappointments in individual cases, the missionaries did not lose heart, but realized more and more how hard was the struggle against the powers of evil and how slight and unsteady the influences which they could set to oppose them. "What folly," says Mr. Logan, "to expect that these races can take on pure morals and Christian civilization in a few years. Souls can be saved, morals and manners improved, and the seeds of all progress planted and nourished; but the century plant grows quickly in comparison with true civilization."

Appalling burdens rested on this devoted missionary as on

those in other islands, of whom he is representative. He must needs get time to translate a little every day; to administer medicine so far as possible to those who are sick; to oversee the raising of a crop of taro, that an entirely unnecessary famine may be avoided; to help Mrs. Logan in cutting and making clothes for the fifty or more for whose attire they were responsible. When the *Morning Star* arrived in 1887, with the helpers so long sought, it was too late to save the exhausted life, which went forth from this world in December of that year. Without physician or relieving medicines, in the face of his own suffering and of the anxiety and grief of his wife, Mr. Logan could yet say of his work, "It is worth all we are giving to it!" "Greater love hath no man than this:" that he lay down his life!

The Slough of Despond

It was during this trial that the veteran Dr. Pease, still superintending the Marshall Islands from Kusaie, wrote: "If missionaries have such a road to travel as Bunyan's Pilgrim, I think our mission has arrived at the Slough of Despond. Mr. Logan gone; the missionaries driven from Ponape; the Gilbert Islands Mission without a head; and the prospect is that the Marshall Islands Mission will be in a like condition in the near future; if these people are ever to have the Scriptures in their own tongue, I must devote myself to translating, and who is to take my place here?"

In the Gilbert Islands field the death of Mrs. Walkup compelled the closing of the training-school at Kusaie while Mr. Walkup brought his children to America and until the arrival of the Channons in 1890. Soon after, Mr. Walkup returned with the *Hiram Bingham*, henceforth to be his home and conveyance, as he gave himself to constant touring in the Gilbert group. Dr. Bingham's Gilbertese Bible, which he began in 1859, the year after he arrived at the islands, appeared from the press in 1890, when this field was more strongly equipped than ever. But in the interruptions the Christian life of the natives had sagged, and the transfer of the group to Great

Britain in 1892 for a while worked adversely. The first English governor, seeking to be tolerant in his rule, unfairly aided the scheme of the French Catholics, and so temporized with evil customs that many natives turned liberty into gross license. The next governor brought a firmer hand; at length ground was recovered and schools widely established, while Protestant teachers were sought for all the islands.

In the Marshall group practically famine conditions existed on some of the islands from the excessive demands of rulers and chiefs upon the natives' scanty supplies. The question of concern was always the personal question of the official. Here, too, a new governor relieved the strain; work in the Marshalls straightway began to show splendid results. Unfortunately, his stay was short, and his successor was of another temper.

In the Carolines the missionaries, banished from Ponape, found a temporary dwelling-place on Mokil, some sixty miles eastward, where the natives, who had learned something of Christianity from a reformed white trader, gave them welcome and a chance to work until they should be able to reestablish themselves on Ponape. But before that time came, worn out by the anxieties and disappointments, Mr. and Mrs. Rand and Miss Fletcher were obliged to return to America. A tornado, tearing over the western Carolines in 1891, wrought terrible destruction in Kusaie. Mission property was destroyed or badly injured, native houses demolished, and the trees on which the life of the people depended were mostly overthrown. Following the supply ship, which arrived just as they were on the brink of famine, came the news of the schooner *Robert W. Logan*, commissioned to tour in the Truk lagoon and among the Mortlocks, and bringing sorely needed reenforcements. The benefit of this small craft was great while it lasted, but she was lost in 1893, as was a second vessel of the same name in 1898.

One of the heaviest trials of this time in the islands was

the sense of isolation which rested upon all. On the eve of the Spanish-American War, when the missionaries knew that something was happening, they were left long in ignorance of what it was and of how it was to eventuate. During that year the *Morning Star* could not make her usual voyage; supplies were sent down by a neutral ship. A Japanese trading vessel brought a mail to Truk, telling of the war; but where was the *Star?* and what would happen if she did not come? and what effect was the war to have on the future of these islands? The missionaries could not even communicate with one another; word was sent to Truk that the Spanish governor had forbidden the captain, who usually brought the news, to visit them or to give any reason for his absence. In such darkness and uncertainty they struggled on.

The Spanish-American War, 1898

The war between the United States and Spain revolutionized the situation in Micronesia. As it brought to this country a new prestige in the islands of the Pacific, so it stripped Spain of her power there. In the Philippine islands and in Guam, as well as in Hawaii, the United States now had colonial possessions. A wide door of influence and opportunity was opened for the mission Board representing this newly dominating power. Spain now sold the Caroline Islands to Germany, after twelve years of bitter tyranny, and the Germans took possession, amid great rejoicing of the people, near the close of 1899. Henry Nanepei, released from prison, was able once more to lead his people and wrote, in behalf of 350 faithful Christians on Ponape, appealing for the immediate return of American missionaries. The way was open for the renewal of work, with the German governor guaranteeing religious liberty and warning those Spaniards who were left that they must not promote religious strife. After nine years of absence the Ponape Mission was reopened in 1900, the missionaries receiving a genuine ovation from Nanepei and his fellow Christians.

In all the groups work now took on a new and more cour-

ageous aspect. The German government proved itself friendly, though requiring the use of the German language and indicating its wish that German missionaries might be secured or those who were familiar with the German tongue. The principal Marshall Islands, all the Gilberts, and a large number of the eastern Carolines could be reported as occupied by the Board in 1902. A religious awakening in Kusaie in 1902–03 resulted in outwardly Christianizing that island.

Guam Opened and Closed

An event of the war with Spain that seemed almost like a bit of comic opera was the accidental and bloodless capture by a United States vessel of the little island of Guam in the Marianas. Whereupon a mission of the Board was opened there in 1900 by the transfer of Mr. and Mrs. Price from Truk, Miss Mary A. Channell joining them in the undertaking. The United States authorities welcomed the missionaries and a location was found in some of the old Spanish buildings at Agāna. In 1905, after the unavoidable withdrawal of the mission's founder, Rev. and Mrs. H. E. B. Case took up the task and maintained it during the succeeding five years. They found the natives a simple people, speaking the Chamorro language, into which portions of the Bible had been translated and by means of which the gospel has been preached to whoever would listen. Some converts have been gathered; some schools maintained. But the Roman Catholic influence has proved very strong, and the United States officials, while friendly, have not rendered much direct assistance. At length it came to be felt that the enterprise, to be efficiently conducted, required an outlay in life and effort under the circumstances hardly justified. After several unsuccessful negotiations for transfer to other Boards, and through the necessary withdrawal of the Cases in 1910, the mission has been left with only a native in charge.

Two small islands of Micronesia, not far apart though in different groups, where the American Board has missionaries, have been brought somewhat into the world's notice because

of the discovery on them of rich deposits of phosphate having commercial value. At Nauru, or Pleasant Island, belonging with the Marshall group, though widely separated from it, the company organized to work these deposits has opened up an industry, not only for the 1500 natives living there, but for laborers brought from other islands and other lands. The managers of this English company have shown themselves very friendly to mission work and have generously helped Mr. and Mrs. Delaporte, notably through the free transportation of these first missionaries and their supplies. Thus within seven years the enterprise of these missionaries, who have been supported by gifts from the Central Union Church of Honolulu, has developed a remarkable mission field, having substantial buildings, including churches, schools, and mission houses, with congregations and schools at different points about the island, a growing literature of Scriptures and other books, a vigorous and influential, if compact, mission field, which is full of promise for the people of several races crowded together on this one island. The other of these fields of some commercial importance is Ocean Island in the Gilberts, where, under somewhat similar conditions, Mr. and Mrs. Channon are developing the new headquarters of the Gilbert Islands work, including the establishment of a training-school, in which a score of young men are preparing for Christian leadership in their native islands.

Nauru and Ocean Island

The shifts of authority in Micronesia, while they greatly cleared the sky for the Board's missions, did not remove all difficulties. Another and fiercer tornado, in 1905, swept Kusaie almost bare. When the missionaries went to Ponape they found the case still worse there; twenty people had been killed and nearly 400 injured. The same year a tidal wave in the Marshall Islands caused great loss of life and property, and entailed a new burden for relief and encouragement on the worn missionaries.

Obstacles and Opportunities

Yet more serious troubles pressed upon them here and there. In the Mortlocks a tidal wave of heathenism had swept over the islands in 1904, almost engulfing the Christian communities. The stations generally abandoned themselves to vice and shame; it seemed that few remained true. The missionaries had fresh occasion to remind themselves of the patience of God with his fickle and faltering children.

As German rule in the Carolines and Marshalls grew firmer, it became clear that German methods and ideals of missionary undertaking were desired. Also the awakening missionary zeal of the Christian Endeavor Societies of Germany led them to seek a part in the work on these German islands. After repeated overtures from this German *Jugendbund*, and upon careful arrangement with them and with the *Liebenzeller Mission*, which engaged to assume the responsibility and supervision of the venture, the American Board transferred to them, in 1907, its interests on Ponape and Truk. Ordained German missionaries are already conducting with good success all work on the former island and at some points in the Truk lagoon. Upon the arrival of certain German teachers, in 1909, to take charge of the girls' school at Truk, the Misses Baldwin who, without furlough or relief, had maintained it against heavy obstacles for eleven strenuous years, were able to withdraw. The Germans are ambitious, also, to take over the work on the Marshall Islands, and it is expected that as soon as their resources and constituency shall have somewhat increased the Board will transfer to them also its undertaking on the islands where Dr. and Mrs. Rife are now the sole missionaries.

The close of this period brought two heavy losses to the Gilbert Islands, following closely upon the jubilee of Christian work in this group, which was celebrated with a joyous and impressive convocation in 1908. The first was the death of Dr. Hiram Bingham, the closing work of whose life, the Gilbertese Dictionary, went to the islands on the *Hiram Bingham II*, which Captain Walkup took out in 1908. In Brooklyn,

at the annual meeting of that year, Dr. Bingham had declared that he was still under orders and hopeful of going back to the islands; but it was not so to be, for within a few weeks his life came quickly to its end. A second affliction followed in the loss of Captain Walkup, whose word was trusted and whose will was law to multitudes of natives whom he knew by name and by heart through all the Gilbert group. Caught in a sudden squall, the *Hiram Bingham II* was overturned on May 4, and her captain with his eight companions was obliged to take to the small boat. After rowing and drifting for twenty-two days, at last they came to land, but too late to save the exhausted life of the heroic missionary.

The Mission to the Philippines

In the enthusiasm of interest in the Philippines as they became a new possession of the United States, and with an encouraging gift from an individual who urged that the Board undertake labor in that great field, the latest mission of the Board was begun in 1902. By an agreement made between missionary societies to prevent overlapping of work, the territory assigned to the American Board for evangelization was the large island of Mindanao, in the southern part of the group, a wild and unexplored country containing 500,000 inhabitants, fifty per cent of which were nominally Roman Catholic, thirty per cent Mohammedan, the rest pure pagan. The Moros constituted the Mohammedans. The pagans were found to be of a raw and wild type, presenting a new and astounding race of people to be citizens of the United States. As in the earlier missions of the Board, the first attempt in this field was in the way of investigation before settling definitely locations or lines of effort. The first missionaries were Rev. and Mrs. R. F. Black, who located at Davao in 1902. Some unpleasant experiences at once with Catholic priests indicated that care was necessary in making advances. In 1908 Dr. and Mrs. C. T. Sibley were sent out, to be maintained by the Mindanao Medical Association, a company of gentlemen in New York, interested in contributing

THE AMERICAN BOARD
MISSION TO THE PHILIPPINES
Station: Davao
Out-stations: Cagayan
Railroads:
Cable Lines:
Steamship Lines:
0 100 200
English Statute Miles
120° Longitude East from Greenwich 124°
Babuyanes Islands
C.Engaño
Laoag
Aparri
Vigan
Cagayan
Illagan
North Cordilleras
Sierra Madre
S.Fernando
Lingayen
Dagupan
Sta.Cruz
Baler
LUZON
ISLAND
S.Isidro
Bacolor
Malolos
Manila
Polillo I.
Bay L.
Lipa
Taal
Manila Bay
Cable to Hongkong
to Hongkong
to Singapore
to Borneo
CHINA SEA
PACIFIC OCEAN
Nueva Caceres
CATANDUANES I.
Mt. Halcon
Marinduque I.
Mt. Mayon
San Bernardino Strait to San Francisco
MINDORO I.
Romblon
Tablas
Mindoro Strait
CALAMIANES ISLANDS
MASBATE I.
SAMAR I.
CUYOS IS.
PANAY I.
VISAYAS
Iloilo
Bacolod
LEYTE I.
Tayabas
Dumaran I.
Cebu
CEBU I.
Maluspina Vol.
Siargao
Puerto Princesa
NEGROS I.
Argao
Surigao
BOHOL I.
PALAWAN I.
Dumaguete
Camiguin I.
Butuan
Dapitan
Sindangan Bay
Cagayan
Iligan
Agusan
JOLO (SULU) SEA
Balabac I.
L. Lanao
San Miguel Is.
Baganga
Illana Bay
MINDANAO ISLAND
Cotabato
Davao
Cagayan Jolo I.
Zamboanga
Mt. Apo
Mati
Basilan I.
L. Buluan
Davao Gulf
Sandakan
Jolo I.
Sarangani Bay
BRITISH NORTH BORNEO
Tawi Tawi I.
Jolo Archipelago
Sarangani Is.
Darvel B.
Sibutu
CELEBES SEA
120°
THE MATTHEWS-NORTHRUP WORKS, BUFFALO, N. Y.

to the development of this phase of Christian missions in the Philippines and desirous of operating through the American Board.

Further exploration and closer contact with the people have made it clear that the American Board Mission has a splendid field to cultivate and one full of promise. If few results have as yet appeared, they are significant. A church with a small membership has been formed and one capable and devoted Filipino evangelist has been found. Already there are many children under instruction, the Scriptures have been translated into the dialect, and in town and village, as well as beyond into the wilderness, the gospel has been preached. The Board is this very year somewhat enlarging its work, in part through the increasing help of the Medical Association, by the commissioning of another missionary and the provision of a hospital for Dr. Sibley's important department.

A sudden riot or insurrection in the early summer of 1909 involved the missionaries in some danger for a few days, but they escaped injury, and the disturbance was quieted without much interruption. If this mission of the American Board has been a little slow in getting under way, its prospect of efficiency and success is not less than that of other missions in the Philippines.

Chapter XXV

IN PAPAL LANDS

The opening of the third period of the Board's century found the missions in Papal Lands scarcely more than located. In Mexico, indeed, a new start was necessary after the massacre; in Spain and Austria the first churches had been organized; also schools and other agencies. These missions were now to justify their undertaking and to show their real value; that they were not in operation simply to make converts to Protestantism, but to stimulate a new spirit of religious freedom and to instil evangelic faith in lands where Christianity was fettered. For in these fields the record is mainly one of a slowly changing temper, showing its influence not immediately or chiefly in new institutions, but in new relationships and attitudes within the established order.

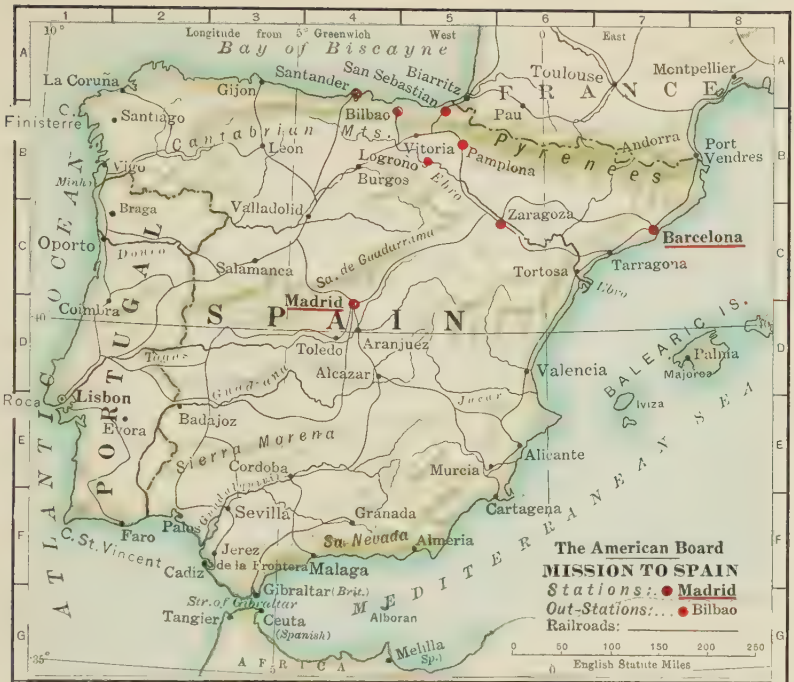
Creating a New Atmosphere

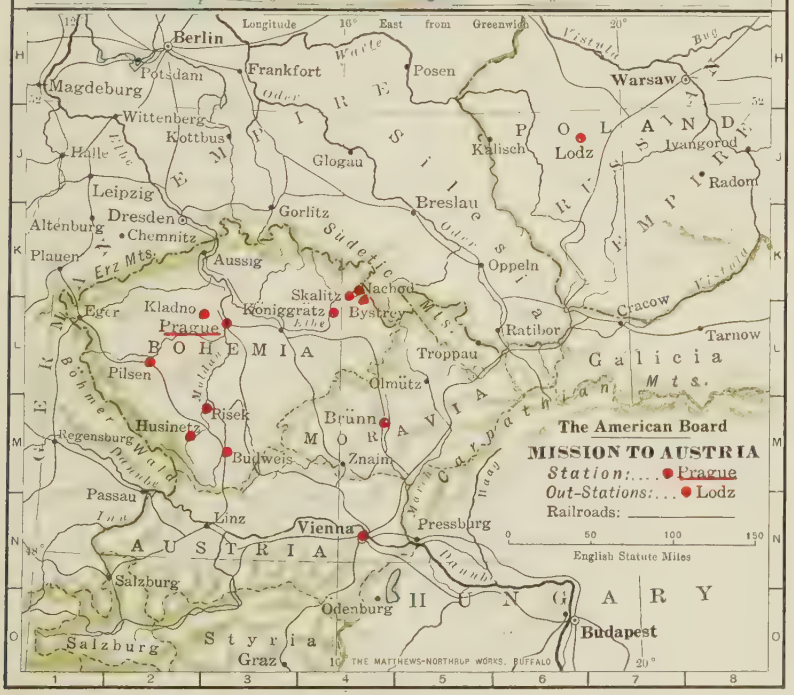
Spain

Acceptance of the Protestant faith even at the beginning of this period involved so bitter consequences in the north of Spain that many withdrew to South American ports to avoid persecution. The mother church at Santander was thus kept one of the smallest in the mission. In 1881 the station and Girls' School were removed to San Sebastian, nearer the border of France and on a through line of travel. The new location proved to be a more convenient and favorable center for missionary work.

Against Many Adversities

The removal of Rev. T. L. Gulick and wife because of the former's ill health would have cut in two the small mission force, save that Mrs. William H. Gulick had secured Miss


Longitude from 5° Greenwich West
East
Bay of Biscayne
La Coruña
Santander
San Sebastian
Biarritz
Toulouse
Montpellier
Gijon
Bilbao
Pau
FRANCE
C. Finisterre
Santiago
Cantabrian Mts.
Leon
Vitoria
Pamplona
Pyrenees
Andorra
Port Vendres
Vigo
Logrono
Burgos
Ebro
Minho
Braga
Valladolid
Zaragoza
Barcelona
Oporto
Douro
Salamanca
Sa. de Guadarrama
Tortosa
Tarragona
Ebro
Coimbra
Madrid
SPAIN
Toledo
Aranjuez
Tagus
Alcazar
Valencia
BALEARIC IS.
Palma
Majorca
Iviza
C. Roca
Lisbon
Guadiana
Jucar
Badajoz
Evora
Sierra Morena
Cordoba
Alicante
Murcia
Cartagena
Sevilla
Granada
Faro
Palos
Sa. Nevada
Almeria
C. St. Vincent
Jerez de la Frontera
Cadiz
Malaga
Gibraltar (Brit.)
Str. of Gibraltar
Tangier
Ceuta (Spanish)
Alboran
Melilla (Sp.)
AFRICA
ATLANTIC OCEAN
PORTUGAL
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
The American Board
MISSION TO SPAIN
Stations: Madrid
Out-Stations: Bilbao
Railroads:
0 50 100 150 200 250
English Statute Miles


Longitude 16° East from Greenwich
Berlin
Potsdam
Frankfort
Warte
Posen
Vistula
Bug
Warsaw
Magdeburg
Oder
Wittenberg
Kottbus
Halle
Elbe
Glogau
Silesia
Kalisch
POLAND
Lodz
Ivangorod
Radom
Leipzig
Breslau
Dresden
Gorlitz
Altenburg
Chemnitz
Plauen
Erz Mts.
Aussig
Sudetic Mts.
Oppeln
Vistula
Eger
Kladno
Skalitz
Nachod
Königgratz
Bystrey
Cracow
Prague
Ratibor
Tarnow
BOHEMIA
Troppau
Galicia
Pilsen
Olmütz
Mts.
Böhmer Wald
Risek
Brünn
Husinetz
MORAVIA
Carpathian
Regensburg
Budweis
Znaim
Danube
Passau
Linz
Vienna
Pressburg
Ina
AUSTRIA
Salzburg
Odenburg
HUNGARY
Budapest
Salzburg
Styria
Graz
THE MATTHEWS-NORTHRUP WORKS, BUFFALO
The American Board
MISSION TO AUSTRIA
Station: Prague
Out-Stations: Lodz
Railroads:
0 50 100 150
English Statute Miles

Susie F. Richards as her aid in the care of the important Girls' School. The depletion of the mission compelled the closing of the training-school for preachers at Zaragoza, which, for the lack of some one to take charge of it, has never been reopened. Yet, in spite of persecution and reduced numbers, advance was made, as at new points inquiry and interest were found; thus the province of Tarragona was entered in 1882 at the request of the Evangelical Society of Geneva, and with the commissioning of two Spanish evangelists. By 1884 a dozen outstations were occupied.

The death of King Alphonsus XII in November, 1885, was followed by a more liberal policy, which allowed greater freedom to pastors in their evangelistic work. A harsh law against private schools, intended to close those of the mission, was then annulled. The troubles in the Caroline Islands worked to the benefit of the missionary effort in Spain, as the press in general, though Roman Catholic, praised the conduct of the American missionaries.

Opposition was not at once or altogether stayed. In Bilbao, one of the most liberal cities, so late as 1890 no landlord could be found who would rent a room for Protestant worship or for a school. Yet, on the whole, the way was opening for advance. Signs that the new teaching was making itself felt were continually appearing in new quarters, as at Pau, across the border in southern France, where there were many Spanish people. Mr. Gulick declared in 1890 that the tourist who should look in upon half a dozen of the chapels in the larger cities, and count from thirty to 100 persons in attendance at the services, would be wide of the mark if he should judge that he had seen the better part of the Protestant community in Spain. The chief strength of it did not lie in organized churches or in the schools in the large cities, but in the many little groups of evangelical Christians, with or without pastors, scattered far and wide throughout the country. "When a man in a country village, who has been

wasteful and quarrelsome and profane and a gambler, begins to frequent the chapel, leaves his former associates, is seen coming and going with the Protestants, gives up his worldly and vicious ways, 'joins the church' in public confession of his faith, bringing with him his wife and family, and becomes an active member in all its good works — such a case tells as it could not in the city. And especially does it tell when for weeks and months the man becomes the mark for the priest, who, failing to recover him to his flock by entreaties and blandishments, resorts to persecution, such as only a village priest can devise to harass and injure an old-time parishioner. These cases — men and women — are the salt of the church, and accredit Protestantism throughout the districts where they are known."

But the spread of a general influence was not all; there was a steady growth in organized Protestantism. In 1885 an alliance of the six churches of the mission, under the title of Spanish Evangelical Union, brought a new sense of strength and cooperation to these young churches. By that time the mission had become so well established and recognized that conflicts with the civil authorities were generally escaped.

Educational Development

While it was not necessary to undertake in Spain some lines of missionary effort that are required in less civilized lands, and while it was agreed that the Board should not be charged here with the expense of any work that was not definitely evangelistic, it was also recognized that Christian education was an essential part of promoting evangelism and the free life of religion in Spain.

From its beginning special interest attached to the Boarding School for Girls at San Sebastian with which Mrs. Gulick's name is forever associated. The success of this school, supported by the Woman's Board of Missions, was remarkable. It was soon found necessary to link its instruction with that of the national system of education, if graduates were to have standing among their people. Mrs. Gulick, therefore, planned

a five years' course for such girls as would present themselves for examination at the Madrid University. The sixteen girls who went up for their first public examination in June, 1891, in competition with 300 young men, captured all the prizes. In 1894, when four girls had finished the five years' course, they received the degree of B.A. from the University, thus establishing both their own capacity for higher education and the competence of their school.

So important and promising became this special field of service that Mrs. Gulick undertook the task of enlarging the school and of securing buildings and equipment for what should be a permanent and commanding institution for the Christian higher education of Spanish young women. Accordingly, in 1892, a corporation was formed under the laws of Massachusetts to hold the property of the so constituted International Institute for Girls in Spain.

The war between Spain and the United States, in 1898, was a testing time for the mission and for all Protestants in Spain.

In War Times

It appeared that the emergency brought courage to those who had already timidly avowed themselves as Evangelicals and won multitudes of new friends who had been slow to break with the state church. While the work in all stations was somewhat depressed, so that the year was one of trial, it was also in larger measure a year of triumph. "Not a friendship has been broken," wrote Mr. Gulick, "not an unpleasant word has been spoken or written to us by the many Spaniards whom we count among our friends."

Upon the declaration of war it seemed wise to transfer the staff of American missionaries and all the pupils of the International Institute across the frontier to Biarritz in southern France. The move was accomplished without the loss of a single pupil, without objection from the government or protest from parents, and with only two days' interruption in the routine of the school. One reason for this surprising escape from ill treatment or even reproach by the Spaniards during

the excitement of war times was doubtless the fact that during the detention of Admiral Cervera with a host of Spanish prisoners at Portsmouth, New Hampshire, Mrs. Gulick, then on furlough in the United States, at once visited them, and by her knowledge of their language, her grace of manner, and warmth of affection for the Spanish people, was able to do them kindnesses, abundantly reported in letters sent to the homeland.

For five years Biarritz was thus maintained as headquarters until the way opened, not only for return to Spain, but for establishment at Madrid. At length in October, 1903, an estate being secured on a suitable and commanding site, and the buildings remodeled, the Institute was reestablished at the center of Spanish life. The rejoicing over this return was clouded by the fact that just prior to it the body of Mrs. Gulick, who had worn herself out in her endeavors for the school, was carried from London to Madrid to find its last resting-place near the new home of the Institute which was to be her monument, and for whose upbuilding she gave her life.

The success of this school was recognized as marking a new era in the history of Spain; its students went forth as conscientious and earnest Christian young women to become influential factors in the remaking of Spanish life and thought. It is estimated that not less than 15,000 children, not to mention adults who have been taught in night schools, have come under the instruction and influence of the teachers trained in the work for girls in the Boarding School and Institute. And it is to be recognized that the women of Spain hold the key to the situation. The reason why at Bilbao the missionaries were kept seeking for four years to secure a room for a chapel was, as one of the landlords frankly said, "because of the women. They do not wish to be undeceived. If we should let any room to you, they would make us so miserable with their complaints and outcries that our lives would not be worth living." It was the same story in Madrid. The opposi-

tion of aristocratic ladies, with the powerful influence of the Queen Regent behind them, even so late as 1898, and despite the upheaval of the Spanish War, prevented the beginning of Protestant efforts in the capital, forcing the government to violate the very laws it sanctioned. As the priests ruled the women and the women their husbands, it came to pass that the priest was master of the situation; to break the force of his domination it was necessary to reach the womanhood of Spain.

Growth of Religious Freedom

Thus by the twofold agency of church and school, always the reliance of Protestantism, the kingdom of Spain has become slowly permeated with a new spirit. If the priesthood and the aristocracy kept a tight hold in the metropolitan districts, yet, as one of the most popular Spanish writers of the present day, living in close proximity to the American Board's mission in San Sebastian, said as the war of 1898 was breaking out, "In Spain Protestantism is getting possession of the provinces." As the early fear and hatred of Protestants passed away, even Roman Catholic parents often showed a decided preference for mission schools and a new attitude of respect and even regard was shown, sometimes in public ways, for Protestants. A drama written by a well-known novelist of the country, about 1900, held up to ridicule the spirit of ignorant and hypocritical fanaticism and, in spite of clerical anathemas, overflowing audiences applauded it to the echo. Thus in the midst of a growing spirit of liberalism the evangelical movement pushed its way.

The Christian Endeavor idea caught the Spanish heart. Forty-six societies existed in the country in 1904, and in 1908, when the third national convention of the Christian Endeavor societies of Spain was held in Barcelona, no Protestant meeting-place could accommodate the delegates who filled even the large theater of the city, as they came from fourteen different provinces. Mr. Gulick declared that no such evangelical

meetings had been held in Spain since the days of the Visigoths in the fifth century.

Two Schools Instead of One

In 1906, as the scope of academic work in the International Institute for Girls had been broadened, new courses having been added with the establishment of the institution in Madrid, the corporation decided to take into its own hands the management of the collegiate course, so that there came to be two institutions, which, though continuing on the same location, occupying jointly a part of the buildings and conducting some exercises together, were yet distinct in management and aim, the Woman's Board yielding to the Institute, which thus took charge of the higher courses, the corporate name, while adopting for its own school the descriptive title of Normal and Preparatory School for Spanish Girls. This separation was made complete in 1910 by the removal of the latter school to Barcelona.

In One Generation

A review of the Board's operations in Spain during this period, though not presenting many startling accomplishments, is altogether inspiring when one considers the situation and what has been wrought, the intense prejudice of Spain's traditions, the power of her aristocracy almost altogether arrayed against the mission; withal, the ecclesiastical authority bitter in its opposition, and fighting for its very life against the awakening liberal spirit in the nation and coming to be reflected in the government. Put with such conditions the record of limited equipment with which the mission has carried on its work: throughout most of the time but one ordained missionary and his wife, Dr. and Mrs. William H. Gulick, with a few unmarried women as helpers in the teaching force; the appropriations of the Board scarcely more than covering the maintenance of its missionaries, with added sums from the Woman's Board for the aiding of the higher Girls' School and of some schools of lower grade; yet this little company, by the blessing of God, has been able to

render an immense and strategic service in meeting the new spirit of civil and political freedom with the vision of religious liberty and evangelic faith.

Austria

With Freer Hand

The decade beginning with 1880 opened auspiciously for the Board in Austria. An unjust and oppressive law which compelled those who left the Roman church to have their children baptized by the priest was then annulled. Moreover, permission was now given to the evangelical community to form a *verein,* or union, which might secure a hall for religious services. Through the *Verein Betanie* thus organized to hold Bible lectures, evangelical Christians in Bohemia could do many things as a religious body which they could not yet do as a church. Local authorities also in many places were becoming more friendly and in some cases willing to recognize on official documents the Free Reformed Church of Austria. In spite of occasional interference, ground was being gained each year.

After all, the heaviest difficulty came from the depleting of the mission. The withdrawal of Mr. and Mrs. Adams, who felt compelled to return to the United States in 1882, together with that of Mr. and Mrs. Schauffler the year following, because of Mrs. Schauffler's ill health, left Mr. Clark, in the fresh bereavement of his own home, the only missionary on the field. While the mission was thus desperately straitened, Christian work in the United States became the gainer, as Mr. Schauffler was made the effective superintendent of the Congregational Home Missionary Society's work for the Slavs, and Mr. Adams and his family rendered similar service to the Bohemian population of Chicago. From that time on, the reflex influence of the Austrian Mission upon the immigrant problems of the United States has been close and helpful.

Mr. Clark, thus left alone, was happily able to make his home with Dr. and Mrs. H. S. Pomeroy, who became also

colaborers for a while during their residence in Prague, and who, during the absence of Mr. Clark in 1884, were ready to take entire charge of the mission. Not only reduced forces, but also reduced grants from the Board's scanty treasury, compelled a restricted undertaking. "Work does not break men down," protested the missionaries, "half so rapidly as the cutting down of estimates."

Freed from the necessity of providing some usual departments of mission activity, the Board was able in Austria to give especial attention to promoting Christian literature. As there were still difficulties in the way of public meetings and institutional religion, it was the more urgent to distribute the printed Word, and the colporter became an important adjunct of this mission. Great care had to be taken even in this quiet method of publishing the gospel, as petty officials were often ready to arrest a zealous colporter, and persecution even to the point of violence was not unlikely. The mission newspaper, *Betanie*, and other publications were distributed by the tens of thousands, carrying their message not only through Bohemia, but oversea to such cities as Chicago and Cleveland. Book stores at Prague and Gratz were important distributing centers. Sunday-school lesson papers found a ready market, and the post-office became a missionary agency, as friends in Great Britain and Germany made use of it in spreading Christian literature. It was also arranged that Bohemian emigrants on their way to America should be furnished before they embarked with a Testament and some other religious reading.

Spreading the Gospel

Another way of obtaining indirectly what could not be accomplished by open approach appeared with the Young Men's Christian Associations, the first of which was founded in Prague in 1886 with seventy members. Even this unecclesiastical organization was with difficulty got under way. But immediately it proved so successful that others were established until, by 1907, there were

Some Allies and Alleviations

sixteen of these associations. A Young Women's Christian Association was ventured upon in 1898, and such schools as the Krabschitz Institute for girls, the Evangelists' School, and the Brünn Home for training young women for teachers and Christian workers, all under the care of native evangelical pastors, were closely associated with the mission. Mrs. Clark was instrumental in the opening in Prague of a Rescue Reform Home for women, the only one of its kind in that part of Europe, meeting a terrible need of Austrian life.

By 1890 it was plain that greater freedom for work had come. Opposition was not ended; a petition was circulated in 1888 to have the parliament in Vienna put a stop to missionary work. But so wisely had foundations been laid that no local interference was now attempted. Religious meetings still had to be of private character; those who attended them came by invitation; children of school age were excluded. Yet some rights had been secured, as by a bill which allowed the securing of houses in Prague or anywhere in Bohemia for Bible study and Christian worship. Young Men's Christian Associations, also, could be established wherever ten suitable young men could be found to petition for them. Where the missionaries were best known nearly all that they asked for was now uniformly granted them by the officials.

Some Enlargements

In 1891 Rev. John S. Porter was added to the mission, a welcome arrival to the Clarks, who had held the ground alone for a decade, and making possible entrance into a new field in Moravia. From this time on the growth became more rapid and substantial. Prague was still the only station and the center of all the work, but there were thirty outstations, including those in its suburbs. Some of these outstations, like Pilsen in western Bohemia, soon became very influential. At Husinetz, the birthplace of John Huss, the new chapel was located in the very garden of his boyhood home. In this village but a little while before hardly a Bible could be found, and the officials, angered at the return

of Protestantism, posted policemen with guns and bayonets in front of the home of the native teacher to keep all but members of the church from attending services.

A mission in three provinces of southern Bohemia, which had been supported by a zealous Scotchman, upon the death of its superintendent was transferred to the American Board as the Alpine Mission. An eager call from Hungary and the opportune return of two Slovaks from America led in 1895 to the entering of that field.

There were now many more opportunities for work than could be met and the resources of men and money were heavily overtaxed. The service of the Bohemian pastors was most encouraging to the missionaries and showed them to be not only able but faithful men, wise and efficient in their ministry. Characteristic of another line of help was the gift of a liberal Scotch friend, which secured a building for the Young Men's Christian Association in Vienna in 1900, and also a dwelling for a teacher. If it had not been for these benefactors and helpers coming from outside the Board, a large share of what was being accomplished would have been impossible. The *Los von Rom* movement, as it was called, though largely political in its origin and course and tending rather to infidelity than to faith, yet made accessible a multitude who a few years earlier would have been unwilling to listen to any Protestant teaching.

On the Wings of the Wind

It was marvelous how the seed was carried in all directions from that single center of Prague. A striking instance of the sort appeared in the founding of a new congregation soon after 1900 at the city of Lodz, in Russian Poland, where had gone a young man connected with the Board's mission, as clerk for a business house. Finding himself in the midst of a population of 200,000 Bohemians, he began by inviting some of his fellow clerks to his room on Sunday to sing Christian hymns in their own tongue. Little by little, friends came with them until a deep religious interest

was awakened. In 1902 a church was organized, at first supported mainly by evangelical Christians in St. Petersburg. It was distinctively a church of young men, with a Y. M. C. A. worker from Prague as their first pastor. Other congregations followed, a second church was organized, a Protestant headquarters secured, with a little timely aid from the American Board, and thus a new and independent center of evangelistic life was established in Russia.

In the same way churches were formed in the city of Vienna; one in Hungary, near the Servian frontier; one in Brünn, in Moravia; several at other important centers. It is this scattering abroad which is spreading the gospel quickly and effectively through all the empire and, indeed, in the lands beyond. And the work has not been killed at the center by this quick outbranching. It is now housed in a new Gospel Hall, costing some $20,000, adequate not only for church services, but for the work of the important Y. M. C. A., the gift, not of the American Board or of friends in this country, but of one who has watched and loyally aided the work from Scotland. And its constituency, if kept fewer in numbers by the removals, is alert and zealous. For in Austria not only pastors and missionaries, but church members, count themselves to be messengers of light to others. Here, also, the Christian Endeavor Society has been a fruitful influence in the church life; its members have interpreted their pledge as calling them to win others to Christ, and have made systematic and even house-to-house canvasses among their acquaintances and friends on the errand of the gospel.

The work of the missionaries is now largely that of counsel and inspiration, as the twenty-four churches of this mission have arranged to push the evangelization of their land, revising their confession of faith and preparing rules for formal organization. And scattered over the field are no less than thirty colporter evangelists, the number having been greatly increased by the action of the National Bible Society of Scotland, which

was aided for some time in its operations by Dr. Clark, and at length put into his hands the direction of all its colporters, with their extensive work of distributing the Scriptures and Christian literature through Bohemia, Moravia, and South Austria.

Thus within a generation, in the face of intense opposition and carrying what seemed crushing burdens of depleted ranks and reduced grants, this indomitable mission has worked its way to a strong and effective establishment. The mother church at Prague reached self-support in 1894; its devotion and generosity have since been developed by large gifts, not only to new fields in its own empire, but to the support of a missionary in China. When Mr. Adams preached his first sermon in Prague, he faced but a few people, gathered with hesitancy and by invitation, in his own parlor. In returning there on a visit in 1899 he preached to three crowded congregations, a striking witness to the change which had been wrought.

Mexico

Reorganization and Advance

The American Board has not been accustomed to abandon missions because of persecution or even of massacres. The assassination of Mr. Stephens, though temporarily disturbing, did not shake its purpose to take part in the evangelizing of Mexico. In 1882, the same year in which the Northern Mexican Mission was opened, after earnest effort to enlist a Mexican band, Rev. and Mrs. M. A. Crawford were sent to reorganize what was then the Western Mexican Mission at Guadalajara. Reenforcements, including the Howlands and the Bissells, followed the next year. Upon arrival Mr. Crawford found that the fruits of the previous work were divided between an independent enterprise of Mr. Watkins and the mission of the Southern Methodists, and as Mr. Watkins, though no longer a missionary of the Board, continued to remain in the field, despite all efforts to act in

THE AMERICAN BOARD
MISSION TO MEXICO
Stations: Parral
Out-stations: Guerrero
Railroads:
Steamship Lines:
Cable Lines:
0 50 100 200 300
English Statute Miles
THE M. N. WORKS
Longitude 106 West from 104° Greenwich 102°
MEXICO
UNITED STATES
GULF OF MEXICO
LOWER CALIFORNIA
Gulf of California
Pacific Ocean
Gulf of Campeche
YUCATAN
TROPIC OF CANCER
El Paso
Juarez
Chihuahua
Hermosillo
Parral
Guerrero
Fuerte
Las Cuevas
Batopilas
Zaragoza
Aldama
Madera
Moctezuma
Rancho Nogal
Jimenez
Ciudad Porfirio Diaz
Sabinas
Nuevo Laredo
Monclova
Sierra Mojada
Cuatro Cienegas
Escalon
Reata
Matamoros
Brownsville
Monterey
Saltillo
Montemorelos
Linares
Tampico
Victoria
Matehuala
Mazapil
Durango
Rio Grande
Zacatecas
Venado
Ciudad del Maiz
San Luis Potosi
Aguas Calientes
Rio Verde
Guadalajara
La Barca
Irapuato
Celaya
Queretaro
San Juan del Rio
Tula
Pachuca
Tulancingo
Tuxpan
Tecolutla
Mexico
Toluca
Puebla
Orizaba
Jalapa
Vera Cruz
Cordova
Alvarado
Tehuacan
Zacualpan
Popocatepetl
Matamoros
Colima
Manzanillo
Uruapan
Zamora
Lake Chapala
Sayula
Ameca
Tlajomulco
Tepic
Las Tres Marias
San Blas
Rosario
Escuinapa
Mazatlan
Culiacan
Altata
La Paz
Magdalena Bay
C. S. Lucas
C. S. Lazaro
Cosala
Papasquiaro
San Ignacio
San Juan de Guadalupe
Guanceve
Torreon
Lerdo
El Oro
Mapimi
Sandia
Mesa de Topolobampo
Sinaloa
Alamos
Navajoa
Sta. Rosalia
Batopilillas
Jesus Maria
Cumuripa
Corral
Guyamas
Cedros
Tiburon
La Colorado
Ures
Arivechi
Cumpas
Arispe
Oputo
Guazavas
Galena
Cuchuberachi
Ascencion
Terrazas
Magdalena
Santa Cruz
Nogales
Ciudad
Bahia Vizcaino
Austin
Houston
Port Arthur
Baton Rouge
Galveston
San Antonio
New Orleans
Mississippi R.
Mobile
Rio Grande
Progreso
C. Catoche
Merida
Ticul
Valladolid
Cozumel
Campeche
Frontera
Carmen
Corosal
San Felipe
C. Ambergris
Turneffe I.
Belize
BRITISH HONDURAS
Gulf of Honduras
HONDURAS
Puerto Barrios
GUATEMALA
Quezaltenango
La Puerta
Salina Cruz
Juquila
Tehuantepec
Juchitan
Tuxtla
San Cristobal
Isthmus of Tehuantepec
Oaxaca
Tlaxiaco
Chilpancingo
Mexcala
Choapam
San Juan Bautista
Tecpan
Acapulco
Sihuatanepo
Union
Huamuxtitlan
Iguala
Taxco
Cuernavaca
Tetecala
Jojutla
Cuautla
Amecameca
Puente Nacional
Jalapa
Misantla
Papantla
Tuxpan
Tampico
Soto la Marina
Tamaulipas
Sierra Madre Oriental
Sierra Madre Occidental

peace and good-will toward these other brethren, there was some friction and an unhappy division of the small Protestant community. But a footing was secured and work quietly and tactfully begun. Little by little, misunderstandings were overcome, good feeling and even cooperation attained, and the field was amicably shared by a missionary force, none too great at best for the abundant need and opportunity.

The new stir in the land was nowhere more manifest than in Guadalajara, through which railway lines were now connecting the Gulf and the Pacific, St. Louis, and the City of Mexico. The Mexican government was in full sympathy with all movements for intellectual as for commercial and material advance and was prepared to protect the Protestant missionaries in their work. The situation in Mexico was quite different in this respect from that in Spain or Austria. Ignorance and superstition were still to be reckoned with, and a jealous priesthood was prepared to resist at every point, yet no organized or open hostility was anticipated.

Lines of Work

There were the usual first tasks: to find locations; to learn the language; to get acquaintance and win attention and confidence. The aim was at first almost entirely evangelistic, by preaching in chapels as soon as they could be secured, by visits in the homes, by neighborhood meetings, and by distribution of papers and tracts. Fear and opposition were soon aroused. On the front of some houses, even of the well-to-do, was posted the notice, "Praised be the holy name of Mary, this house is Christian; here no blaspheming is allowed." The priests threatened with excommunication even those who tarried in the street to listen by the chapel door.

After the first curiosity wore off the dead formalism of the popular religion was painfully evident. Though glibly pious, with all their language and every action woven in with religious forms, the Mexicans seemed to have lost the sense of religion. It was almost impossible to inspire with reverence people who

greeted one another on the street by such baptismal names as Trinity, Conception, Jesus, Saviour. Persecution for a time increased as progress was made; those who declared themselves Protestants at once lost friends and patronage. But no personal violence was offered, and secret friends of the mission were found wherever its messengers went.

New locations were undertaken as reenforcements came; in 1884 the important city of Parral, second only to Chihuahua, in northern Mexico; in 1886, Hermosillo, in the state of Sonora, on the Gulf of California, destined to become the headquarters for an important section; Labaca, near Guadalajara, was occupied by the Bissells. Native preachers were beginning to be used, and Christians in the little churches at the centers were being sent out for village work. An important factor in the evangelistic work at this time was the paper called *El Testigo* (The Witness), which later, under the editorship of Mr. Howland, became the organ of the Christian Endeavor Society in Mexico, when that organization came to bless missionary work in this land also.

Educational Development

Public education was now so developed in Mexico that it was not necessary for the mission to undertake such a system of schools as in many other lands. Yet some Christian education was plainly demanded, as the state schools rigorously excluded all religious instruction, and the sentiment of the people was quite indifferent to it. A day school was in operation at each of the mission centers by 1886, under native instruction, while Mr. Howland at Guadalajara was conducting a training-school for young men, the modest beginning of a theological school.

It was soon clear that the mission's greatest need was a native agency — capable preachers and teachers to carry the spirit and knowledge of the free gospel far and wide from these centers. The national schools could not furnish the needed training; so that the mission was compelled to establish some higher schools of its own, particularly for the girls. Miss

Haskins soon had a thriving girls' boarding-school at Guadalajara (Instituto Corona), while Mrs. Eaton was maintaining one for girls in Chihuahua (Colegio Chihuahuense); Miss Prescott also enlarged her work at Parral from a day school to one of higher grade (El Progreso).

The important event of 1890 in the northern section was the establishment, with the New West Education Commission, of a theological training-school at Ciudad Juarez, just across the Rio Grande from El Paso, and under the charge of Rev. A. C. Wright. Picked men, recommended by different missionaries, were brought here from all parts of the mission for this special training. As the necessities of the case required the furnishing of preparatory courses for boys and short courses for some older men who intended to go out as evangelists, there was great variety in the ages of the students and in the character of their studies. To encourage self-help, a carpenter's shop and printing press were added to the equipment and proved so valuable that they became fixtures, the only features of industrial work in a mission which otherwise maintained simply evangelistic and educational departments. In 1895 two of the graduates came back to the training-school to take the place of the American teachers. Within five years of its founding, nine men who had been in this school for a longer or shorter time were serving acceptably Mexican congregations, and students during their course were acquiring practical experience in evangelistic work by visiting jails, selling Christian books, preaching on the streets, and bringing people to the church services at the mission center.

Consolidation and Concentration

The union of the Northern and Western Mexican Missions, in 1891, marks the beginning of what may be called the building period of the mission. New churches were being organized and better houses of worship constructed. Two commodious and attractive buildings had been dedicated; one at Chihuahua, the other at Guadalajara, each attracting new attention to Protestantism in

its region. In general a more substantial and thoroughgoing enterprise was emerging.

There was no attempt to increase the number of stations; from seven they have been reduced to six by the end of the period, with only four occupied by resident missionaries. The missionary force numbers two less now than then, but the native preachers and teachers have increased and the churches have doubled in number, advancing from eleven to twenty-two.

Missionaries were now busy working out into the several states in which the stations were located, opening up new points and new lines of activity. Educational work in particular was demanding increasing attention. In 1901 the training-school, for some time occupying the buildings of the Congregational Education Society in El Paso, was removed to Guadalajara, as it was felt that the location on the northern border of the republic was too remote. In its new home the school opened auspiciously under the care of Messrs. Howland and Wright, and with over thirty students the first year. They came from all sections of the republic, some young men walking nearly 1000 miles in order to fit themselves for Christian work among their own people, and knowing that the school was not free, but that they must earn their way while they studied.

The girls' boarding-schools of the Woman's Board were also at this time enlarging their service, and the common schools were proving popular with the Mexican people, parents in many cases preferring them for their children to the free government schools.

An Outreaching Mission

Although with the beginning of the new century the mission was so depleted by sickness that it was difficult to maintain all departments, the evangelistic work was pressed by the zeal of native Christians. It was not uncommon for fifteen or twenty young Mexicans to go out in groups for Christian service in the regions about the stations. Sunday-schools and Endeavor societies were also

flourishing, with the note of service continually emphasized. The rapid development of the country was adding at once to the attractiveness and the burden of this mission field.

The effect of the war with Spain in its bearing upon the American Board's work was perhaps more marked in Mexico than in Spain itself, inasmuch as opposition was aroused to the missionaries and furtively stimulated by the priests; yet this opposition soon passed and no permanent injury was done to the mission.

New regions and new lines of work were continually opening, as in the district round Hermosillo. In 1904 Mr. Wagner and a native assistant held services in twenty-five towns, ranging from 200 to 12,000 inhabitants; the missionary himself preached to some 1200 in these meetings, which were held in both agricultural and mining towns. It transpired that this mission in Mexico, supposed at the start to be simply for one people, was actually to extend to the people of many races. Americans and others coming into the country for commercial purposes were often almost unshepherded by any religious influences. Many of these foreigners had shown great kindness and good-will to the missionaries as they met them on tours, and were calling for English-speaking pastors. In the Mexican Sierra region in Sonora, out from Hermosillo, access was got to the Indians, the aborigines of the land, a race that had great possibilities, but was yet scarcely more than pagan, though counted as Christian through some contact with the Roman Catholic priests.

A surprising development of the war in the Transvaal was the settlement of a colony of the defeated Boers about fifty miles from Chihuahua, where they urgently asked the missionaries to secure them a pastor. Being sturdy Protestants, they offered not only a new opportunity for service, but a new source of help in the Christianization of the land.

A token of the progress made in developing a native evangelical Christianity appeared in the gathering of representative

Mexican pastors with the missionaries in the annual meeting of the mission in 1907 to consider with them all plans and questions affecting their common interests. Moreover, the churches were urged to form associations by which they should be more closely united and prepared for cooperative work. Upon the coming to self-support of some of the larger churches in the cities, generous giving was stimulated, not only for their own needs, but for the work of extension.

The Outlook

Liberalizing tendencies are becoming more and more apparent in Mexico. The missionaries and their work are growing in favor with all classes; they are recognized as benefactors of the country. Questions concerning the tenure of property, a somewhat difficult matter in view of the laws of the republic, have been solved by the organizing of a "holding company," to which the property in the various stations has been transferred. While it is still slow work to break over tradition and custom in this land where ninety-five per cent of the people are claimed by the Roman Catholic Church, yet in many large sections of the republic, where no religious services are held from one year to another, the more intelligent classes are slipping away from the Church's hold and even the common people are beginning to criticize and ridicule the practises of the church and the lives of its clergy. The need and opportunity for the Protestant mission are apparent, to stem the drift toward skepticism or indifference, and to lead to a reasonable and living faith those who have broken with the form of Christianity in which they were trained. The way is open to the missionaries, if only their hands are sustained and the needs of the growing enterprise in Mexico are wisely met.

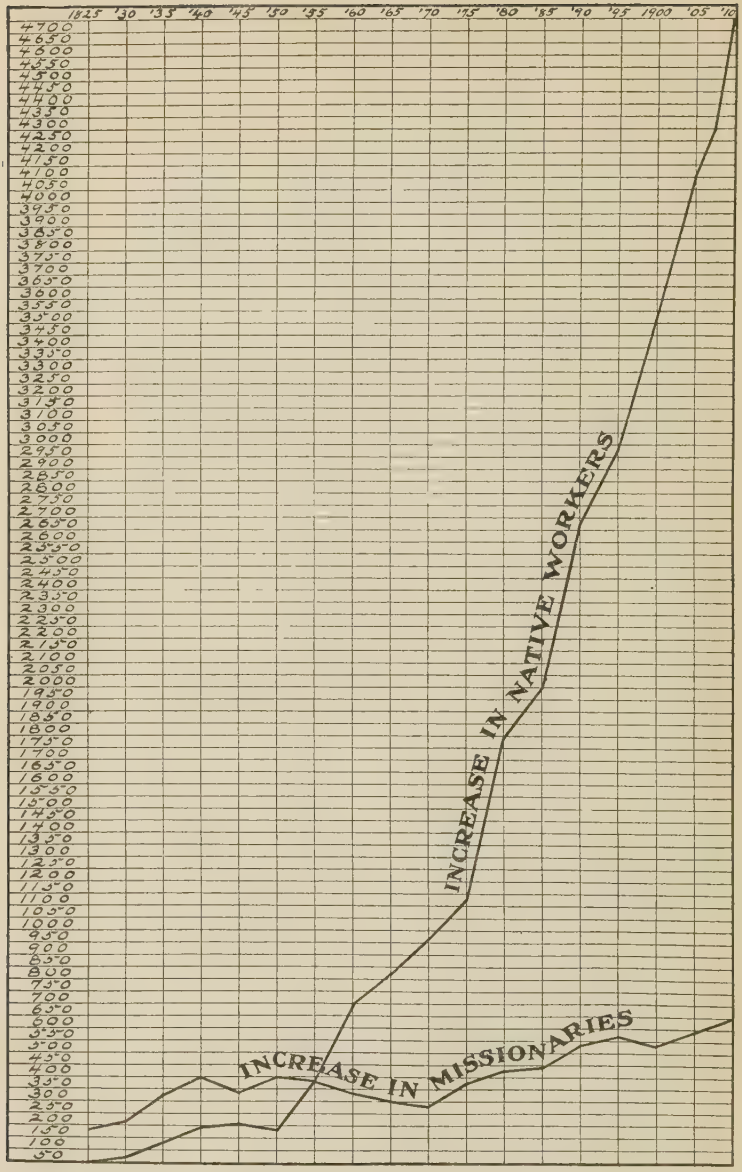


DIAGRAM SHOWING COMPARATIVE INCREASE IN MISSIONARIES AND NATIVE WORKERS SINCE 1825

Chapter XXVI

A NEW ERA

Abroad

Although this closing period of the Board's first century is eminently the period of increase, the growth has not been conspicuous in all ways. It has not been marked in the number of missions; twenty now as against seventeen in 1880, far fewer than midway in the century, and with but one mission (the Philippine) opened in the last twenty years. Neither has the large increase been in the number of missionaries, 597 now as against 416 then. Indeed, the roll of general missionaries has hardly been maintained; there are now but 178 ordained men as against 156 thirty years ago.

The Developed Missions

It is when we turn to the native factor in the mission enterprise that the figures begin to reveal the growth. Churches have more than doubled in the period, and church membership has increased more than fourfold. The native workers are now almost four times as many as in 1880, 4723 against 1269. Ordained pastors have more than doubled in number; lay preachers have increased fifty per cent; teachers have multiplied nearly fivefold, and other native workers over fourfold, the latter number indicating the diversified lines of work that have developed and the larger part that the natives have in them. In short, the era of native leadership and self-reliance in church and community has begun. It has yet scarcely more than begun in many of the stations and some of the missions; it is not advancing at uniform rate in all fields. But it has unmistakably arrived.

This new era is impressively reflected in mission finances. The principle of self-support for the native church and for the individual native in school and hospital was indeed admitted and somewhat practised during the middle period. But this generation has seen the principle come to wide acceptance and adoption. That the number of self-supporting churches is not yet so large as was expected by this time is due to the many catastrophes which have befallen in mission lands. In South Africa, in Turkey, in parts of China, in India, and Micronesia, immense and unforeseen obstacles have appeared in the path of self-support. In all of these lands, sometimes for long periods, the peoples for one cause or another have been able to do little more than keep body and soul together. Yet in spite of these adversities, gains have been made. More than a third of the churches in the Board's fields are now entirely self-supporting and many more provide for a large part of their expenses. Moreover, by the payment of tuitions and medical fees, or by contributions to schools and hospitals and by gifts of money for evangelistic work in their own districts or in regions beyond, the native Christians have shown not only their loyalty to Christ, but their sense of responsibility for the establishment of his kingdom. The native contributions in 1909, which include gifts of the people for all these objects, amounted to $276,715. As the average day's wage in these several lands is but twenty cents, this sum is equivalent to a gift of over two million dollars by so many of the wage-earners of this country.

Self-Support

Not only do these churches provide the money for their conduct, but they are more and more providing the men. Though the principle of native leadership has been accepted since Secretary Anderson's day, and though from that time the American Board has led the way among missionary societies in this method of developing missionary work, yet it has been in the last generation that the great advance has been made. It proved

Native Leadership

hard and in many cases seemed dangerous to put responsibility and authority into the hands of partially trained men, unaccustomed to leadership and undisciplined in exercise of power. The people themselves often preferred to have missionaries as their pastors rather than men of their own number. Church quarrels, such as will occur in lands where Christianity has been longer established, broke up some attempts at self-government. In spite of a sincere purpose to put the theory into practise, there was hesitancy at times when it came to the concrete case.

Even so other missionary societies have argued that the American Board was moving too fast in this direction and that by this policy an unfortunate separation was likely to come between the native churches and their pastors, left too soon to their own resources, and the missionaries, thus shut away from the people in institutional work. Yet little by little in all the missions the principle has won its way in practise either through pressure from the missionaries or upon them. Not only in the maintenance of a native pastorate, but beyond that, in a growing oversight of districts, in care of local and district missionary and church extension societies, and by the introduction of their leaders into conferences with missionaries, the churches which have grown from the American Board's work are in this new era actually becoming self-governing and self-propagating as well as self-sustaining.

The Missionaries' New Field

The advance of the native church and community into greater importance has not left the missionaries without a task. Rather has it enlarged the sphere of their influence. The new or more specialized lines of mission work which have appeared in this period, and, in particular, the higher educational institutions, which have been almost altogether the product of these years, have in some respects laid heavier responsibilities upon the shoulders of the missionaries.

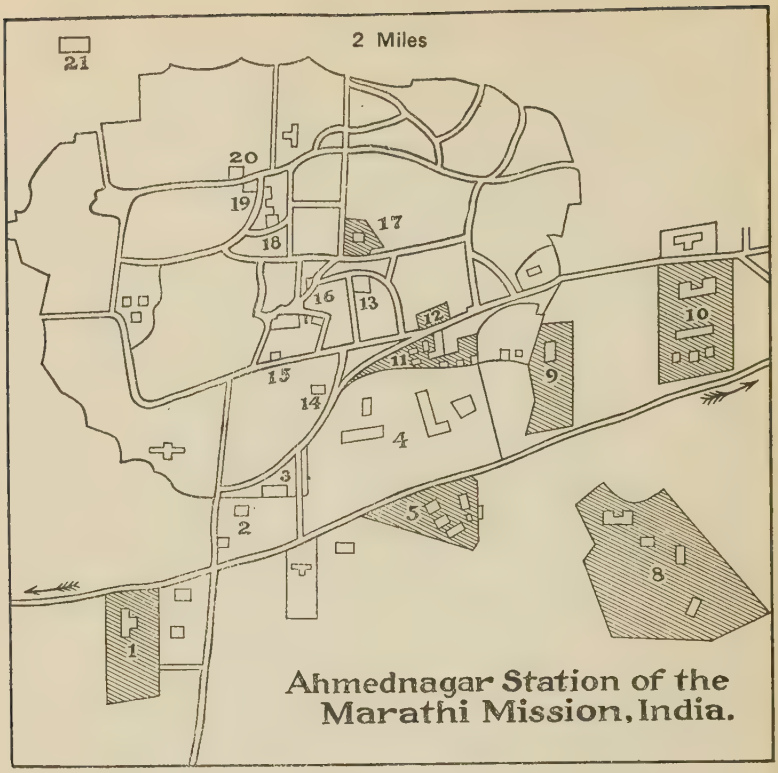
How greatly the field of education has opened as this depart-

ment has been reconstructed and systematized from kindergarten to professional school is shown in part by a comparison of figures. In 1880 no particular mention was made in the Board's annual reports of colleges or institutions of higher grade, save that they were roughly grouped under "station classes." At the end of the period there are distinctly classified fourteen theological and training-schools, with 210 students, and fifteen colleges, with nearly 1700 students. Girls' schools of high and boarding grade were recognized in 1880 and numbered thirty-seven; now there are 132, growing from 1300 to over 12,000 pupils, nearly a tenfold increase. The other schools of lower grade have nearly doubled, from 709 to 1335, with more than twice as many pupils, 56,000 instead of 25,000. The total number of pupils under instruction in all mission schools of various grades is now two and a half times as large as in 1880, 73,868 instead of 28,000. The last third of the Board's years of life has seen an increase from two to fourfold in this department alone.

A larger field of influence has opened for the missionaries in teaching and training this host of picked students and in putting on them the impress of their own Christian manhood and womanhood. As truly and as effectively evangelistic as the work of the touring missionary is this task of the missionary teacher. Here, too, the new native leadership is recognized, as graduates of these higher schools return to serve on boards of instruction or management. Soon the foreign teacher will become less necessary in many of these institutions; for some of them the time of native administration may not be remote.

The Spectacle of Christian Centers

The extent to which the native Christian forces have been developed during this period is most apparent when one sees the Christian community as it exists today in some of the older stations of the Board. Aintab, a city of 50,000 inhabitants in Central Turkey, the first point in all the region to be occupied by the Board in 1847, is now a stronghold of evangelical Christianity.



PLAN OF A REPRESENTATIVE MISSION STATION

The shaded portions indicate land owned by the Mission

1 BARTON HALL (UNION TRAINING SCHOOL DORMITORY)
2 MALIWADA HINDU GIRLS' SCHOOL
3 WILLIAMS HOUSE (THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY DORMITORY)
4 GIRLS' SCHOOL AND BUNGALOW
5 MISSION BUNGALOW, CHAPIN HOME (WIDOWS' HOME) AND ALICE HOUSE (GIRLS' DORMITORY)
8 MISSION BUNGALOW AND HARRIS HALL (HIGH SCHOOL DORMITORY)
9 MISSION BUNGALOW
10 MISSION BUNGALOW
11 MISSION BUNGALOW, OLD CHURCH, VERNACULAR GIRLS' SCHOOL, AND BIBLE WOMEN'S TRAINING SCHOOL
12 MISSION BUNGALOW
13 NEW FIRST CHURCH
14 THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY
15 JUNA BAZAR HINDU GIRLS' SCHOOL
17 MISSION HIGH SCHOOL, INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL, AND UNION TRAINING SCHOOL
18 ANANDA SADAN (SMALL BOYS' DORMITORY)
19 SECOND CHURCH
20 SALIWADA HINDU GIRLS' SCHOOL
21 NALEGAON HINDU BOYS' SCHOOL

It contains a Protestant community of 5000, has four self-sustaining evangelical churches, with native pastors, large congregations, Sunday-schools, Christian Endeavor societies, and all the activities of the modern church; is the home of a college with 200 students, with all but two of its seventeen instructors native to the country, and which sends out trained young men as leaders in the professions and industries of the land; supports an orphanage in which are being trained continuously 100 or more children gathered from the region, and a hospital serving the needs of all comers, not only from the city, but from nearly a score of towns and villages round about; and a girls' boarding-school from which teachers, Christian workers, and home makers go forth to become lights in their communities. In all the varied and stirring life of these establishments and of this Christian community the force of native life is powerfully felt. The women of the churches maintain Bible women and are now sending them even to Mohammedan homes.

And there is Ahmednagar, on the Board's oldest mission field in India, a veritable hive of industry, with a score of missionaries in residence, and a mission plant comprising twenty or more buildings scattered throughout the city as convenience and need have indicated. With these missionaries are associated 100 native workers in a bewildering variety of enterprises touching all sides of the life of the people. Churches, a theological seminary, high schools, vernacular schools of several grades, an industrial school with five organized departments of practical training, teachers' training-schools, girls' schools, a Bible women's training-school, a women's hospital and dispensary, and a rescue home for women are some of the items indicating how the Christian society at Ahmednagar has developed in numbers, importance, and power, and how the forces that are to make over and make Christian that section of India are becoming efficient. For from the theological seminary, through all these different fields of work

and training, the Christian Hindu labors side by side with the missionary for the uplifting of his people.

As one more illustration of native Christian leadership may be taken Foochow, whose story goes back to 1848, before the second period began. In this capital of a province containing over 20,000,000 people, and itself one of the foremost student centers of China, the Board has a station in which all lines of mission activity are in vigorous operation, and in them all, leading or aiding, are to be found the Chinese Christians. In the city and its suburbs are eighteen fully organized and growing churches. The first Christian Endeavor Society in China was organized here in 1885, and the spirit and method of this organization have been of great aid in developing Christian life not only in the churches, but in the schools, particularly those of higher grade. In the city a theological seminary combines foreign and Chinese teachers in equal number; the important boys' college, with over 250 students, two-fifths of them either Christian or of Christian parentage; the girls' college, with nearly 100 pupils in preparatory or college grade; a score of day schools, two evening schools, a kindergarten, and an efficient hospital, are not merely channels of missionary influence; through them, also, Chinese Christians are reaching their own people. Native pastors are ordained over all the larger and self-supporting churches; others assist the missionaries in supervising the smaller churches and in working in the outer districts. A strong evangelistic movement has been carried on in the city and out into the country villages by the Christians of these churches, in union with members of churches of other missions. There is a native home missionary society; Bible women are supported by the Christian women of the churches; evangelistic campaigns are conducted by a union of the churches of several missions.

While thus in many or all fields the missionaries have been turning over to native hands much that used to be their own daily care, new and significant doors of influence have been

opened to them. From the early years it has been given to some missionaries to come into acquaintance and influence with men of high position in the lands where they have toiled. But within the last period there has been far more general opportunity for the missionary body as a whole to affect the life of city, district, and sometimes of province and of nation through personal approach to men of power. The results of long years of foundation work have appeared in this way also, as the trusty character of the American Board and its representatives has come to be an article of faith with rulers and men of affairs throughout the mission fields.

A Wider Influence

By fidelity and helpfulness in times of famine or plague, of national disaster or local distress, the missionary of the American Board has won reputation as a faithful and competent friend and helper, until even those officials who do not accept his message will often rely on his judgment and his loyalty and turn to him for advice and support in the hour of need. In Japan, upon her advent into world politics and relations; in reconstruction days in China, after the Boxer massacres; in Micronesia, in the new colonial readjustments; in India, in her period of groping and unrest; in South Africa, revising her policy in native affairs; and, last of all, in Turkey, in the establishment of constitutional government and in the endeavor of local or provincial officers to carry out the provisions of the new government, again and again there has gone an appeal to the missionary for help.

This is not to say that the missionary is everywhere or in all things gaining a freer hand. In some ways his field has been more restricted with the new stirrings of racial pride or of national spirit; and through all the East the missionary has had to bear some of the odium that has been put upon the foreigner in the land. It has not always been so easy as of old to control students in the higher schools and colleges, or to guide the native brethren in the management of their Chris-

tian institutions. Yet, on the whole, the gains far outweigh the losses, and the missionary during this last period of the Board's history has come to occupy a stronger and more influential position, albeit, like the Board he serves, a less dominant and ruling position than of old. He recognizes that he must accept with new respect, not only the potential strength of the natives for whom he is working, but their actual readiness to share in responsibility. If he is to take his part henceforth as one among equals, it is none the less possible for him to rank first among equals by reason of his longer experience, his broader knowledge, and his deeper and more ingrained love. And as he is willing to lose his life in giving room and leadership to the natives whom he trains, he is really finding a larger life.

The Union of Missions

A further line of progress on the mission fields is in union effort. In this period very notably the different missionary societies have been getting together, not only in sympathy and good-will, but in cooperation. So rapid and strong has been this movement that there is now hardly a field of the Board's work adjoining that of other societies where some experiment in union is not being tried, and scarcely a year passes without a new project of this sort being reported. The great missionary assemblies, like the so-called Ecumenical Conference in New York, in 1900; the Madras Conference in India, in 1902; the Shanghai Conference in China, in 1907; the Edinburgh Conference held this very year, 1910, as they have reflected the temper of the mission fields, have immensely stimulated the disposition to devise plans by which with greater economy and concentration of power the needs of the whole field may be better served. So in one form or another, and in some missions in various forms, as already described, the work of the different societies is becoming more nearly one, and denominational and racial barriers are being broken down. In India they have even formed a National Home Missionary Society, wherein the

Christians of different communions and races are united for an evangelistic enterprise in their land that shall disregard the boundaries of mission or sect or district. In many ways it is apparent that so far as formal organization is concerned, missions and the mission Boards behind them are bound to decrease in conspicuousness and authority that in all lands the native Christian Church may increase.

At Home

Shoaling Waters

The years following the disposal of the Otis and Swett legacies were heavy for all concerned in the Board's management. While the annual outlay had been increased, the annual income was not growing proportionately. The expectation that by the time the bequests were exhausted and the new missions established the receipts of the Board would be enlarged through the growth of the churches at home and their advancing missionary interest had proved ill-founded. It became necessary to stop at once all further expansion of fields and to limit with increasing stringency the expenditures of the several missions. The burden of debt was either pressing or threatening through all this decade.

A Committee on Extra Gifts devised a plan in 1891 for raising an additional $100,000 during the year, themselves pledging one-fourth of it. And the receipts for 1892 did reach $840,000, as against $824,000 in 1891 and $762,000 in 1890. But the following year they dropped to $679,000, never reached $750,000 again for a decade, and showed violent fluctuations from year to year. By special efforts of the Committee of Nine and a generous promise from Mr. D. Willis James of a conditional $25,000, a debt of $166,000 in 1894 was cleared away before March, 1896. The campaign for raising this debt proved once more the love and loyalty of the Board's constituency. The rush of gifts in the last three days, when it looked as though the effort might fail, carried the amount quite above the sum needed.

In the strenuous efforts of these years to make the receipts match expenditures and to awaken the churches to the requirements of the growing enterprise, several new plans were devised. In 1894 Cooperating Committees were appointed to aid the district secretaries in the cultivation of their fields. Composed of representative men of the denomination, clergymen and laymen, these committees have ever since been of great service in devising and pressing new methods of approach to the churches. In 1898 the Forward Movement was inaugurated under the conduct of an Advisory Committee, appointed by the chairmen of the several Cooperating Committees. The Forward Movement was designed to supplement the ordinary lines of cultivation; its particular plan was to interest individuals, single churches, and groups of churches, in the support of assigned missionaries. This endeavor, pursued for three years with vigor and success by Mr. Luther D. Wishard, was at length, in 1905, merged into the general work of the Home Department and linked with other new plans for bringing the churches into more direct touch with the mission fields and to a keener sense of responsibility for their maintenance. So successful has this plan proved that now almost every missionary of the American Board and many of those sustained by the Woman's Boards are being supported by some church, individual, auxiliary, or group of auxiliaries.

New Methods and Machinery

The Board had by this time gotten far away from its early system of numerous districts and agencies through the country. Instead of the eight district offices of 1835 and the six at the time of the semi-centennial, on the seventy-fifth anniversary there was one in New York and another in Chicago; an agency on the Pacific coast was organized as the third district office in 1903. Woman's Boards were now conducting a systematic solicitation of gifts far beyond anything attempted by the auxiliaries and agencies of early days.

Increasing attention was being paid to publications as a

means of reaching contributors. In 1897 a low-priced missionary paper, *Congregational Work*, was started by a union of the denominational missionary societies, with a paid subscription list of over 104,000 names. As the first enthusiasm for the paper wore away and the churches ceased to subscribe for their members *en bloc*, this number was more than cut in two. Yet through all its history *Congregational Work* appealed to a distinct and large constituency and carried to them a monthly report of the home and foreign missionary work of the denomination. In 1909, when the several home missionary magazines were merged into one, the promoters of the new magazine felt that in the interests of that publication they must withdraw from the support of *Congregational Work*, and it was thereupon discontinued.

The *Missionary Herald* has been maintained and recast during the period to conform to the advancing standards of magazine work, and, though its circulation is less than in the days when there were fewer lines of missionary information, it still has a large and important circle of readers and is the Board's most constant and reliable agency of promotion. A variety of smaller publications, occasional or periodical, was put forth; sketches of different missions; annual summaries; the Envelope Series; and in the last part of the period the Pastors' Series, Quarterly Bulletins, and other special leaflets and pamphlets were devised for different classes. The American Board Almanac, begun in 1886, was an original contribution to missionary periodical literature. With its summaries of the year's statistics for all foreign mission Boards, and its wealth of classified information as to American Board affairs, it has proved a welcome handbook both within and without the circle of the Board's supporters. *Life and Light*, the monthly organ of the three Woman's Boards, has won a large and influential place among the women of the churches, while *Mission Studies* of the Woman's Board of the Interior has covered in the same way its more limited district. The

Mission Dayspring, jointly conducted by the American Board and the Woman's Boards as a children's paper, has served well its special field. Various books, like the well-known *Ely Volume*, Dr. Laurie's labor of love through which he exploited the large service of the Board's missions to the general cause of human welfare, with various lives of distinguished missionaries of the Board, and, more lately, authoritative works by several missionaries on the lands where their fields lie, have helped to spread information and to awaken and sustain a growing interest in the work of the Board.

A Solidifying Business

The days in which a few men could transact the business of the American Board, write the letters, and keep the records in autograph, and make their slow journeys by stage or boat to visit different parts of the country, were now far past. The Board's multiplied affairs and the increased demands upon its officers required the introduction of new and approved business methods and apparatus. By the removal of "the Rooms" from the corner of Somerset and Beacon Streets to the new Congregational House at 14 Beacon Street, Boston, in 1898, the Board secured more commodious quarters and accelerated the work of the several departments, which were then reorganized. Simply as a business house it was now conducting a large enterprise. In 1895 sixty-nine shipments were sent from the Rooms to eighteen different ports, aggregating nearly 2000 packages, and valued at over $50,000. Through all changes the prestige of the Board, its financial standing, the trustworthiness of its missionaries, and the stability of its plans and undertakings, were unshaken, and each year brought to it added confidence both on the fields of its work and in the homeland. The bills of exchange sent out by the Board were in all its missions regarded as financial paper of highest grade; not only the formal contract, but the word of a representative of the Board was counted as good as gold.

The great and increasing burden in the home administration

of the Board at the middle of this period was the securing of the necessary funds. During the financial depression of 1897 and for the remaining years of the century the supplying of the needs of the treasury became desperately hard. Receipts fluctuated so widely as to make the heart swing from hope almost to despair.

Financial Strain

Meanwhile there was dire exigency on many of the fields, and these years of financial shrinkage at home were years of cruel strain abroad. Massacre and depression in the Turkish missions, famine and pestilence in India, war between China and Japan, a religious reaction in the latter country, which threatened the defection of the *Kumi-ai* churches and the temporary loss of the Doshisha; war again (the Spanish-American), affecting work not only in that empire, but in Micronesia; the overwhelming Boxer uprising in Northern China and Shansi, the rebellion in Zululand, and the temporary alienation of the Christian community there, — all combined to lay upon the supporters and administrators of the Board's work a fairly crushing burden of care and anxiety.

That the Board was able to weather this storm, which seemed to break from every quarter at once, and to come through it all without losing a mission or hardly a station, and with no impairment of its financial credit or of the large confidence of its supporters at home and the peoples for whom it was laboring abroad, is a tribute to the wisdom of those who guided its affairs, but even more a witness to the sustaining and delivering grace of God, who in every crucial hour has wrought wondrously for the Board's relief.

In 1903 the Twentieth Century Fund was started, its purpose being to equalize receipts from legacies year by year, the sums accruing in the years of larger bequests being so treated that part of the gain is held to relieve the years when the receipts fall below the average. In the same year, 1903, a Department for Young People and Education was organized under Mr. Harry Wade Hicks, called for this purpose from

the service of the Young Men's Christian Association to an assistant secretaryship, and by whom were devised courses of mission study and other measures for strengthening the tie between the youth of the churches and their foreign missionary board.

Mr. Rockefeller's Gift

In the midst of these struggles to lift the receipts of the Board so as to prevent either further retrenchment or renewed debt, a controversy was precipitated that for a time added to the burden. Upon intimation from sources near to Mr. John D. Rockefeller that he might be interested in the work of the Board, since some of his widespread charities had been given in similar lines, a presentation of its higher educational work had some time before been made to him. After interviews and correspondence with the appointed almoners of Mr. Rockefeller's philanthropies, in February, 1905, came the promise that he would give to the American Board $100,000 for definite objects, mainly educational. Upon the acceptance of the gift and its appropriation the money was paid over as it was needed.

When the receipt of this sum, the largest so far coming to the Board from a living donor, became known through acknowledgment in the *Missionary Herald*, protests were made to the Prudential Committee from ministers and laymen, asking that the money be declined or returned, on the ground that the business methods of the Standard Oil Company, of which Mr. Rockefeller was president, were commonly believed to be immoral and injurious. These protests were at once carried into the field of open and popular debate, with sharp conflicts of opinion.

The real questions at issue were: Did the acceptance or solicitation of this gift imply an endorsement of the Standard Oil Company's business methods or any judgment as to Mr. Rockefeller's personal character? Did it compromise the ethical standards which a Christian missionary society should maintain? Did the reception of a gift bestowed in this way

bring the receiver into any silencing partnership with the giver? On these questions, concerning which high-minded and clear-sighted men in the Board's constituency took opposite views, no formal answer was ever rendered by the Board. Public discussion soon drifted to a host of matters more or less allied. In the minds of many of the disputants the issue reached far beyond the case in hand, so that they seemed little concerned with its facts. Many misleading impressions prevailed, such as that the Board had observed an unusual secrecy in the case of this benefaction until the donor had demanded that he should have due credit for it, whereas the proceedings in the solicitation, acceptance, and acknowledgment of this gift were such as had been followed before and have been pursued since in the securing of large gifts from individuals.

When the case was presented at the annual meeting in Seattle, in 1905, in the question whether the procedure of the Board's representatives should be disapproved or allowed, a preliminary canvass had showed that the great majority of the corporate body justified the Committee's position. The majority of a committee appointed at that meeting to consider the matter took the same ground; but after free discussion it was voted to lay on the table both their report and the modified adverse report of the minority, the determining of the issue thus being left with the Prudential Committee.

Since then no further action or public discussion upon the question has been undertaken by the Board. But upon further conference between some individuals, members of the Prudential Committee, and certain of the protestants, it was tacitly understood among them that the Board in soliciting gifts would seek to show consideration for the convictions of those who had been grieved over the course taken.

This third period of the Board's hundred years is notable for the changes which have come in the list of those to whom its administration has been committed. Almost every office

has had as many occupants in the last thirty years as in the seventy years preceding. It is impossible even to mention with briefest characterization the several officials and committeemen who have directed or executed its policies during the time. In an Appendix to this volume will be found their names, which, quickened by the fortunate memory of some readers, or touched by the historic imagination of others, will become eloquent with the record of loving and loyal service such as money cannot purchase or business interest command.

Change of Personnel

Dr. Mark Hopkins was still in the president's chair in 1880 and until his death in 1887. Then came a decade of Dr. Richard S. Storr's diplomatic and brilliant leadership, followed by Dr. Charles M. Lamson's brief term of two years, closed with his lamented death in 1899. During the years since, the president has been Samuel B. Capen, LL.D., the century closing as it began with a layman in the president's chair. Six vice-presidents have served during this period, though the term of E. W. Blatchford, Esq., covered nearly half the years.

Of the eighty-one men who have served on the Prudential Committee since the foundation of the Board, forty-four have been in its counsels during this last period. A new rule, adopted in 1893, limiting the possible term of consecutive service on the Committee to nine years, is in part accountable for this more rapid change. Yet the quickened step and shorter service is to be recognized in every department. Of the twenty-two who have served in one or another secretarial position during the hundred years, ten have come to their task during the last thirty years and six have in that time left the service.

While the effect of new rules has been to enlarge and broaden the corporate membership, the tendency does not seem to be to increase the proportionate number of members at the annual meetings, nor has it yet quickened markedly the interest and loyalty of the members or of the churches which have the right to nominate them. Nevertheless, it is believed that a

new and important tie has been secured between the constituency of the Board and the administration of its work.

The Missionary Awakening

Despite such disturbances in its affairs at home and abroad as have been recounted, the American Board is solidly based today. It is far better known and more highly regarded at the close of this period than it was at the beginning. Interest in its work was never so general or so keen as now. Many influences have contributed to this end. The hosts of immigrants coming to these shores from all lands, together with the enlarging of our borders and increase of our relationship as a nation, have compelled the American people to think about the rest of mankind. It is known to everybody now that "there are men beyond the mountains." It is beginning to be recognized that after all the world is one body, with many members; when one suffers, all suffer; when one advances, all must advance. Moreover, the Board's missions have been more generally studied and more closely observed than in the earlier periods. Not only have deputations from the Board visited, in some cases more than once, most of its mission fields, but numerous ministers and laymen have come back from travels with a new vision, to report to their churches and friends what they themselves have seen of mission work. If this closer contact has robbed the mission lands of some of the romance that pertains to the unknown and the far away, it has made the work being done for them better appreciated and more commanding.

The annual meetings have shown this increasing regard for the Board. While they were largely attended and earnest in the early part of the period, as at the Diamond Jubilee in 1885, in Boston, or just afterward in the years of theological controversy, when the platform of the Board became the field of an exciting debate, a steady growth in enthusiasm has been manifest in the gatherings of these later years; notably in the Haystack Centennial meeting at North Adams and Williamstown, with its unfading impression upon all who were

present and the wider public who read the story of that great occasion, but also in such memorable assemblies as that in Hartford, in 1901, when a debt of $102,000 was lifted amid great rejoicing; at Oberlin, the following year, when the Chinese martyrs' monument was dedicated; at Seattle, in 1905, when the Pacific coast received a fresh baptism of missionary interest; at Cleveland, in 1907, in union with the home missionary societies and the National Council in a notable series of sessions; at Brooklyn, in 1908, and Minneapolis, in 1909, registering the rising tide of missionary faith and purpose.

New Potencies

Moreover, great contributory forces for foreign missions have been at work in America during the latter half of this period of the Board's history. In quick succession have come the organization of the Young People's Society of Christian Endeavor (1881), the Student Volunteer Movement (1888), the Young People's Missionary Movement (1902), the Laymen's Missionary Movement (1906). All these agencies have stimulated mightily the foreign missionary spirit in the land: the Young People's Society of Christian Endeavor, though not primarily a missionary society, having loyally turned the vast energies it has awakened toward missions as a commanding business of the Christian Church; the Student Volunteer Movement sounding through the colleges and universities the challenge to the world's last and greatest crusade, and bringing thousands of young people to devote their lives to missionary service; the Young People's Missionary Movement, educating the youth in the churches by such mission study and missionary giving as will produce a loyal and trained supporting body for the missionary forces at the front; finally, the Laymen's Movement, springing from the enthusiasm of the Haystack Centennial, born in prayer and personal devotion of a little group of earnest Christian men, and effecting in a few years a superb league of the Christian manhood of America bent upon energizing the Christian Church for the systematic evangelizing of the world.

In close alliance with all these organizations, and seeking to serve them as well as to be benefited by them, the American Board has felt their stimulus to its work both in the securing of missionaries and of their support. Within the bounds of its particular denomination also, as the period closes, is recognized a stronger and more general missionary devotion. The Joint Missionary Campaign of 1909 in the interests of all the national Congregational missionary and benevolent societies not only relieved the debts of three of them, including the American Board, but effectively pressed the National Council's Apportionment Plan of benevolence upon the minds of the constituency. As a result in this closing year, 1910, by a spontaneous uprising of the laymen and the prompt cooperation of the new Congregational Brotherhood, a most significant effort is being made to unite as never before the churches of this order in a loyal, systematic, and comprehensive endeavor to meet their nation-wide and world-wide responsibilities. In the furtherance of these plans, as in the gains from them, the American Board has had an honorable share. With it originated the suggestion of the joint campaign of 1909, and its officers and constituency generally have been heartily committed to the new policies and plans, thus seeking to exalt missions to their rightful place of importance in the life of the Church.

The Outlook

If Carey in the day of beginnings could say, when asked as to the prospects, "Bright as the promises of God," the American Board at the end of its first century can make its forecast, not merely by the word of the Book, but as well by the signs that God has written in his sky. With a larger, more intelligent and aroused constituency at home than ever before in the hundred years, with foreign missions recognized and approved by men in every station and walk of life, with pulpit and press ready to champion the cause of the once despised or forgotten missionary, with a world open everywhere save in a few remote corners, with the tools for missionary enterprise in hand, an art of missions

as well as a science soundly established, and with such break-up of thought and habit among the ancient peoples as opens the way to all teaching of better things, foreign missions have not only a chance but an opportunity and prospect such as was not dreamed of a generation, not to say a century, ago.

With old faiths dying slowly or more swiftly, with idols thrown into the streets and temples turned into schools, with a longing for education filling the far East and the desire for national and individual liberties leading to new ambitions and new relationships, every stir in the heavy mass, though it presents new problems and difficulties, challenges the ability and evokes the enthusiasm of all who are face to face with the situation. The signs of the times to those who look with the eyes of Christ upon this world for which He gave himself are inspiring beyond words or measures. The absorbing task of the Christian Church for this new century is to be the welding of the world in the Kingdom of God, wherein it shall appear that all nations are of one blood, of one capacity, and of one destiny in Jesus Christ. To this task of its second century the American Board turns with gratitude and praise for the past and with prayer and great hope for the future.

APPENDIXES

APPENDIX

STATISTICAL VIEW OF THE MISSIONS OF THE

Missions	When Established	No. of Stations	Outstations	Missionaries					Church Statistics					
				Ordained	Physicians and Other Unordained Men	Single Women	Wives	Total Missionaries	Places of Regular Meeting	Organized Churches	Communicants	Added by Confession, 1909	Adherents	Sabbath School Membership
W. Central Africa ...	1880	5	22	7	2	10	8	27	46	4	625	101	7,000	2,075
South Africa Zulu Branch	1835	8	23	8	1	7	8	24	166	26	5,837	480	16,620	2,305
Rhodesian Branch ...	1893	3	4	3	4	2	5	14	18	2	223	14	500	222
European Turkey ..	1859	5	51	13	—	6	11	30	57	19	1,454	90	4,047	2,512
Western Turkey ..	1819	8	98	20	6	29	25	80	126	44	4,704	143	16,771	10,981
Central Turkey ..	1847	4	56	8	2	19	9	38	46	33	5,561	87	15,228	24,479
Eastern Turkey ..	1836	5	109	12	3	16	15	46	84	45	3,050	140	14,132	7,134
Marathi	1813	8	135	14	4	16	18	52	172	57	7,016	270	1,452	8,030
Madura	1834	10	353	17	—	7	14	38	350	36	6,932	478	21,276	8,296
Ceylon	1816	6	23	3	4	4	4	15	48	20	2,028	93	1,231	4,335
Foochow ...	1847	5	104	10	4	16	10	40	111	80	2,395	105	5,657	1,990
South China	1883	2	41	3	—	3	2	8	48	3	4,802	422	4,802	300
North China	1854	7	82	18	4	20	19	61	96	9	3,963	242	6,200	1,067
Shansi.....	1882	2	10	5	2	4	6	17	14	2	203	54	1,305	150
Japan[4]	1869	12	55	23	1	25	22	71	29	92	15,384	1485	25,000	9,000
Philippines..	1903	1	—	1	1	—	2	4	1	1	17	3	150	74
Micronesia[5].	1852	4	38	4	—	6	4	14	150	36	5,126	554	6,919	1,840
Mexico	1872	4	52	4	—	4	4	12	53	22	1,502	122	3,363	1,350
Spain	1872	1	16	1	—	4	—	5	16	8	301	36	1,510	1,014
Austria	1872	1	57	2	—	—	2	4	91	29	1,961	177	7,180	722
Totals .		102	1329	176[1]	38	198[2]	188[3]	600	1722	568	73,084	5096	160,343	87,876

[1] Of whom nine are physicians.
[2] Of whom eight are physicians.
[3] Of whom six are physicians.

I

AMERICAN BOARD FOR THE YEAR 1909–1910

Native Contributions	Native Laborers				Educational Statistics									Medical Work		
	Ordained Preachers	Unordained Preachers	Other Native Laborers	Total Native Laborers	Theological and Training Schools	Students for the Ministry	Colleges	Students	Boarding and High Schools	Pupils	Other Schools	Pupils	Total Number under Instruction	Number of Hospitals	No. of Dispensaries	No. of Treatments
$1,340	—	23	152	175	—	—	—	—	—	—	32	4,091	4,176	2	5	28,928
10,640	8	25	589	622	—	—	—	—	3	442	73	3,570	4,012	1	1	2,200
711	—	10	12	22	—	—	—	—	3	201	3	314	515	1	2	1,755
7,692	17	18	74	109	1	3	1	85	4	270	22	512	870	—	—	—
72,238	38	38	332	408	1	2	2	580	13	1,313	148	6,634	8,529	3	3	43,133
30,227	13	18	289	320	1	6	3	431	16	1,236	96	5,372	7,045	2	2	70,475
17,522	20	41	243	304	2	13	1	202	10	463	151	7,400	8,272	5	5	17,416
5,138	43	41	416	500	1	28	—	—	27	2,365	149	4,467	6,860	2	8	49,748
14,529	24	143	574	741	2	53	1	32	11	2,329	226	9,316	11,730	2	1	38,905
12,378	13	13	405	431	1	3	1	161	3	332	120	10,497	10,993	3	3	13,092
15,364	7	69	228	304	1	2	2	53	8	894	105	1,945	2,894	4	4	47,016
2,780	2	43	64	109	—	3	—	—	2	78	22	581	662	—	1	2,000
2,562	7	65	133	205	1	19	2	73	17	519	40	576	1,187	3	11	31,207
715	—	11	37	48	—	—	—	6	4	138	4	104	248	2	3	1,859
48,850	68	33	110	211	1	52	2	72	5	1,156	12	689	1,969	—	—	—
—	—	1	3	4	—	—	—	—	—	—	3	—	—	1	1	600
6,435	19	41	36	96	1	14	—	—	—	—	86	—	2,569	—	1	2,000
12,477	6	5	23	34	1	6	—	—	3	349	6	399	754	—	—	—
7,264	4	3	25	32	—	—	—	—	1	—	74	—	717	—	—	—
7,853	17	7	19	43	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
$276,715	306	648	3764	4718	14	204	15	1695	130	12,085	1372	56,467	70,451	31	51	350,334

[4] The *Kumi-ai* churches and the Japan Mission are too closely allied to permit of clear separation in statistics.

[5] These statistics are largely those of the previous year.

Appendix II

OFFICERS OF THE AMERICAN BOARD

ELECTED		SERVICE ENDED
	PRESIDENTS	
1810.	John Treadwell,	1820
1823.	Rev. Joseph Lyman,	1826
1826.	John Cotton Smith,	1841
1841.	Theo. Frelinghuysen,	1857
1857.	Rev. Mark Hopkins,	1887
1887.	Rev. Richard S. Storrs,	1897
1897.	Rev. Charles M. Lamson,	1899
1899.	Samuel B. Capen. [1]	
	VICE-PRESIDENTS	
1810.	Rev. Samuel Spring,	1819
1819.	Rev. Joseph Lyman,	1823
1823.	John Cotton Smith,	1826
1826.	Stephen Van Rensselaer,	1839
1839.	Theo. Frelinghuysen,	1841
1841.	Thomas S. Williams,	1857
1857.	William Jessup,	1864
1864.	William E. Dodge,	1883
1883.	Eliphalet W. Blatchford,	1897
1897.	D. Willis James,	1900
1900.	Rev. Henry Hopkins,	1906
1906.	Rev. Albert J. Lyman,	1907
1907.	Rev. Henry C. King.	
	PRUDENTIAL COMMITTEE	
1810.	William Bartlett,	1814
1810.	Rev. Samuel Spring,	1819
1810.	Rev. Samuel Worcester,	1821
1812.	Jeremiah Evarts,	1830
1815.	Rev. Jedediah Morse,	1821
1818.	William Reed,	1834
1819.	Rev. Leonard Woods,	1844
1821.	Samuel Hubbard,	1843
1821.	Rev. Warren Fay,	1839
1828.	Rev. Benjamin B. Wisner,	1835
1831.	Rev. Elias Cornelius,	1832
1832.	Samuel T. Armstrong,	1850
1832.	Charles Stoddard,	1873
1834.	John Tappan,	1864
1835.	Daniel Noyes,	1846
1837.	Rev. Nehemiah Adams,	1869
1839.	Rev. Silas Aiken,	1849
1843.	William W. Stone,	1850
1845.	William J. Hubbard,	1859
1849.	Rev. Augustus C. Thompson,	1893
1850.	William T. Eustis,	1868
1850.	John Aiken,	1865
1851.	Daniel Safford,	1856
1854.	Henry Hill,	1865
1856.	Rev. Isaac Ferris,	1857
1856.	Walter S. Griffith,	1870
1856.	Rev. Asa D. Smith,	1863
1857.	Alpheus Hardy,	1886
1859.	Linus Child,	1870
1860.	William S. Southworth,	1865
1863.	Rev. Albert Barnes,	1870
1863.	Rev. Robert R. Booth,	1870
1865.	Abner Kingman,	1877
1865.	Rev. Andrew L. Stone,	1866
1865.	James M. Gordon,	1876
1866.	Rev. Rufus Anderson,	1875
1868.	Ezra Farnsworth,	1889
1869.	Rev. Edmund K. Alden,	1876
1870.	J. Russell Bradford,	1883
1870.	Joseph S. Ropes,	1894
1875.	Rev. Egbert C. Smyth,	1886
1876.	Rev. Edwin B. Webb,	1900
1876.	Charles C. Burr,	1900
1876.	Elbridge Torrey,	1893
1878.	Rev. Isaac R. Worcester,	1882
1882.	Rev. Albert H. Plumb,	1903
1883.	William P. Ellison,	1903
1884.	Rev. Charles F. Thwing,	1886
1886.	Rev. Edward S. Atwood,	1888
1886.	Rev. Charles A. Dickinson,	1892

[1] Member of the Prudential Committee, *ex officio*.

ELECTED		SERVICE ENDED
1888.	Rev. Francis E. Clark,	1892
1889.	G. Henry Whitcomb,	1905
1893.	A. Lyman Williston,	1894
1893.	Rev. James G. Vose,	1899
1893.	Henry D. Hyde,	1897
1893.	James M. W. Hall,	1905
1893.	Rev. John E. Tuttle,	1894
1893.	Rev. William W. Jordan,	1904
1893.	Rev. Elijah Horr,	1904
1894.	Charles A. Hopkins,	1904
1894.	Rev. Nehemiah Boynton,	1899
1896.	Rev. William H. Davis,	1905
1897.	Samuel C. Darling,	1906
1899.	Rev. Edward C. Moore,	1908
1900.	Rev. Francis E. Clark,	1906
1900.	Edward Whitin,	1907
1903.	Rev. Arthur L. Gillett,	
1903.	Francis O. Winslow,	
1904.	Herbert A. Wilder,	
1904.	Edward M. Noyes,	
1904.	John Hopkins Denison,	
1905.	Frederick Fosdick,	1906
1905.	Arthur H. Wellman,	
1905.	Rev. Francis J. Van Horn,	1906
1906.	Charles A. Hopkins,	
1906.	Albert P. Fitch,	
1906.	Henry H. Proctor,	
1906.	Rev. Edwin H. Byington,	1907
1907.	Rev. George A. Hall,	
1908.	Arthur Perry,	
1908.	Rev. Lucius H. Thayer.	

Corresponding Secretaries

1810.	Rev. Samuel Worcester,	1821
1821.	Jeremiah Evarts,	1831
1831.	Rev. Elias Cornelius,	1832
1832.	Rev. Benjamin B. Wisner,	1835
1832.	Rev. Rufus Anderson,	1866
1832.	Rev. David Greene,	1848
1835.	Rev. William J. Armstrong,	1847
1847.	Rev. Selah B. Treat,	1877
1848.	Rev. Swan L. Pomroy,	1859
1852.	Rev. George W. Wood,	1871
1865.	Rev. Nathaniel G. Clark,	1894
1876.	Rev. Edmund K. Alden,	1893
1880.	Rev. John O. Means,	1883
1884.	Rev. Judson Smith,	1906
1893.	Rev. Charles H. Daniels,	1903
1894.	Rev. James L. Barton,	
1904.	Rev. Cornelius H. Patton.	

ELECTED		SERVICE ENDED

Assistant Corresponding Secretaries

1824.	Rev. Rufus Anderson,	1832
1828.	Rev. David Greene.	1832

Editorial Secretaries

1894.	Rev. Elnathan E. Strong (*Emeritus*, 1907),	
1907.	Rev. William E. Strong.	

Associate Secretaries

1906.	Harry Wade Hicks,	1908
1906.	Rev. William E. Strong.	1907

Recording Secretaries

1810.	Rev. Calvin Chapin,	1843
1843.	Rev. Selah B. Treat,	1847
1847.	Rev. Samuel M. Worcester,	1866
1866.	Rev. John O. Means,	1881
1881.	Rev. Henry A. Stimson.	

Assistant Recording Secretaries

1836.	Charles Stoddard,	1839
1839.	Rev. Bela B. Edwards,	1842
1842.	Rev. Daniel Crosby,	1843
1888.	Rev. Edward N. Packard.	

Treasurers

1810.	Samuel H. Walley,	1811
1811.	Jeremiah Evarts,	1822
1822.	Henry Hill,	1854
1854.	James M. Gordon.	1865
1865.	Langdon S. Ward,	1895
1896.	Frank H. Wiggin.	

Assistant Treasurer

1895.	Frank H. Wiggin.	1896

Auditors

1810.	Joshua Goodale,	1812
1812.	Samuel H. Walley,	1813
1813.	Charles Walley,	1814
1814.	Chester Adams,	1817
1817.	Ashur Adams,	1822
1822.	Chester Adams,	1827
1827.	William Ropes,	1829
1829.	John Tappan,	1834
1829.	Charles Stoddard,	1832

ELECTED		SERVICE ENDED
1832.	William J. Hubbard,	1842
1834.	Daniel Noyes,	1835
1835.	Charles Scudder,	1847
1842.	Moses L. Hale,	1868
1847.	Samuel H. Walley,	1876
1867.	Joseph S. Ropes,	1870
1868.	Thomas H. Russell,	1876
1870.	Avery Plumer,	1887
1874.	Richard H. Stearns,	1875
1875.	Elbridge Torrey,	1876
1876.	James M. Gordon,	1892
1876.	Arthur W. Tufts,	1892
1887.	Joseph C. Tyler,	1889
1889.	Samuel Johnson,	1897
1892.	Richard H. Stearns,	1896
1892.	Edwin H. Baker,	
1896.	Elisha R. Brown,	1901
1897.	Henry E. Cobb,	1908
1901.	William B. Plunkett,	
1908.	Herbert J. Wells.	

APPOINTED		SERVICE ENDED
	ASSISTANT SECRETARIES	
1903.	Harry Wade Hicks,	1906
1906.	Rev. Enoch F. Bell,	
1909.	Rev. D. Brewer Eddy.	
	DISTRICT SECRETARIES	
	(During the last fifty years)	
	Northern New England	
1856.	Rev. William Warren.	1878
	Southern New England	
1862.	Rev. Jonathan L. Jenkins,	1863
1864.	Rev. John P. Skeele.	1870
	New York City	
1854.	Home Sec. George W. Wood.	1870
	Middle District	
	(Formerly Central and Western New York)	
1863.	Rev. Charles P. Bush,	1880
1880.	Rev. Hiram C. Haydn,	1884
1885.	Rev. William Kincaid,	1888
1888.	Rev. Charles H. Daniels,	1893
1893.	Rev. Charles C. Creegan,	1909
1909.	Rev. Willard L. Beard.	
	Ohio and Indiana	
1863.	Rev. Elisha Ballantine,	1866
1866.	Rev. William M. Cheever.	1870
	Philadelphia	
1857.	Rev. John McLeod.	1870
	District of the Interior	
	(Formerly Northwestern District)	
1858.	Rev. Calvin Clark,	1861
1864.	Rev. S. J. Humphrey,	1891
1889.	Rev. Alverus N. Hitchcock.	
	Work in Nominally Christian Lands	
1872.	Rev. Joseph Emerson,	1875
1875.	Rev. Luther H. Gulick.	1876
	District of the Pacific Coast (1903)	
1903.	Rev. H. Melville Tenney.	
	Field Secretary (1888)	
1888.	Rev. Charles C. Creegan.	1893

Appendix III

INSTITUTIONS FOUNDED OR INSPIRED BY THE AMERICAN BOARD OR ITS MISSIONARIES AND NOW IN OPERATION BY ITS MISSIONS OR IN FRIENDLY ALLIANCE WITH THEM

Several of the lists here presented are quite incomplete; some conspicuously so, as, for example, the kindergartens. It has been impossible to secure full data for the purpose. Moreover, it has been impracticable to include all institutions on the Board's fields. A full list of the schools of boarding, high, and village grades would in itself require pages of space. But what is presented may serve to indicate the number and variety of organized and established agencies by which Christianity is being wrought into the life of the lands where the Board has carried it.

COLLEGES

North China College (Union), Tung-chou, China.
North China Union Woman's College, Peking, China.
Foochow College, Foochow, China.
Foochow Girls' College, Ponasang, China.
Lockhart Medical College (Union), Peking, China.
American College, Madura, India.
Jaffna College, Jaffna, Ceylon.
Doshisha, Kyoto, Japan.
Kobe College, Kobe, Japan.
International Institute for Girls, Madrid, Spain.
Syrian Protestant College, Beirut, Syria.
Central Turkey College, Aintab, Turkey.
Euphrates College, Harpoot, Turkey.
Anatolia College, Marsovan, Turkey.
Robert College, Constantinople, Turkey.
American College for Girls, Constantinople, Turkey.
Central Turkey Girls' College, Marash, Turkey.
St. Paul's Institute, Tarsus, Turkey.
International Institute, Smyrna, Turkey.

THEOLOGICAL SEMINARIES

Union Theological School, Impolweni, Africa.
Foochow Theological Seminary, Foochow, China.
North China Theological Seminary (Union), Peking, China.
Canton Training School (Union), Canton, China.
Marathi Mission Theological Seminary, Ahmednagar, India.
Madura Mission Theological Seminary, Pasumalai, India.
Theological Department, Jaffna College, Jaffna, Ceylon.
Theological Department, Doshisha, Kyoto, Japan.
Theological Department, Colegio Internacional, Guadalajara, Mexico.
Kusaie Training School, Kusaie, Micronesia.
Collegiate and Theological Institute, Samokov, Bulgaria.
Western Turkey Theological Seminary, Marsovan, Turkey.
Central Turkey Theological Seminary, Marash, Turkey.
Eastern Turkey Theological Seminary, Harpoot, Turkey.
Training School for Pastors, Mardin, Turkey.

HOSPITALS

Chisamba, Kamundongo, Mt. Silinda, and Durban, Africa.
Tung-chou, Pang-Chuang, Lintsing, Foochow, Ponasang, Shao-wu, Ing-hok, Taiku, and Fen-cho-fu, China.
Ahmednagar (Hospital for Women and Girls), Wai, and Madura (Albert Victor Hospital and Women's Hospital), India.
Manepay (Green Memorial Hospital), Inuvil (McLeod Hospital for Women and Children), and Karadive (Branch of Green Memorial), Ceylon.
Davao, Philippine Islands.
Van, Erzroom, Mardin, Diarbekir, Harpoot (Annie Tracy Riggs Memorial Hospital), Marsovan, Sivas, Talas (American Christian Hospital), Adana, and Aintab (Azariah Smith Hospital), Turkey.

DISPENSARIES

Bailundu, Chisamba, Ochileso, Kamundongo, Chikore, Mt. Silinda, and Durban, Africa.
Peking, Tung-chou, Pang-Chuang, Lintsing, Foochow, Ponasang, Ing-hok, Shao-wu, Taiku, and Fen-cho-fu, China.
Bombay, Ahmednagar, Rahuri, Vadala, Sholapur, Wai, Madura, Pasumalai, Battalagundu, Melur, Aruppukottai, and Dindigul, India.
Manepay, Inuvil, and Karadive. Ceylon.

Nauru, Micronesia.
Davao, Philippine Islands.
Sivas, Talas, Marsovan, Van, Erzroom, Mardin, Harpoot, Diarbekir, Aintab, and Adana, Turkey.

INDUSTRIAL SCHOOLS

Amanzimtoti and Mt. Silinda, Africa.
Ahmednagar (Sir D. M. Petit Industrial School), Bombay, Vadala, Sirur (Sir D. M. Petit Industrial School), Sholapur, and Pasumalai, India.
Tellippallai, Ceylon.
Sivas, Salonica, Marsovan, Samokov, Harpoot, Bardezag, Oorfa, and Aintab, Turkey.
Industrial work is maintained in all African missions, in boarding schools in India and Ceylon, and in orphanages in Turkey.

KINDERGARTENS

Peking, Tung-chou, Pang-Chuang, and Foochow, China.
Ahmednagar and Sholapur, India.
Kyoto, Maebashi, Kobe, Tottori, and Miyazaki, Japan.
Chihuahua and Parral, Mexico.
Van, Mardin, Harpoot, Erzroom, Talas, and Cesarea, Turkey.
Sofia, Bulgaria.
Kindergartens are provided in connection with many other schools in almost all fields.

PHILANTHROPIC ORGANIZATIONS

Orphanages in Bombay, India; Okayama, Kobe, Maebashi, and Tottori, Japan; Van, Erzroom, Harpoot, Aintab, Marash, Oorfa, Adana, Bardezag, Brousa, and Sivas, Turkey.
Homes for famine boys and girls in Ahmednagar, Rahuri, Vadala, Sholapur, Satara, and Wai, India.
Schools for the Blind in Bombay, India, and Kobe, Japan.
Homes for Widows, Ahmednagar and Wai, India.
Leper asylum, Sholapur, India.
Homes for ex-convicts in Tokyo, Kobe, Osaka, and Akiyoshi, Japan.
Home for Unfortunate Girls, Miyazaki, Japan.
Hanabatake Social Settlement, Okayama, Japan.
Factory Girls' Home, Matsuyama, Japan.
School for Wayward Boys, Tokyo, Japan.

SPECIAL TRAINING SCHOOLS

Normal Training School, Amanzimtoti, Africa.

Normal Schools at Ahmednagar, Pasumalai, and Madura, India, and Sivas, Turkey.

Normal Department in Chihuahua, Mexico.

Bible Women's Training Schools at Ahmednagar and Madura, India; Kobe, Japan; Foochow and Pagoda Anchorage, China.

Kindergarten Teachers' Training Schools at Sholapur, India; Kobe, Japan; Smyrna, Turkey.

Nurses' Training Schools at Foochow, Ponasang, and Peking, China; Madura, Ahmednagar, and Wai, India; Inuvil, Ceylon; Van, Marsovan, Cesarea, Aintab, and Harpoot, Turkey.

INDEX

A

Abbott, Dr. and Mrs. J. E., 416, 418.
Abeel, David, 108, 114, 116, 120.
Abeih, 99, 205.
Abenaqui Mission, 46, 186.
Adabazar, 102, 106.
Adams, Dr. and Mrs. Newton, 134, 135.
Adams, Miss A. P., 355.
Adams, Rev. and Mrs. E. A., 297, 463, 468.
Adams, Nehemiah, 307.
Adana, 410, 411.
Adolescence, period of, 140; day of small things, 140; feeling its way, 142; missionary motive, 143; Cornwall School, 144; agencies and auxiliaries, 145; financial problem, 146; *Missionary Herald*, 148; public meetings, 149; stimulus to others, 150; mother of five, 151; comity in missions, 151; growth from 1810–50, 153; inclusive organization, 154; an opening world, 155; missionary force, 156; development of missionary policy, 157; missionary organization, 158; mission growth, 159; superb leaders, 160.
Advance, 416.
Ægean Sea, 87.
Afghanistan, 156.
Africa, attempting, 124; a forbidding land, 124; first move, 124; staking out the field, 125; a disappointed hope, 127; opening the Gaboon Mission (1843), 128; pressing on, 129; French aggression, 129; the outlook, 130; Zulu Mission begun (1835), 132; characteristics of Zulus, 133; plan of the mission, 133; second step, 135; third attempt, 136; setting down to work, 136; winning their way, 137; more rapid growth, 138; the outlook in 1850, 138. (See also *Dark Continent, in the, New Fields* and *Southern and Central Africa.*)
African Congregational Church, 429.
Agricultural and Industrial Institute, 403.
Ahualulco, 302.
Ahmednagar, 29, 166, 329, 414, 416, 418, 424, 479.
Aintab, 106, 197, 198, 224, 319, 327, 388, 393, 395, 397, 398, 399, 405, 478.
Aintab, Girls' Seminary, 222.
Aitchison, William, 252.
Ak Hissar, 392.
Albania, 389.
Albany, 169.
Albert Victor Hospital, 422.
Albrecht, G. E., 362.
Alden, E. K., 307, 332.
Aleppo, 106.
Alexander, Rev. and Mrs. W. S., 292.
Allevia, 295.
Almanac, American Board, 485.
Alpine Mission, 466.
Amanzimtoti, 329, 429; Seminary, 284, 286, 427, 433, 435.
Ament, Dr. W. S., 375, 379.
American and Foreign Christian Union, 290, 291, 292.

American Bible Society, 222.
American Board — How the Board began, 3; conference at Andover, 3; the Bradford meeting, 4; earlier influences, 7; ardor and caution, 9; appointment of first missionaries, 13; their ordination, 13; their departure, 15; 124, 140, 141, 142, 145, 146, 150, 153, 159, 160, 229, 230, 305, 308, 485, 486.
American College for Girls, 389.
American Methodist Mission, 384.
American Missionary Association, 53, 116, 195, 348, 384, 396.
Amoy, 113, 119, 250.
Anatolia College, 391, 404.
Anderson, Lady, 397.
Anderson, Secretary Rufus, 88, 100, 104, 166, 307, 316, 320.
Andover, Mass., 3.
"Andover Controversy," 330.
Andrews, Miss M. E., 372.
Anti-opium decree, 380.
Anti-slavery, 52, 53.
Apaiang, 239.
Arabkir, 106, 406.
Arabs, Bedouin, 99.
Arch, John, 37.
Arkansas Mission, 39.
Armenia, 197, 385.
Armenia College, 224, 327. (See also *Euphrates College.*)
Armenian Church, First Evangelical, 105.
Armenian Relief Committee of America, 396, 397.
Armeno-Turkish, Old Testament, translation of, 103.
Arms, William, 156.
Arthington, Robert, 288.
Aruppokottai, 421.
Asaad es Shidiak, 84, 85.
Assyrian Mission, 209, 211.
Athens, 101.
Atkinson, J. L., 274.
Atwood, Dr. I. J., 380.
Atwood, Miss Harriet, 14.
Austria, 463. (See also *Christian lands, in nominally,* and *Papal lands.*)
Avedaper, 200.

B

Babajee, 29.
Bagster, W. W., 337, 338, 339.
Baikwa School, 276.
Bailundos, 336.
Bailundu, 337, 340, 437, 438, 439.
Bakeles, 279.
Balbodhmewa, 422.
Baldwin, T. A., 223; Rev. and Mrs. C. C., 260; the Misses, 453.
Ball, Dr. Dyer, 122.
Ballantine, Dr. W. O., 417, 422.
Bangalore, 425.
Bangkok, 114, 115.
Bansko, 214.
Baptism, change of views concerning, 19.
Baptist Missionary Society, 19.
Baptist Missionary Union, 150.
Barcelona, 293, 426, 462.
Bardwell, Horatio, 22, 23.
Barnum, H. N., 220, 398.
Barrows, J. H., 415.
Bartlett, Wm., Esq., 6.
Barton, Secretary J. L., 360, 383, 420.
Batak country, 117.
Bates, Rev. and Mrs. F. W., 342, 343.
Bath, Marquis of, 214.
Batticotta, 27, 28.
Bebek, 103, 106, 199, 217, 328.
Bedouin Arabs, 99.
Beirut, 82, 98, 99, 100, 101, 205.
Benguella, 337.
Bequests, Mrs. Mary Norris, 13; Otis, Asa, 315; Phelps, Anson G., 314; Swett, Samuel W., 325.
Berry, Dr. and Mrs. J. C., 265, 266, 275, 277, 355.
Betanie, 464.

Biarritz, 459, 460.
Bible House, 221.
Bible lands, reentering, 80; a new crusade, 80; the land to be possessed, 80; spying it out (1820), 81; Syrian Mission, 83; printing house at Malta, 85; presses transferred, 86; reaching the Greeks, 87; relocating fields in Turkey, 88; tour of Smith and Dwight (1830), 88; Constantinople at last, 89; beginning among Armenians, 91; a quick impression, 92; persecution begins (1839), 93; Nestorian Mission (1834), 94; the outlook, 94; mountain Nestorians, 95; progress in Urumia, 97; return to Syria (1830), 98; Druzes of the Lebanon, 99; seeing results at last, 100; Dr. King in Greece, 101; Armenian reformation (1840–50), 102; tested by fire (1844), 104; excommunication, 105; first Protestant church organized (1846), 105; spread of evangelicalism, 106; looking backward, 106. (See also *Turkey and the Levant* and *Nearer East, the.*)
Bible societies, 309.
Bible Teaching Band, 364.
Bible women, 181, 222.
Bibles, burning of, 295.
Bihé, 336, 337.
Bihénos, 336.
Bilbao, 457.
Bingham, Rev. and Mrs. Hiram, 57, 61, 67; Rev. and Mrs. Hiram Bingham, Jr., 236, 238, 242, 441, 448, 453.
Bird, Miss Isabella, 73.
Bird, Miss Susan, 378.
Bird, Rev. and Mrs. Isaac, 83, 88.
Bissell, Rev. and Mrs. H. M., 298; Dr. Julia, 422, 468, 470.
Bithynia High School, 404.
Bithynia Union, 220.
Bitlis, 392, 393.
Black, Rev. and Mrs. R. F., 454.
Blatchford, E. W., 490.
Bleeker Street Church, N. Y., 109.
"Blind Bartimeus," 75.
Blodget, Henry, 252, 260.
Bohemia, 297, 463.
Bombay, 18, 24, 34, 329, 416, 422.
Bombay, Christian Alliance, 182.
Bombay, First Church in, 424.
Bombay, Missionary Union, 25.
Bonney, Mrs. S. W., 257.
Borneo, Dyaks of, 118; end of mission, 119.
Bowker, Mrs. Albert, 311.
Boxers, 374.
Bradford, Rev. A. H., 360.
Bradford, J. R., 307.
Bradford, Mass., 3, 4.
Bradley, Dr. D. E., 114, 115, 116.
Brainerd, station at, 36.
"Brethren, The," 7.
Brewer, Rev. Josiah, 87.
Bridgman, Rev. E. C., 108, 109, 110, 111, 121, 122, 252, 256.
Bridgman School, 370, 371.
Brigham, J. C., 290.
British India and Ceylon, 165; new period, 165; new method required, 165; deputation of 1854–55, 166; restricting the schools, 167; establishing native church, 168; board's approval, 168; effect in India, 169; the bearing in Ceylon, 170; Arcot Mission (1851), 172; good witnesses, 172; struggle with caste, 174; substantial growth, 174; developing native leadership, 175; revival in Madura (1860–61), 176; development of mission, 176; upbuilding in Ceylon (1860), 178; Madras closed (1866), 180; woman's work for woman, 180; spirit of union, 182; widening influence, 182; famine and harvest, 183. (See

also *India and Ceylon, starting in,* and *Southern Asia.*)
Brookline, Mass., 263.
Brooklyn, N. Y., 454, 492.
Broosa, 88, 223, 393.
Browne, J. K., 399.
Bruin Press, 109.
Brünn, 298, 465, 467.
Bryan, Minister, 439.
Buckingham, Governor, 193.
Buenos Ayres, 155, 290.
Bulgaria, 212, 214, 389.
Bulgarian Bible Dictionary, 401.
Bulgarian Evangelical Society, 390.
Bunker, Rev. and Mrs. F. R., 343, 436.
Burma, 19.
Burr, C. C., Esq., 194.
Bush, Miss C. E., 386.
Bushnell, Rev. Albert, 279.
Butler, Elizur, 44, 45.
Butrick, D. S., 40.
Byington, Rev. and Mrs. T. L., 212.

C

Calcutta University, 424.
Calhoun, Simeon, 99, 203, 310.
Canadian Congregationalists, 333.
Cannibalism, 231, 246.
Canning, Sir Stratford, 104.
Canton, 113, 122, 253, 257, 349, 382.
Cape Palmas, 125, 126, 127, 128.
Cape Town, 136.
Capen, S. B., 490.
Caravan, sailing of, 15, 16.
Caroline, sailing of, 232.
Caroline Islands, 239, 240, 450.
Cary, Rev. and Mrs. Otis, 277, 362.
Case, Rev. and Mrs. H. E. B., 451.
Caste, obstacles of, 21, 174.
Caswell, Rev. Jesse, 114, 115, 116.
Cathcart, Miss L. S., 440.
Catholic ladies, junta of, 294.
Central Board of Foreign Missions, 151.
Central Turkey College, 224, 319, 327.
Central Turkey Mission, 386, 388.
Central Union Church, Honolulu, 452.
Cesarea, 200, 393.
Ceylon, 17, 22, 26, 27, 28, 170, 171, 178, 327.
Chaka, 132.
Champion, George, 134.
Channell, Miss M. A., 451.
Channon, Rev. and Mrs. I. M., 448, 452.
Chapin, Rev. Calvin, 6; F. M., 370.
Chapin Home, 416.
Cherokees, 36, 46, 186, 187.
Chicago, 318.
Chickasaws, 43, 46.
Chihuahua, 350, 471, 473.
Chikore, 345, 436.
Child, Linus, 307.
Chi-li, 370, 374, 380, 381.
China, edging into, 108; the call (1828), 108; mission begun (1830), 108; opening of work, 109; medical arm (1834), 109; a dark prospect, 110; tours of exploration (1836), 111; missionaries' patience, 112; opium war (1840), 113; Siam (1831), 114; located and at work, 115; winning royal favor, 115; transfer of the mission (1850), 116; exploring the East Indies (1833–34), 116; tour of Sumatra (1834), 117; a try at Borneo, 118; Borneo Mission under way (1838), 118; enlargement in China, 119; growing prestige, 121; slow progress, 121. In the empire of, 250; the door opens hard, 250; a disturbed country, 250; Shanghai opened (1854), 251; Canton closed, 253; a new era (1860), 254; Christianity's share in the change, 254; the call of the hour, 255; North China at last, 256; in the South, 257; into the interior (1870), 258; fanatic outbreaks recur, 259; steady gains

(1870–80), 260; the door of famine, 261. (See also *New Fields* and *Farther East, the.*)
Chinese leprosy, 228.
Chinese Repository, 109.
Chisamba, 340, 438.
Chiyuka, 438.
Choctaws, 38, 186, 187.
Christian Alliance, Bombay, 182.
Christian Choctaws, 45, 46.
Christian Endeavor, 415, 461, 492.
Christian Endeavor Society of China, 480.
Christian Endeavor Society of Mexico, 470.
Christian Herald, 402, 417.
Christian lands, in nominally, 290; early purpose, 290; four missions undertaken, 290; the attempt in Italy (1873), 292; beginning in Spain, 292; in the face of persecution, 294; a good accomplishment, 296; beginning in Austria, 297; driven to relocate, 298; a purer type, 299; mission to Mexico, 300; at Guadalajara, 301; at Monterey, 302; assassination of Mr. Stephens, 302; the need of trained workers, 303. (See also *Papal lands.*)
Christian Vernacular Education Society, 179.
Christian Witness, 422.
Church Missionary Society, 424.
Churchill, D. C., 418.
Cilicia, 399, 410.
Cincinnati, 318.
Ciudad Juarez, 471.
Clark, Miss E. C., 403.
Clark, E. W., 79; Secretary N. G., 231, 307, 319, 328; Rev. and Mrs. A. W., 297, 298, 299, 463, 464, 465, 468.
Cleveland, 492.
Coan, Rev. and Mrs. Titus, 61, 70, 71, 73, 78, 156, 231.
Cochran, J. G., 205.
Coffing, J. G., 215.
Colegio Chihuahuense, 471.
Colenso, Bishop, 284.
College Hall, 379.
Collegiate and Theological Institute, 213.
Committee of Nine, 483.
Committee on Extra Gifts, 483.
"Company of the New Covenant," 275.
Conger, U. S. Minister, 376.
Congregational Association, Dakota, 193.
Congregational Brotherhood, 493.
Congregational Education Society, 472.
Congregational Home Missionary Society, 463.
Congregational Work, 485.
Congregationalist, 416.
Connecticut, 8.
Constantine, Mr., 202.
Constantinople, 222, 385, 387, 388, 392, 393, 405, 410.
Constantinople Bible House, 221.
Constantinople Christian College, 217.
Constantinople Home, 327.
Cooperating churches, 309.
Cooperating committees, 484.
Corbin, Mr. and Mrs. P. L., 381.
Cornwall School, 144.
Crawford, Rev. and Mrs. M. A., 468.
Creek Indians, 46.
Currie, W. T., 340, 438.
Curse, by Maronite patriarch, 98, 99.
Cyprus, 87.

D

Dairyman's Daughter, 86, 93.
Dakota Indians, 46, 191, 194.
Dakota Mission, 195.
Dakotas, in the land of the, 186; reduction of Indian Missions, 186;

the Dakota field, 188; the Sioux war (1862), 189; the church in prison and in camp, 190; the reestablished mission, 192; church fellowship, 193; more Indian experiments, 193; maturing work, 194. (See also *Indian Trails, following.*)
Damon, Rev. F. W., 445.
Dark Continent, in the, 279; the Gaboon Mission, 279; its transfer in 1870, 280; the Zulu Mission (1850), 281; still slow and discouraging, 281; mission reserves (1856), 283; working hard, 284; a cheering decade (1860–70), 285; broadening the field, 287; tugging along, 288. (See also *Africa, attempting, New Fields* and *Southern and Central Africa.*)
Davenport, Iowa, 191.
Davis, Dr. and Mrs. J. D., 265, 269, 270, 273, 362.
Day of Prayer, 150.
Dayspring, 149.
De Forest, J. H., 274, 365.
Delaporte, Rev. and Mrs. P. A., 452.
Dennis, J. S., 334, 378.
Der Heratoon, 222.
Des Moines, 330.
Deutsche Hülfsbund, 406.
Diamond Jubilee, Madura, 491.
Diarbekir, 209, 406.
Dingaan, 133, 135.
Dionysius, Bishop, 84, 87.
District agencies, 484.
Dnyanodaya, 422.
Doane, Rev. and Mrs. E. T., 233, 441, 446.
Dodd, E. M., 198.
Dodge, W. E., 306.
Döhne, 287.
Dolphin, 65.
Doshisha, 272, 273, 353, 356, 361.
Doty, Elihu, 120, 251.
Doughty-Wylie, Major C. H. M., 412.
Druzes, 99, 100, 101, 204.
Dubé, James, 286.
Du Chaillu, Paul, 280.
Dudley, Miss J. E., 270.
Dunmore, G. W., 200, 210, 211.
Durban, 429, 431, 433.
Dutch Reformed Church, 150, 151.
Dwight, Timothy, 6; H. G. O., 88, 90, 91, 93, 103, 215.
Dwight, station at, 39.
Dyaks, 118.

E

East Central Africa, 341. (See also *Southern and Central Africa.*)
Eastern Turkey, 211, 387.
Eaton, President E. D., 373.
Eaton, Rev. and Mrs. J. D., 350, 471.
Ebina, Danjo, 367.
Ecumenical Conference, N. Y., 482.
Eddy, G. S., 419.
Edinburgh Conference, 482.
Edwards, Mrs. M. K., 286.
Eels, Cushing, 52.
Elbasan, 409.
Eliot, mission station, 38.
Ellis, Rev. William, 62, 230.
Ellison, Hon. W. P., 360.
El Paso, 472.
Elphinstone, Lord, 173.
El Progreso, 471.
El Testigo, 470.
Ely Volume, 486.
Embuscade, 75.
Emerson, Rev. J. S., 241.
Engonyameni, 431, 432.
"Enlightened Party," 221.
Envelope series, 485.
Enver Bey, 408.
Erickson, Rev. and Mrs. C. T., 409.
Erzroom, 102, 392, 393.
Esidumbini, 434.
Eski Zaghra, 213.
Ethiopian movement, 430.

Euphrates College, 224, 399, 406, 409. (See also *Armenia College.*)
Eustis, W. T., 307.
Evangelical Society of Geneva, 457.
Evangelical Union, 92, 220.
Evangelists' School, 465.
Evans, Miss J. G., 372.
Evarts, Jeremiah, 3, 4, 6, 140.
Everett, Edward, 201.
Everett, Mrs. J. S., 222.
Expansion, period of, 325; in income and outgo, 325; in administration, 326; in comprehensiveness, 330; in organization, 332; in aim, 334.

F

Factory Girls' Home, Matsuyama, 355.
Farmington, Conn., 9.
Farnsworth, Ezra, 307.
Farther East, the, 352; Japan — years of swift increase to 1888, 352; theater services, 352; an awakened empire, 353; still opposition and interference, 353; allied lines of work, 355; the climax reached, 356; the reaction in the next decade, 357; official opposition, 360; the Doshisha trouble, 360; growth under difficulty, 362; the reawakening, 363; change in government attitude, 365; effect of Russian war, 365; readjustment for advance, 366; China — the time for advance, 368; broadening lines of work, 369; effect of war with Japan (1894–95), 371; the Boxers, 374; their backing, 374; the massacres, 375; massacre in Shansi, 377; collapse at last of the Boxer movement, 378; reconstruction, 379; a decade of marvelous advance, 380; union movements, 383. (See also *China, edging into, Japan* and *New Fields.*)
Favre, Leopold, 397.
Fen-cho-fu, 346, 348, 377. .
Ferdinand, Prince, 390.
Fiske, Miss Fidelia, 97.
Fiske, Pliny, 80, 81, 82.
Flathead Indians, 46.
Fletcher, Miss J. E., 440, 449.
Foochow, 113, 120, 257, 259, 368, 370, 372, 373, 382, 480.
Ford, Dr. H. A., 280.
Foreign Missionary Society of the Western Reserve, 150.
Fort Berthold, 192.
Fort Snelling, 190, 191.
Fort Sully, 192.
Forward Movement, 364, 484.
Free Church of Scotland, 309.
Free Church Seminary, 435.
Free Reformed Church of Austria, 463.
Free Reformed Church of Bohemia, 299.
Frelinghuysen, Theodore, 153, 306.
Frere, Sir Bartle, 173.
Fukien, 369, 382.
Fukuin-sha, 355.
Fukuzawa, Mr., 354, 357.
Fuller, C. C., 435.

G

Gaboon Mission, 276, 281.
Gaboon River, 128, 129, 130.
Garguilo, 402.
Gates, L. S., 418.
Gazaland, 435.
Geog Tapa, 97.
George, son of king of Kauai, 64.
Gifts, Harris, J. N., 357; James, D. Willis, 483; Rockefeller, John D., 488.
Gilbert Islands, 246.
Gilson, Miss H. J., 436.
Glory Kindergarten, Kobe, 355.
Godavari Valley, 169.

Goodell, William, 15, 36, 83, 84, 85, 88, 90, 92, 103, 322.
Goodenough, H. D., 428, 432.
Goodrich, Chauncy, 370.
Gordon, M. L., 265, 268, 269, 310, 362; J. M., 307.
Gordon Theological Seminary, 372.
Gould, Miss A. A., 377.
Grant, Dr. and Mrs. Asahel, 94, 95, 96.
Grant, Sir Charles, 18.
Gratz, 298, 464.
Greece, 201.
Greek Evangelical Alliance, 389.
Green, Dr. S. F., 179.
Green, J. S., 49.
Greene, Rev. and Mrs. D. C., 265, 269, 278, 357.
Greene, Rev. F. D., 396.
Grey, Sir George, 284.
Greycloud, Rev. David, 194.
Gridley, Rev. Elnathan, 87.
Griffin, E. D., 4.
Grout, Aldin, 134, 135, 137; Lewis, 138, 281, 285, 287.
Guadalajara, 300, 301, 303, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472.
Guess, George, 40.
Guinea Coast, 125.
Gulick, Rev. and Mrs. L. H., 231, 232, 292, 293; Rev. and Mrs. O. H., 265, 266, 268, 445; Rev. and Mrs. W. H., 296, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462; Rev. and Mrs. T. L., 296, 456.
Gungunyana, Chief, 342.
Gutzlaff, Karl, 111, 112, 114.

H

Hadjin, 396, 397, 411.
Hager, Dr. C. R., 349.
Hale, Secretary, 5.
Hall, 12, 13, 19, 22, 24, 25, 26; Gordon, C. L., 192; C. C., 415.
Hamidieh, 387.
Hamlin, Cyrus, 103, 199, 212, 217, 328.
Hanabatake, 355.
Harada, President T., 367.
Hardy, Alpheus, 307.
Harmony, 15, 16.
Harpoot, 200, 217, 320, 327, 386, 388, 394, 396, 397, 406.
Harris, Hon. J. N., 357.
Harris, Hon. Townsend, 264.
Harris, Prof. and Mrs. J. R., 396.
Hartford, Conn., 492.
Hasbeiya, 100, 101, 202.
Haseltine, Miss Ann, 14.
Haseltine, Deacon John, 14.
Haskeay, 389.
Haskell, E. B., 400.
Haskins, Miss B. M., 471.
Hatti Humayoun, 196.
Hawaii, 321.
Hawaiian Bible, 78.
Hawaiian Evangelical Association, 443, 444.
Hawes, Joel, 83, 100, 104.
Haystack, Williamstown, 7, 8, 491.
Hazelwood, 189.
Hermosillo, 470, 473.
Herrick, Rev. and Mrs. H. P., 280.
Herrick, James, 176.
Hicks, Harry Wade, 487.
Hideyoshi, 263.
Hill, Henry, 307.
Hilo, 62, 70, 73, 78, 79.
Hindustani Scriptures, 21.
Hiram Bingham I, 448; *Hiram Bingham II*, 453.
Hoapiliwahine, 66.
Hobbs, Dr. and Mrs. S. L., 188.
Hokkaido, 355, 362, 363.
Holman, Dr. Thomas, 65.
Homes, H. A., 96.
Honan, 370.
Hong Kong, 113, 349, 373, 382.
Hopkins, Col. C. A., 373.
Hopkins, Mark, 306, 331, 490.
Hopkins, Samuel, 124.

Horoshima, 363.
Hou, Pastor, 369.
House, J. H., 400, 402, 403.
Howard, Gen. O. O., 193.
Howe, Miss A. L., 355.
Howland, Mr. and Mrs. John, 468, 470, 472.
Hsien Yü, 374, 377.
Hula, 228.
Hume, R. A., 417.
Hume, Mrs. R. W., 33.
Hungary, 466, 467.
Hunt, Phineas, 31, 256, 260.
Huntington, Gen. Jedediah, 6.
Husinetz, 465.
Huss, John, 465.
Hyde, C. M., 244, 249.

I

Ichikawa, 267.
Impanyezi, 135, 136.
Impolweni, 435.
Inanda, 136, 286, 427.
India, 17, 20, 23, 25, 26, 32, 33, 482.
India and Ceylon, starting in, 17; a cold reception, 17; rebuffed at Bombay, 18; heavier burdens, 19; the obstacle of caste, 21; the press and the school, 21; beginning in Ceylon (1816), 22; opening schools, 23; advance in Bombay, 24; advance on the mainland, 25; heavy losses, 26; educational work in Ceylon, 26; a boarding-school day in Jaffna, 27; higher education (1826), 27; a succession of revivals, 28; Madura (1834), 30; Madras (1836), 31; hard times, 32; looking backward, 33. (See also *British India and Ceylon* and *Southern Asia.*)
Indian National Congress, 422.
Indian Rights Association, 193.
Indian trails, following, 35; early efforts, 35; purpose of the Board, 35; Cherokee Mission opened (1817), 36; quick results, 37; reenforcements and outreaching, 38; mission to the Choctaws (1818), 38; the Arkansas Mission (1821), 39; developing the establishment, 40; some readjustments (1825), 40; new missions, (1826–27), 41; storm breaks, (1828), 42; persecution of missionaries, 44; the forced removal, 45; a new start, 46; disappointing experiences, 47; hard conditions, 48; Oregon Indians (1836), 49; Oregon massacre, 51; antislavery questions, 52; résumé (1850), 54. (See also *Dakotas, in the land of.*)
Inhambane Bay, 342.
Innsbruck, 298.
Instituto Corona, 471.
International College, Smyrna, 403.
International Institute for Girls in Spain, 459, 462.
Inuvil, 422.
Ireland, Rev. and Mrs. William, 138.
Ishii Juji, 356, 364.
Islands of the Pacific, 440; islands as colonial possessions, 440; quiet years preceding, 440; native leadership, 441; the other side, 442; in new locations and in old, 443; the Hawaiian Islands again, 444; Spanish oppression, (1887–90), 445; in the Truk lagoon, 447; the slough of despond, 448; the Spanish-American War, (1898), 450; Guam opened and closed, 451; Nauru, and Ocean Island, 452; obstacles and opportunities, 452; the mission to the Philippines, 454. (See also *Micronesia.*)
Isle of France (Mauritius), 17.
Italian Free Church, 292.
Ivory Coast, 127.

J

Jaffna, 22, 27.
Jaffna College, 179, 319, 327, 414, 424.
James, D. Willis, 483.
Janes, Capt., 274.
Japan, 263, 264, 352; in the empire of, 263; the gift of faith, 263; the door closed, 263; the door opened, 264; opening the mission (1869), 265; beginning work, 265; the year 1873, 267; medical work under way, 268; schools opened, 269; the beginning of churches, 271; Neesima and the Doshisha, 271; gaining ground, 274; broadening the work, 276. (See also *Farther East, the,* and *New Fields.*)
Japan Mail, 368.
Japan, northern, 350.
Japanese Publishing Society, 355.
Java, 114.
Jerusalem, 82.
Jessup, William, 306.
Jesuits, craft of, 297.
Jews, Spanish, 90.
Johannesburg, 428.
Johnson, J. G., 360.
Johnson, Stephen, 120.
Joint missionary campaign, 492.
Jones, Capt., 66.
Jones, J. P., 329, 415.
Jones, Miss Nancy, 342, 343.
Joseph and His Brethren, 129.
Joshu, 357.
Journal and Dayspring, 317.
Journal of Missions, 149.
Joyful News, 422.
Judson, Adoniram, 4, 7, 10, 11, 12, 17, 19, 76, 143, 144.
Judson, Miss Cornelia, 355.
Jugenbund, 453.
Juji Ishü, 356, 364.

K

Kaahumanu, 59, 63, 68, 69, 73.
Kalanimoku, 59, 73.
Kalgan, 259, 375, 377, 379.
Kalopathakes, Mr., 202.
Kama, 280.
Kamehameha, 57, 58, 68.
Kamundongo, 338.
Kanjundu, Chief, 438.
Kapiolani, 73, 74.
Kaumualii, 62.
Kekela, 231.
Kennedy, Rev. and Mrs. P. B., 409.
Keopuolani, 59, 62, 73.
Kerney, Commodore, 121.
Keskar, Dr. P. B., 416.
Kimberley, 428.
King Glass, 128.
King, Rev. Jonas, 82, 87, 88, 91, 101, 201, 202.
Kingman, Abner, 307.
Kingsbury, Cyrus, 36, 53.
Kirttan, 175.
Knapp, G. P., 387, 398.
Kobe, 265, 268, 270, 271, 355.
Kobe College for Girls, 363.
Kortcha, 403, 409.
Krabschitz Institute for Girls, 465.
Kumi-ai, 271, 353, 359, 361, 362, 365, 366, 367.
Kurds (Kuzzlebash), 223.
Kusaie, 440.
Kwangtung, 348.
Kwikwi, 338, 339, 340.
Kyoto, 265, 266, 273, 353, 354, 356,
Kyoto Training School, 273, 352.
Kyrias, Mr. Serastie, 410.
Kyrias, Miss, 403, 409.

L

Labaca, 470.
Lac-qui-parle, 189.
Ladd, Daniel, 88.
Lahaina, 62, 65, 66.
Lamson, C. M., 490.
Lancaster, Joseph, 36.
Laurie, Thomas, 97, 486.
Layard, A. H., 197.
Laymen's Missionary Movement, 492.

Learned, D. W., 362.
Leavitt, H. H., 276.
Leitch, the Misses, 422.
Leper asylum, 416.
Liebenzeller Mission, 453.
Life and Light, 485.
Liholiho, 58, 62, 63, 68.
Lincoln, President, 231.
Lindley, Daniel, 134, 136.
Lintsing, 370, 374, 377, 379, 382.
Litchfield, Conn., 8.
Loba, J. F., 420.
Lobdell, Dr. Henry, 210.
Lobu Pining, 117.
Lodz, 466.
Logan, R. W., 248, 441, 447, 448.
London Missionary Society, 10, 384, 425.
Los von Rom, 466.
Lovedale, 427.
Lovell, Miss H. M., 222.
Lyman, Joseph, 6; Henry, 116, 117.

M

Macedonia, 214, 389.
Mackinaws, 47.
MacLachlan, Alexander, 408.
Maclay, Dr., 260.
Madison, President, 36.
Madrid, 460.
Madras, 31, 180, 418, 482.
Madura, 30, 31, 169, 176, 184, 321, 329, 413, 414, 415, 424.
Madura Evangelical Society, 416.
Mahars, 30.
Malta, 85.
Mandans, 192.
Mangs, 30, 417.
Manissa, 223.
Marash, 217, 387, 393, 395, 396, 397.
Marathi Mission, 174, 182, 184, 321, 413, 415, 417, 419, 420, 422.
Marden, Henry, 225.
Mardin, 96, 217, 394, 405, 406.
Mar Elias, 207.
Maronite patriarch, curse of, 98, 99.
Maronites, 101, 204.
Marquesas Islands, 68, 230, 231.
Marsh, D. W., 209.
Marsh, Minister G. P., 201.
Marshall Islands, 240.
Marsovan, 198, 217, 391, 393, 396.
Martin, W. A. P., 254.
Martyn, Henry, 89.
Mar Yohannan, 94, 97.
Massachusetts, General Association of, 3.
Massachusetts Missionary Magazine, 148.
Matsuyama, 355.
Matteos, patriarch, 104.
Maturity, approaching, 305; enlargement of the organization, 305; the civil war, 307; valued allies, 308; withdrawal of cooperating churches, 309; woman's boards, 311; financial gains, 312; financial decline, 314; light in a dark sky, 315; broadening the home base, 315; policy abroad, 318; the missionaries, 321.
Maui, 70.
Maumees, 47.
Mauritius, 17.
McLeod Hospital, 422.
Means, J. O., 194, 336, 346.
Meigs, B. C., 22, 23.
Melsetter, 436.
Meng, Pastor, 369, 377.
Mennonite Church, 396.
Meriam, W. W., 212.
Methodist Foreign Missionary Society, 150.
Methodist Mission, 376.
Methodist Woman's Board, 384.
Mexico, 350, 468.
Micronesia, 227, 231, 235, 321, 440; efforts to withdraw, 228; withdrawal at last (1863), 229; mission of the Marquesas Islands, 230; Micronesian Mission (1852),

232; first missionaries arrive, 232; getting to work, 233; special hindrances, 234; progress notwithstanding, 235; the *Morning Star*, 236; plans for enlargement, 237; breaking ground, 237; the seed taking root, 239; in the Carolines, 239; enduring heavy trials, 240; still advance, 241; other *Morning Stars*, 242; progress in the '70s, 243; coming of age, 244; native leaders, 245; shadows, too, 246; pushing to westward, 246; the Logans on the Mortlocks, 248; readjustments by experience, 248. (See also *Islands of the Pacific.*)
Middletown, Conn., 149.
Mildmay Park, 309.
Miller, S. T., 337, 338.
Mills, S. J., 5, 7, 8, 12, 36, 56, 124, 290.
Milwaukee, 315.
Min River, 111, 260.
Minneapolis, 193, 492.
Mission Dayspring, 486.
Mission Reserves, 283, 430.
Mission Studies, 485.
Missionary Herald, 148, 149, 316, 317, 485, 488.
Missionary Society of London, 10.
Miyagawa, T., 277, 367.
Miyazaki, 362.
Mokil, 243, 244.
Monastir, 390, 400, 402, 409.
Monroe, President, 37.
Monterey, 302, 303.
Moore, Prof. E. C., 383.
Moravia, 465.
Morrill, Miss M. S., 372, 377.
Morrison centennial, 382.
Morrison, Robert, 108.
Morning Star, bi-monthly, 171.
Morning Star, missionary ship, 236, 237, 242, 313; *II*, 242; *III*, 243, 441; *IV*, 441; *V*, 441.
Morse, Rev. and Mrs. C. F., 212.
Moses, 247, 441.
Moslekatse (Umzilikazi), 134.
Mosul, 97.
Mount Silinda, 329, 343, 344, 435, 436.
Mpongwes, 128, 279.
Muller, George, 356.
Munson, Samuel, 116, **117.**

N

Nanepei, Henry, 450.
Naniwa, 276.
Nanking, 113.
Nantai, 257.
Natal, 136, 138.
National Bible Society of Scotland, 467.
National Council's apportionment plan, 493.
National Home Missionary Society, 482.
Native Evangelical Society, 419.
Nearer East, the, 385; attempt at withdrawal, 385; fresh obstacles, 387; growth notwithstanding, 388; advance in European Turkey, 389; lowering clouds, 391; a carnival of blood and fire, 392; the recovery, 395; a new department, 397; indemnity at last, 398; revival and encouragement, 398; a time of advance, 399; the Balkans again aflame, 400; capture of Miss Stone, 401; a stormy field, 402; the educational advance, 404; a broadening constituency, 405; contributory forces, 406; political rights gained, 406; the swift and silent revolution, 407; the mission's part, 408; entering Albania, 408; a new challenge, 409; the counter-revolution, 410; signs of better days, 412. (See also *Bible Lands, re-entering*, and *Turkey and the Levant.*)
Neesima, J. H., 271, 272, 273, 274, 276, 356, 359, 360.

Nelson, Rev. and Mrs. C. A., 349.
Nepean, Sir Evan, 18.
Nestorian Mission, 93, 94, 205, 208.
Newell, Rev. and Mrs. Samuel, 3, 5, 7, 12, 13, 17, 18, 19, 22.
New Era, 475. Abroad — The developed missions, 475; self-support, 476; native leadership, 476; the missionaries' new field, 477; the spectacle of Christian centers, 478; a wider influence, 481; the union of missions, 482. At home — Shoaling waters, 483; new methods and machinery, 484; a solidifying business, 486; financial strain, 487; Mr. Rockefeller's gift, 488; change of personnel, 490; the missionary awakening, 491; new potencies, 492; the outlook, 493.
New Fields — West Africa, 336; spying out the land, 336; location at Bihé, 336; first missionaries, 337; getting on the field, 337; facing the task, 338; expulsion of the missionaries, 339; the mission planted, 340. East Central Africa — A renewed purpose, 341; exploring tours, 341; temporary location at Inhambane, 342; Rhodesia at last, 343; the journey in, 343; beginnings of work, 344. Shansi — Beginning the work, 346; an early disciple, 348. South China — Where home and foreign met, 348; the mission's method, 349. Northern Japan — an artificial division, 350. Northern Mexico — Another temporary distinction, 350.
"New School" Presbyterians, 151.
New Testament (Arabic), 203.
New West Commission, 471.
New York, 148, 482.
Nez Perces, 46.
Nicomedia, 86, 102, 106, 393.
Niigata, 350, 360.
Ningpo, 113.
Noodsberg, 434.
Norris, Dr. Sarah F., 422.
Norris, Mrs. Mary, 13.
North Arcot Mission, 172.
North China, 256, 261.
North China College, 370, 371, 372.
North China Union Arts College, 384.
North China Union Medical College, 384.
North China Union Theological College, 384.
North Pacific Institute, 249, 444, 445.
Northampton, 140.
Northern Mexican Mission, 468, 471.
Norton, Ruth, Girls' School, 382.
Nott, Samuel, Jr., 5, 7, 12, 19.

O

Oberlin, 322, 381, 492.
"Oberlin Band," 345.
Obookiah, Henry, 56.
Ochileso, 439.
Ojibwas, 46, 186.
Okayama, 277, 356, 364.
Okuma, Count, 361.
"Old School" Presbyterians, 151.
Omoto, Mr., 355.
Oniop, 245, 248.
Oodooville, girls' school, 28, 421.
Oorfa, 393, 395, 396, 397, 405.
Opataia, 244.
Opatinia, Princess, 244.
Opium, 258, 347.
Ordinations, first, 13.
Oregon Indians, 49, 51.
Osage Mission, 42, 47.
Osaka, 265, 271, 276, 352, 363, 364.
Osmaniyeh, 411.
Otis, Asa, 315, 325.
Otsu, 276.
Ottley, Sir Richard, 27.
Ousley, Rev. and Mrs. Benjamin, 342.

P

Page, ex-Governor of Vermont, 315.
Palestine Mission, 87.
Palmer, H. K., 414.
Palmer, Miss A. A., 446.
Panoplist, 148.
Pang-Chuang, 369, 370, 371, 372, 374, 379.
Pangwes, 129, 131, 279.
Pao-ting-fu, 369, 372, 375, 377, 379.
Papal lands, 456; creating a new atmosphere, 456. Spain — Against many adversities, 450; educational development, 458; in war times, 459; growth of religious freedom, 461; two schools instead of one, 462; in one generation, 462. Austria — With freer hand, 463; spreading the gospel, 464; some allies and alleviations, 464; some enlargements, 465; on the wings of the wind, 466. Mexico — Reorganization and advance, 468; lines of work, 469; educational development, 470; consolidation and concentration, 471; an outreaching mission, 472; the outlook, 474. (See also *Christian lands, in nominally.*)
Papala, 432.
Park Street Church, Boston, 9, 56, 236, 311.
Parker, Samuel, 49; Dr. Peter, 109, 110, 112, 113, 121.
Parral, 470, 471.
Parsons, J. W., 225.
Parsons, Levi, 80, 81, 82.
Parsons, Justin, 198.
Parvin, Theophilus, 290.
Pastors' series, 485.
Pasumalai, 33, 34, 414, 415, 419, 424.
Patagonia, 155.
Pau, 457.
Pawnees, 46.
Peabody, A. P., 230.
Pease, Dr. E. M., 441, 448.
Peet, L. D., 120, 250; W. W., 402.
Peking, 253, 256, 348, 370, 371, 372, 375, 376, 379, 383.
Pera, 103, 106, 200, 216, 222.
Perkins, Rev. and Mrs. Justin, 94, 97, 208.
Perry, Commodore, 264.
Persian Mission, 208, 209.
Peshtimaljian, 91.
Petit, Sir D. M., 418.
Pettee, Rev. and Mrs. J. H., 277, 356.
Phelps, A. G., 314.
Philadelphia, 147.
Philipopolis, 390, 403.
Pierson, Dr. and Mrs. George, 233.
Pietermaritzburg, 426.
Pilsen, 465.
Pingelap, 243, 244.
Pinkerton, M. W., 287, 341.
Pitkin, H. T., 7, 377.
Pixley, S. C., 426.
Plum Blossom School, 276.
Pohlman, W. J., 120.
Pomeroy, Dr. and Mrs. H. S., 463.
Ponape, 233, 234.
Pond, G. H. and S. W., 48, 192.
Poor, Daniel, 22, 23.
Pope, the, as arbitrator, 445.
Porter, Noah, 140; Dr. H. D., 261; E. G., 309; Miss M. H., 372; J. S., 465.
Powers, P. O., 198.
Prague, 297, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468.
Presbyterians, 150.
Prescott, Miss E. O., 471.
Pretoria, 428.
Price, Rev. and Mrs. C. W., 347; F. M., 451.
Proctor, Miss M. A., 222.
Providence, R. I., 314, 318.
Prudential Committee, 10, 140, 141.
Puaaiki, 75.
Puna, 62.

Q

Quarterly Bulletin, 485.
Queen Regent of Spain, 461.

R

Rahuri, 422.
Rand, Rev. and Mrs. F. E., 442, 446, 447, 449.
Rankin, Miss, 300.
Ransom, C. W., 433.
Ray, Lord, 414.
Raynolds, G. C., 387.
Read, U. S. Minister, 254.
Red Cross, 362, 393.
"Reformed Catholic Mission," 230.
Reformed Church in America, 306.
Renville, Joseph, 48.
Rescue Reform Home, 465.
Rhodes, Hon. Cecil, 343.
Rhodesia, 343, 435.
Rice, Luther, 13, 19.
Richards, James, 12, 22; William, 66, 67; W. L., 250; E. H., 342.
Richards, Miss S. F., 457.
Rife, Dr. and Mrs. C. F., 453.
Riggs, Elias, 87, 88, 213, 401; S. R., 190,
Robert, C. R., 217.
Robert College, 221, 390.
Robert W. Logan, 449.
Rockefeller, J. D., 488.
Rogers, D. M., 410.
Roman Catholic Church, intolerance of, 152.
Rood, David, 284.
"Rooms," American Board, 486.
Ropes, J. S., 307.
Ropes, William, 263.
Roumelia, eastern, 389.
Ruggles, Mr. and Mrs. Samuel, 59, 68.
Russell, Miss N. N., 371.
Ruth Norton Girls' School, 382.
Ruth Tracy Strong Mission, 436.
Rutland, Vermont, 318.

S

Sabi Valley, 437.
Sachikela, 439.
Salem Tabernacle Church, 14.
Salonica, 198, 199, 390, 400, 402, 403, 405.
Samokov, 386, 400, 403.
Samokov Institute, 390.
Sanda, 270.
Sanders, Rev. and Mrs. W. H., 337, 340.
Sandwich Islands, 228, 229; transforming the, 56; the incentive, 56; first missionaries, 56; surprising reception, 57; not a religious reformation, 57; stupendous task, 58; moral degradation, 59; welcome and location, 59; the press and the school, 60; hard conditions, 61; helpful arrivals, 62; better rulers, 63; spread of the work, 63; mighty against odds, 64; persecution by foreigners, 65; progress, 66; covering the islands, 66; first awakening (1828), 67; decline in religion and morals, 68; renewed effort, 69; new code of laws (1839), 70; advance at Hilo, 71; the great awakening (1838–39), 71; eminent converts, 73; "Blind Bartimeus," 75; political disturbances (1842), 75; spiral progress (1840–50), 76; a self-reliant church, 78. (See also *Micronesia* and *Islands of the Pacific.*)
San Sebastian, 456, 458.
Santander, 293, 294, 456.
Santee Agency, 192, 193.
Sapporo, 362.
Sassoun, 392.
Sati, 25, 165.
Sawayama, Paul, 267, 276.
Schauffler, William, 90; H. A., 297, 298, 463.
Schneider, Benjamin, 88, 93, 197, 223

School of Industrial Arts, 418.
Schubert, Pastor, 298.
Scudder, Dr. and Mrs. John, 31, 32; Dr. H. M., 172; W. W., 172.
Scutari, 199.
Seattle, 492.
Sendai, 350, 354, 360, 364.
Seneca Mission, 186.
Sepoy Mutiny, 173.
Seville, 292.
Seymour, Miss Hattie, 386.
Shaftesbury, Earl of, 107, 308.
Shanghai, 113, 251, 383, 482.
Shangtung, 111, 370, 374.
Shansi, 345, 347, 369, 370, 373, 377, 380, 381.
Shansi Memorial Association, 381.
Shao-wu, 260, 369, 373.
Shattuck, Miss Corinna, 394, 395.
Shedd, J. H., 207.
Sheffield, D. Z., 260, 261, 370.
Shikoku, 274.
Shinto, 353, 354.
Sholapur, 175, 416, 418.
Siam Mission, 116.
Sibley, Dr. and Mrs. C. T., 454.
Sidon, 203.
Sinas, Pastor, 403.
Singapore, 111.
Sioux, 19, 46, 48.
Sirur, 329, 414.
Sissitons, 190.
Sivas, 392, 394, 396.
Slavery, 186.
Slavs, 463.
Smallpox, 115, 228, 234.
Smith, A. H. 261, 370; Azariah, 197; Eli, 85, 88, 89, 91, 93, 99; James, 418; Judson, 345, 346, 373.
Smyrna, 87, 88, 222, 389, 393, 405.
Snow, Rev. and Mrs. B. G., 232.
Society of Friends, 397.
"Society of Reformed Catholics," 302.
Sofia, 390, 403, 408.
Sonora, 473.
South America, 155.
South China, 373, 348, 382.
Southern Asia, 413; a jubilee indeed, 413; era of educational growth, 414; religious development of the fields, 415; famine and plague again, 416; enlarging industrial work, 418; Christian culture, 418; the deputation of 1902, 420. (See also *India and Ceylon* and *British India and Ceylon.*)
Southern and Central Africa, 426; a jubilee survey, 426; a slow transformation, 427; fresh plans and efforts, 427; other signs of growth, 428; dangers of independence, 429; deputation's findings, 431; Zulu rebellion, 433; progress in East Central Africa, 435; industrial work, 435; the outlook, 436; in West Africa, 437; life at the stations, 437; difficulties with the Portuguese, 438. (See also *Africa, attempting, New Fields* and *Dark Continent, in the.*)
Southern Board of Foreign Missions, 151.
Southern Methodists, 468.
Sophocles, Professor, 87.
Spain, 456; Queen Regent of, 461.
Spanish Evangelical Union, 458.
Spanish Jews, 90.
Spalding, Rev. and Mrs. H. H., 49, 52.
Spaulding, Levi, 23, 180.
Spirit Lake, 189.
Spring, Samuel, 3, 5, 6.
St. Paul, Minn., 190.
St. Paul's Institute, 403.
St. Petersburg, 467.
Stamboul, 200.
Standard Oil Company, 488.
Standing Rock Agency, 194.
Stanley, C. C., 261; H. M., 288.
Stephan, Patriarch, 102.
Stephens, J. L., 300, 302.
Stevens, Edwin, 111.
Stewart, James, 427.

Stiles, Ezra, 124.
Stimson, Rev. and Mrs. M. L., 345, 348.
Stockbridge Indians, 47.
Stoddard, D. T., 97; Charles, 307, 332.
Stone, Miss E. M., 401, 402.
Storrs, R. S., 331, 490.
Stover, W. M., 439.
Strong, E. E., 431.
Strong, Miss C. M., 303.
Strong, Ruth Tracy, Mission, 436.
Strong, Rev. and Mrs. Sydney, 431.
Strumnitza, 402.
Stuart, Prof. Moses, 3.
Student Volunteer Movement, 492.
Sturges, Rev. and Mrs. A. A., 232, 441.
Swett, S. W., 325.
Syrian Protestant College, 205.

T

Tabernacle Church, Salem, 14.
Tabriz, 94.
Tabu, 55, 58.
Tai-ku, 346, 347, 377, 381.
T'ai P'ing rebellion, 250.
Tai-yuan-fu, 346.
Talcott, Miss Eliza, 270.
Tama, Deacon, 206.
Tamil Scriptures, 32.
Tanaka, Mr., 273.
Tank Home, 322.
Tappan, John, 307.
Tarragona, 457.
Tarsus, 410, 411.
Taylor, Dr. Wallace, 268; J. D., 433.
Tellippallai, 422.
Temple, Daniel, 85, 88.
Ten Years on the Euphrates, 320.
Thaddeus, 56.
The Broad and Narrow Way, 129.
The Christian, 294.
The Land and the Book, 203.
The Middle Kingdom, 121.
The Weekly Messenger, 276.
Thompson, A. C., 166, 194, 307, 332; J. P., 299; Dr. W. L., 343.
Thomson, W. M., 99; Rev. and Mrs. Robert, 400.
Thurston, Asa, 57.
Tibet, 156.
Tientsin, 256, 259, 371, 375, 377, 379, 380.
Tillipalli School, 422.
Tirana, 409.
Tissira, Gabriel, 29.
Tocat, 200.
Tokyo, 265, 278, 352, 363, 364.
Torrey, Elbridge, 332.
Treadwell, Governor John, 6.
Treat, Secretary S. B., 37, 307.
Trebizond, 93, 104, 392, 395.
Trowbridge, T. C., 220.
True News, 415, 422.
Truk, 246, 247, 441.
Tsilka, Mr. and Mrs., 401, 402, 409, 410.
Tung-Chou, 260, 370, 371, 372, 373, 375, 379, 384.
Turkey and the Levant, 196; changed situation, 196; laborers for the harvest, 198; enlarging field, 200; Jonas King in Greece, 201; in stormy Syria, 202; gain, 203; Syria's civil war (1860), 204; recovery, 204; Nestorian Mission, 205; native preachers, 206; wider impression, 207; growing church life, 207; Assyrian Mission, 209; pioneers, 210; entering European Turkey, 211; slow work, 212; mission organized (1871), 213; new era for Armenians (1860), 215; pivotal period, 216; growing stations, 217; native agency, 218; advance in organization and establishment, 220; work for women, 221; surmounting obstacles, 223; era of higher education, 224; Russo-Turkish war, 225; an eventful period, 226. (See also *Bible lands*,

reentering, and *Nearer East, the.*)
Turkish Missions Aid Society, 308
Turner, Bishop, 152.
Tuscarora, 186.
Twentieth Century Fund, 487.
Tyler, Josiah, 138, 285, 289.

U

Uduvil Girls' School, 421.
Umbiyana, 285.
Umlazi, 135.
Umpandi, 135, 136.
Umvote, 136.
Umzila, 341.
Umzilikazi (Moselekatse), 134.
Umzumbe, 286, 427.
Union Theological College, 424.
Union Woman's College, 384.
Unitarianism, 8.
United Church of South India, 424.
United Free Church of Scotland, 425.
University of Calcutta, 414.
University of Madras, 424.
Urumia, 94, 97.
Utica, 168.

V

Vadala, 414.
Valley of the Mississippi Society, 150.
Van, 223, 392, 394, 395, 400, 406.
Van Allen, Dr. Frank, 422.
Van Dyck, C. V. A., 99.
Van Lennep, H. J., 88.
Venables, H. I., 134.
Verein Betanie, 463.
Vienna, 466, 467.
Vrooman, Daniel, 257.

W

Wagner, H. T., 473.
Wai, 423.
Waldensians, 292.
Walker, William, 279; Mrs. Eliza, 322.
Walkup, Capt. A. C., 440, 444, 448, 453, 454.
Walley, Deacon S. H., 6.
Walter, F. A., 339.
Ward, L. S., 307.
Warren, Edward, 12, 22.
Washburn, G. T., 415.
Washington Islands, 68.
Washington, State of, 49.
Watkins, D. F., 300, 301, 468.
Webster, Daniel, 201.
Week of Prayer, 150.
Wesleyans, 425.
West Africa, 336, 437.
West, Dr. H. L., 223.
West, Miss M. A., 222.
Western Asia Mission, 87.
Western Mexican Mission, 468, 471.
Western Turkey Mission, 217, 218.
Wheeler, C. H., 219, 320, 394.
Wheeler, Miss E C., 397.
White, Judge, 141.
Whitman, Dr. Marcus, 49, 50, 51.
Whitney, Dr. H. T., 370.
Whitney, Rev. and Mrs. J. F., 243.
Whittemore, William F., 420.
Whittlesey, Gen., 193.
Widows' Aid Society, 416.
Wilberforce, William, 18.
Wilcox, W. C., 342.
Wilder, H. A., 138; G. A., 342, 343, 345.
Williams, Bishop, 265; S. W., 109, 112, 119, 121, 253, 254, 255, 368; T. S., 153; W. F., 209, 210.
Williamson, 48, 188, 192, 194.
Williamstown, Mass., 7.
Wilson, J. L., 124, 126, 129, 134.
Winnebagoes, 191.
Winslow, Miron, 23, 180; F. O., 431.
Winsor, Richard, 414.
Wishard, L. D., 484.
Woman's Bible Training School, 366.

Woman's Board of Missions, 222, 311, 458.
Wood, G. W., 307.
Woodhull, Dr. Kate C., 370.
Worcester, Samuel, 3, 4, 5, 6, 161; S. A., 44, 45, 187.
Worcester, Mass., 11.
Wortabet, Gregory, 84.
Wright, A. C., 471, 472.
Wyckoff, Miss H. G., 372.
Wyncoop, S. K., 125.

Y

Yamamoto, 273, 276.
Yedo, 111, 264.
Yellow Medicine, 188.
Yesûba, 173.
Yesûba Powar, 173.
Yokohama, 266.
Young Men's Christian Association, 464, 465.
Young Men's Home, 416.
Young Men's Society for Diffusing Missionary Knowledge, 155.
Young People and Education, department for, 487.
Young People's Missionary Movement, 492.
Young People's Society of Christian Endeavor, 415, 461, 492.
Young Turk party, 407.
Young Women's Christian Association, 465.
Youth's Dayspring, 149.
Yü Hsien, 374, 377.

Z

Zaragoza, 293, 294, 295, 457.
Zeitoon, 225, 393.
Zippora, 441.
Zornitza, 390, 400, 408.
Zulu Mission, 132, 133, 134, 135, 281, 288, 429, 434.

ERRATA

Page 176, for "Merrick" read "Herrick."
Page 403, for "Agricultural and Theological" read "Agricultural and Industrial."

ATH BV 2360 .A589

Strong, William Ellsworth,
1860-1934.

The story of the American
board

Piedmont College Library

10039888